

PROCEEDINGS  
OF THE  
AMERICAN SOCIETY *for*  
PSYCHICAL RESEARCH

VOL. XIX

A FURTHER RECORD OF MEDIUMISTIC  
EXPERIMENTS

LIBRARY OF  
CALIFORNIA

By  
JAMES H. HYSLOP, Ph. D.

THE AMERICAN SOCIETY FOR PSYCHICAL RESEARCH

15 LEXINGTON AVENUE

NEW YORK

1925

BF1010  
A62  
v. 19



EDUC.  
PSYCH.  
LIBRARY

TO THE  
LIBRARY

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

	PAGE
Chapter I: General Introduction .....	1
Chapter II: Influence of the Subconscious .....	12
Chapter III: Influence of the Control .....	25
Chapter IV: Mediumistic Processes and Problems Involved Therein .....	36
Chapter V: Series I, October 20, 21, 22; 1913 .....	45
Chapter VI: Series II, October 27, 28, 29; 1913 .....	60
Chapter VII: Series III, November 3, 4, 5; 1913 .....	81
Chapter VIII: Series IV, November 10, 11, 12; 1913 .....	102
Chapter IX: Series V, November 17, 18, 19; 1913 .....	120
Chapter X: Series VI, November 24, 25, 26; 1913 .....	139
Chapter XI: Series VII, December 1, 2, 3; 1913 .....	154
Chapter XII: Series VIII, December 22, 23, 24; 1913 .....	176
Chapter XIII: Series IX, January 19, 20, 21; 1914 .....	186
Chapter XIV: Series X, January 26, 27, 28; 1914 .....	201
Chapter XV: Series XI, February 2, 3, 4; 1914 .....	223
Chapter XVI: Series XII, February 9, 10, 11; 1914 .....	241
Chapter XVII: Series XIII, February 16, 17, 18; 1914 .....	259
Chapter XVIII: Series XIV, February 23, 24, 25, 26; 1914 .....	274
Chapter XIX: Series XV, March 30, 31, April 1, 8; 1914 .....	295
Chapter XX: Series XVI, April 13, 14, 15; 1914 .....	320
Chapter XXI: Series XVII, April 20, 21, 22; 1914 .....	339
Chapter XXII: Series XVIII, April 27, 28, 29; 1914 .....	354
Chapter XXIII: Series XIX, May 4, 5, 6; 1914 .....	366
Chapter XXIV: Series XX, May 11, 12, 13; 1914 .....	380
Chapter XXV: Series XXI, May 18, 19, 20; 1914 .....	391
Chapter XXVI: Series XXII, May 25, 26, 27; 1914 .....	402
Chapter XXVII: Series XXIII, June 1, 2, 3; 1914 .....	414
Chapter XXVIII: Series XXIV, June 8, 9, 10; 1914 .....	425
Chapter XXIX: Series XXV, June 15, 16, 17; 1914 .....	439





## TABLE OF ABBREVIATIONS, SYMBOLS, ETC.

- [ ] = Explanatory remark.  
( ) = Words of Sitters present.  
G. O. T. = Gertrude Ogden Tubby (supplementary editor).  
G. P. = George Pelham (communicator, friend of R. H.).  
Indian = Strange jabber, possibly of the Indian guides, brief.  
J. H. H. = James H. Hyslop (conductor and editor).  
J. P. = Jennie P. (communicator, Chenoweth group).  
Madam = Chief guide, Chenoweth group.  
N. R. = Not read.  
P. F. R. = Pencil fell, was reinserted in hand by J. H. H.  
R. H. = Richard Hodgson (communicator).  
Subliminal = Spoken communication of psychic in trance.



## A FURTHER RECORD OF MEDIUMISTIC EXPERIMENTS

BY JAMES H. HYSLOP

### Chapter I. General Introduction

The following record was made with entire strangers as the sitters, and it has its value for the sceptic in that fact. But, for myself, its chief importance lies in the study of the psychological development of the trance of this psychic which has steadily been modified with the progress of the work. I had intended to perform a different type of experiments which indeed had been begun two years previous; but the fact that I had not been able to publish a series of records made with absolute strangers (tho they had been made with the Starlight trance) made it proper, and perhaps necessary, to continue the experiments with strangers which had been conducted to some extent the two years following the publication of the communications of Professor James. The present series, sittings with entire strangers, were conducted in such a maner as to make knowledge of the sitters impossible prior to the sittings.

The sittings are held on the second floor of the house and consist of automatic writing in broad daylight, with no effort to use any secrecy, on the one hand; nor, on the other, to permit any means of the psychic securing knowledge of the sitter. I do not allow Mrs. Chenoweth to see the sitter at any time. She goes into the trance before the sitter is admitted into the room. Then the sitter occupies a chair behind Mrs. Chenoweth, who is in the trance and could not see the sitter even if she were normally conscious and her eyes open. Usually the sitter says little or nothing, often merely nodding or shaking his or her head. Before Mrs. Chenoweth comes out of the trance the sitter leaves the room and is therefore not seen by Mrs. Chenoweth in her normal state. Mrs. Chenoweth always remains upstairs before the sitting, and she never meets the sitter, unless I introduce her after a sitting, which has been done in but two or three cases, and that after the last of the series of sittings for the given sitter.

I unhesitatingly say, however, that experience has shown me that all this apparent suspicion and caution are wholly unnecessary, except

to satisfy Mrs. Chenoweth herself! She fears, and rightly, that the mere sight of a sitter will create impressions and guesses in her own mind as to his character and that this, with the fear of such impressions, may so affect her mind that her mental state will be unfavorable to good results. There is much reason for this fear: for the slightest worry or anxiety will affect the communications. There is abundant evidence in the subliminal deliverances that such a state of mind has its influence. Why it does so cannot be explained at this stage of the discussion, more than to say that the communicator has to use a passive condition of the mind in order to prevent its activity from influencing both his own mind and the contents of the messages. But I dismiss the whole question of fraud from the phenomena so emphatically that I should not waste any time on the sceptic who still insists on that point of view. He is either too ignorant or too indolent for us any longer to attach any value to his convictions. His conversion is not any longer important. He must do his own investigating. Our business is not with him, but with honest people.

The slightest patient study both of the records as a whole and of the circumstances under which they were made would prove the impossibility of any form of fraud which could pay for itself. The slight remuneration which Mrs. Chenoweth receives does not even pay for her living, much less would it support in addition a detective bureau even to seeking for information about a single one of her own friends, to say nothing of strangers whom she would have to investigate at the ends of the earth. The man that clings to such a theory, after looking honestly at the facts, does not need to be taken seriously. Scientific progress cannot wait on such minds. The real difficulty of the problem is of a different kind. It is connected with the subconscious mental operations of the psychic and the limitations of the communications. In these two matters we have a genuinely serious problem and it may be long before we can satisfactorily solve it. We shall have occasion to take these up more in detail. At present it is only necessary to indicate that the difficulties of the problem are not where the sceptic usually sees them.

I have remarked that the chief interest at present is the development of the trance state for better communications. That interest, however, depends somewhat upon the evidential matter that accompanies it. But I shall not lay the stress in this Introduction upon the evidential problem. That assumes that we have still to prove the fact of survival. I do not consider this issue as any longer a moot one. It is not necessary to urge a minute analysis or explanation of the incidents in the light of supposed difficulties from telepathy. That theory

never had any scientific standing either as an explanation or as a rival of spiritistic interpretations. It had the claims of respectability, but nothing else. Hence I do not feel under the slightest obligations to treat it seriously here. I shall allow the Notes to satisfy the demand for the explanation of the facts purporting to be communications from the dead. Readers may estimate the theories of guessing, chance coincidence, and natural inferences for themselves. Discussion of this evidence is not necessary any longer. Examination of it may be necessary at times for the study of the difficulties of communicating, but not for proving the fact of communication or eliminating the claims of telepathy. All this I regard as decided for intelligent people and shall not waste time in discussing. But for the study of the difficulties involved in the process of communicating and the nature of that process the evidential matter may be used to corroborate the hypotheses which the non-evidential matter proposes. Incidents will, therefore, come into consideration for that purpose, but not for proof of survival. The conditions which make communication possible and which at the same time do more or less to hinder it or to limit it are the matters of importance at present.

The emphasis which has been placed upon the trance state in the discussions of the Piper case has often left the impression that a trance is a necessary condition for access to transcendental messages. But this is not true. It is only a condition that either removes ordinary objections and proves that we are dealing with unusual mental phenomena, as compared with normal consciousness, or that tends to improve the character of the messages. It is not a condition necessary to transmission, but only to its purity and to its more ready impressiveness on minds that have been accustomed to assume fraud and ordinary explanations. It has no other importance. In the case of Mrs. Chenoweth the normal communications are very meager, and indeed are very rare. All her phenomena have been accompanied by some sort of trance, light or deep.

I have outlined several of her methods of giving messages in an earlier publication. Cf. *Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. III, pp. 1-469. The prevailing condition at the time that I began my work with her was the Starlight trance. This was the one that was used for private sittings. It is a light and perhaps hypnoidal state in which there is apparently no anaesthesia, but complete amnesia. It is probable that there is anaesthesia, that is, normal anaesthesia, but subliminal hyperaesthesia. This would account for the amnesia which characterizes this trance. The process of getting communications in this trance is the pictographic or "mental picture" method, at least for certain

specific incidents and names. General communications in this state seem not to be pictographic. But that is a subject for further study. The main thing is that the apperceptive or interpreting functions of the mind seem active in this hypnoidal trance, and they are bound to affect the nature of the messages, especially in the interpretation of the mental pictures.

But there was a sort of waking trance for the public work which Mrs. Chenoweth did at this earlier stage of her development. The control was different from that of Starlight and was called Bumble Bee, both being Indians. In this condition Mrs. Chenoweth knew all that was going on and could remember it afterward. But she seemed to be in a normal condition. Her eyes were open and no one not familiar with her ordinary life would suspect anything like a control or anything other than her normal state. But she did not know what was coming except as an observer of it as it occurred. Starlight is more like a child and, as she keeps the eyes closed and Mrs. Chenoweth has to sit, the condition was not favorable to public work and hence the other condition was developed for removing the features objectionable to public audiences.

In this earlier stage of her development she did not do automatic writing, except in her normal state when she was controlled by her mother. She could get no communications for herself in either the Starlight trance or the waking condition of Bumble Bee, unless she had a member of the family take the sitting, even tho the waking condition gave her a memory of what Bumble Bee did. Its primary object was public work, and personal messages where she wanted advice were given occasionally by automatic writing in her normal state with her mother as control, or at least as amanuensis. She rarely resorted to this means.

Soon after the death of Dr. Hodgson, when a friend, who had helped him in his work with Mrs. Piper, went to have some sittings, Starlight was supplanted by a trance more like that of Mrs. Piper and automatic writing more like hers. It was in this stage of her development that I came into contact with her. The whole character of the material changed with this new trance. It began an elimination of the tedious chaff that fills up so much of Starlight's communications, tho it did not wholly eradicate the influence of the subconscious or of the control on the results. Readers of the records will see that general and non-evidential material still predominates even in this deeper trance which did not begin to assume as deep a condition as that of Mrs. Piper until long after the communications from Professor James.

The failure of Professor James and what followed drew attention to the pictographic progress of communicating. Indeed, when a communicator could not control the writing, one of the regular controls, usually Jennie P., or Dr. Hodgson, or George Pelham would undertake to do the writing and to receive the messages from the communicator in the form of mental pictures and probably also impressions and thoughts not embodied or embodyable in mental pictures. Professor James failed in this method. But in the course of his work and failure, whether by accident or by better knowledge is not determinable, the controls hit upon a process of double control, "driving tandem," as Jennie P. called it. This was the simultaneous control of two personalities, Jennie P. and George Pelham, apparently active after the analogies of "tandem" driving, or of reënforcing stations in the conduction of electricity. The communicator simply thought and his mental states were transferred to Jennie P., most frequently in the form of mental pictures or hallucinations and she transferred these to George Pelham, who described by writing what he saw or recieved. In this way better evidence of the supernormal was obtained. But it was highly seasoned with the thoughts of the controls and possibly more or less by the subconsciousness of Mrs. Chenoweth. The results of this are seen in Vol. VI of the *Proceedings* and in later records.

In the course of this an emergency arose in which it was necessary to get certain names. The critical character of the situation prompted the controls to try deepening of the trance to effect their purpose, and whether the subconscious was enticed into it by the situation or was induced to try the deeper condition is not determinable. Whatever the cause, the trance was suddenly deepened and the controls never afterward resorted to the "tandem" process, or pictographic methods by means of a double control. Later Jennie P. explained that this new method was like the "tandem" process except that they drove abreast instead of in succession. That is instead of following the analogies of reënforcing stations along a line, they concentrated, in a circle, as it were, and brought the communicator nearer, so to speak, so that his messages would not have to traverse the minds of the controls and thus be less influenced by them. Occasionally when a communicator broke down they resorted to the pictographic process to help out, but not to the double control. That method once abandoned was never resumed.

This deeper trance shortened the records and to some extent the time of the sittings. It continued for more than a year when a sudden and new effort, unexpectedly and not previously announced to me, was

made to still further deepen the trance. This, as before, assumed the form of removing the "spirit" of Mrs. Chenoweth farther from the body, whatever this may mean. This occurred near the end of the present series of experiments and the immediate result was greater ease in giving proper names and occasional echolalia; which only means that the automatic functions of the neural organism responded better to external thoughts. The apperceptive or interpreting activities of the mind were diminished. Both the duration of the sittings and the matter communicated were abbreviated. How much it will affect the results in the future remains to be determined.

This is a brief history of the development of Mrs. Chenoweth's trance. This development involved a gradual diminution of the material which is non-evidential, without perhaps any special increase of what is evidential. But it must not be supposed that the diminution is a decrease of subliminal matter, nor any assured retention of it at all. That is the moot question. Indeed the fundamental question is whether the subconscious enters into the result at all in any part of the communications, except during the recovery of normal consciousness. There it is often perfectly manifest in the contents of what is *said* and in the self-consciousness of Mrs. Chenoweth herself, a self-consciousness even of the material which is uttered. But the remarkable fact is that there is complete amnesia of it on awakening a few seconds later. The cleavage is as distinct as if no subconsciousness or self-consciousness were present. It is the action of the subliminal dreamlife which is not connected with normal consciousness by memory. But in the deep trance there is no distinct evidence that the subconscious contributes to the contents of the messages. I say distinct evidence, because occasionally the process of getting a name suggests that guessing is going on and the critical reader would think this due to the mental action of Mrs. Chenoweth in the effort either to get the message from the dead, if you accept the spiritistic theory, or to play off the results of her own inferences and conjectures or guessing for spirit messages, if you believe in fraud or somnambulic action. But even this guessing as a product of her own mind is not assured. We can as well assume that it is by the control who is laboring under great difficulties in getting the message from the discarnate spirit. Whether this is the true explanation will depend on the evidence. The readiness to tolerate the hypothesis will depend on the degree of openmindedness in the investigator. But after we have obtained a large mass of the supernormal which must have its origin outside the mind of Mrs. Chenoweth, it is permissible to make hypotheses of guessing, fishing, and inference on the part of the control in his or her difficulty with



the communicator. There is some evidence, perhaps much of it, that this is the actual process which many a sceptic takes for the fraudulent action of the medium's mind, whether conscious or subconscious. It is this question which I wish to examine more fully than hitherto.

In discussing the evidential incidents and even in allusion to the non-evidential matter, I have made very large concessions to the influence of the subconscious upon the results. I have done this in deference to the demand of the sceptic either that we should believe in infinite powers of the subliminal or that we should stretch that view to the utmost before accepting spiritistic interpretations. I have never shared in the sceptic's credulity about the subconscious. The concession is an *ad hominem* one. This does not mean that I deny the influence of the subconscious, but only that I would not contend against the hypothesis in the positive explanation of facts which could not possibly be traced to such a source. The sceptic has to be diverted from his evasion of the issues and that can best be done by conceding him any amount of subliminal miracles for the sake of urging upon him a type which even his subliminal will not explain. But in making the concession I am not accepting his view of the facts or of the subconscious. The concession is just giving him the advantage of sun and wind in the combat. I did not and do not admit that we know so much about the subconscious in such cases as the sceptic claims. There are types of abnormal psychology in which this subconscious action has a very large play, but the phenomena illustrating it are clear and indubitable. But you have no such evidence in the material of these records that the subconscious has played so large a part in supplying contents, and we must correspondingly admit our ignorance. While conceding much to the subconscious, and doing this only in an *ad hominem* manner, I am not assuming that it was the true explanation, but merely a means of preventing the sceptic from escaping the issue. The *ignoratio elenchi* is not to be permitted here any more than elsewhere in science. I reserve to myself the right to maintain ignorance about the subconscious while allowing the sceptic his way for the sake of argument.

In the first place, I insist on drawing a very important distinction in allowing any influence at all to the subconscious. This is the distinction between the subconscious as *function* and the subconscious as *content* in the messages. By this I mean that the *functions* of the mind may act, whether consciously or subconsciously, in receiving and delivering messages, yet not supply any of the *contents* of them. If this view could be established it would deprive the sceptic of half his munitions of war. But I have not proposed any such view arbitrarily

or for the purpose of getting an advantage in the discussion, but because the facts showed that the doctrine had to be maintained. It has district analogies in normal experience. One may tell a friend's story in the language of that friend and in that way eliminate the action of his own mind upon it in all but the mere process of transmitting it. But if he allows his own interpretation of the story to be presented then the contents of his own experience enters into the material of his version of the story. When a man suppresses his own theories and interpretations to state any mere body of facts he eliminates the contents of his knowledge and confines himself to the bald narration of the facts. There is no reason, then, why the same process might not be effected with the subconscious of the psychic. How it shall be done may be a problem, but training might accomplish as much in this direction as we effect in normal life. At any rate, the possibility of distinguishing between the *functions* and the *contents* of the subconscious must be conceded in order to understand the non-evidential matter as a whole, and this without regard to the question whether it be spiritistic or not.

By the *contents* of the subconscious I mean the knowledge which the subject has normally acquired. We have no right, indeed, to assume the existence of any subconsciousness at all until we have found such normal knowledge emerging at times when the subject is provably not aware of it or of its having been a part of his or her normal experience. It is clear imitation of normal life without consciousness of it or without memory of it that justifies the hypothesis of subconscious mental action. We cannot resort to this explanation of mediumistic phenomena unless we prove that the contents of normal experience enter into the impersonation of the dead. We should have to concede the whole claim of the most extreme spiritualist, for lack of evidence that the medium's normal knowledge entered into the contents of purported messages. But we need to put no such limitations on the *functions* of the subconscious. We may allow that they may always be present without any of the *contents* of normal knowledge.

It is important to interrupt this discussion with another fact which will not be denied by the psychologist and psychiatrist generally, but which their manner of explaining things does not concede. I refer to the fact that the subconscious is quite as finite as the normal consciousness. Some persons conveniently take an opposite position. They assume that the subconscious is a larger set of functions of which the normal life is but a small part. With them, and with those who are always enlarging its powers to explain things which they think otherwise inexplicable, it is a mysterious agent capable of almost any

miracles except transmitting messages from spirits. For the present writer the subconscious is nothing of the kind and the best informed psychologists will agree, when not explaining mysterious phenomena, that the subconscious is the same as the normal mind with only a change of condition. The functions are the same in both and, according to the present writer, much more limited in power in the subconscious. It may use different knowledge; that is, different groups of experiences, but it has the same limitations on the whole as the normal condition. This has already been discussed at length and may not require lengthy restatement here. See *Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. VII, pp. 1-187. What is maintained is that there is not the separation of *function* between the normal and the subliminal, but the separation of *contents*. There has been some form of amnesia that makes it appear as if the subconscious had extraordinary powers, when it is but a cleavage between experiences. The functions remain intact, but the contents of experience are not at command. The normal consciousness controls one group and the subconscious controls another, and often the amnesia of the subconscious is as great as that of the normal consciousness, only it is not of the same group of mental experiences.

All this simply illustrates the distinction which has been drawn between the functions and the contents of the mind. The subconscious has the same functions and limitations as the normal, but it may be in a different relation to stimulus and association. The elimination of the normal consciousness may only change its rapport with the external world, now suppressing it and leaving the mind suspended entirely except in its own subjective activity, or establishing rapport with the spiritual rather than the material world. In the latter case its stimuli would be spiritual instead of physical. Its functional activity may remain the same while the contents of normal experience may be reduced to the minimum. In other words amnesia of that kind may be produced, say by sleep, somnambulism, or trance, that eliminates in varying degrees the influence of those contents on the impressions which the subconscious receives from a spiritual world.

Now the deepening of the trance is apparently or really a process of eliminating the influence of the contents of normal experience on the impressions received from the transcendental world. It is an education in the suspension of apperception and interpretation, a training in acquiring passive conditions of mind, so that the contents of normal experience will not substitute themselves for extraneous messages. It does not involve any suspension of mental function, but only cleavage between function and content, amnesia for matter and activity for

transmission. In this way the contents are more and more from the transcendental and less from the normal experience of the psychic.

But we do not have the mind of the medium and of the communicator alone to reckon with. As long as scepticism prevails about the existence of spirits and as long as the subconscious of the psychic can be appealed to with impunity for explaining incidents, there can be no allowance made for the influence of any third mind. The control, unless he or she be the spirit whose identity is at stake, and unless he or she give evidence of the supernormal in proof of personal identity, must be treated as a secondary personality of the psychic, not because that is evident, but because the standard for admitting the existence of the discarnate is the proof of personal identity. Consequently in the first stage of the problem the control and his or her claim to being a spirit are ignored, and the issue is between the mind of the medium, conscious or unconscious, and the existence of the personality trying to prove identity. There is no third mind assumed.

When you have given sufficient of the supernormal to prove the existence of discarnate spirits in terms of personal identity, the proof of *supernormal* information by a controlling personality eliminating the hypothesis of secondary personality which is based on *normal* experience, we have the right to suppose that a third mind may be involved in the deliverance of transcendental messages. At any rate that is the form which the phenomena always take. Indeed there always appears, in systematic work, a group of personalities assisting in the transmission. In the "tandem" work of Jennie P. and George Pelham there were at least three minds involved besides that of the medium. The claim was constantly made that there were others, and there is nothing to exclude this supposition. But once conceded the possibility or probability of even a third mind only and we shall have to reckon with its influence as well as any subconscious of the medium.

Any careful student of the facts will find it legitimate on any theory to entertain such an hypothesis as a means of at least analyzing the phenomena. They have the appearance of this whether we choose to regard it as a reality or not. The evidence of subliminal content is even slight in the subliminal stage of the trance and there is no clear trace of it in the automatic trance. There is however, evidence of the coloring effect of the controls in the messages of other communicators, and it even betrays itself in the automatic writing. Under the "tandem" control this was especially evident. The handwriting was a combined or composite effect of the influence of Jennie P. and of George Pelham, whose independent handwritings had no resemblance to each other except the style borrowed from the habits of the or-

ganism. In addition to the fusion of their styles there were the technical resemblances to Mrs. Chenoweth's style, as registered in the habits of her organism. Three personalities were thus reflected in the mechanical aspects of the result, and we should naturally expect a fusion of thoughts as well, and in other situations this was apparent or even marked. Accepting this fusion of the control's mind with that of the communicator, or perhaps fusion of thoughts rather than of minds, we may have an explanation of much that has passed for subconscious action. Indeed this hypothesis coincides with the very nature of the trance to suppress the contents of the psychic's knowledge, tho it does not interfere with the exercise of the subconscious functions.

The chief importance of this hypothesis is the fact that it assumes an additional complexity in the problem. There is difficulty enough in eliminating the influence of the subliminal on messages and there also seems difficulty enough in getting messages through the mind and organism of the medium. But if we have to reckon with a third and a fourth or even more minds besides that of the medium we add to both the difficulties and the coloring effect on the messages. We shall have a situation somewhat like the following. First there will be the difficulty of getting the medium into rapport of any kind with the spiritual world. The contents of the subconscious must be rendered nugatory and the mind of the medium so dispossessed of its tendencies to impersonate or to express its own ideas that it can receive messages from the outside. Whatever rapport is or may be conditioned by, it is nothing more or less than the receipt of foreign impressions of some kind, perhaps telepathic and perhaps analogous to the influence of our own mind on the neural system. We know there are difficulties enough in this alone, if for no other reason than the fact that the phenomena are so rare. But if in addition to these difficulties, there are those of getting messages to the control, we have complications which may explain many things. In some cases this difficulty might be so great as absolutely to prevent any communications except from the control, and apparently this very thing sometimes takes place.

One important thing will be evident on this hypothesis and it is that the psychologist will be still more hardly pressed to account for non-evidential matter by the subconscious of the medium. He cannot rely exclusively on the supposition that he has but two influences to reckon with. He will have to give evidence for the influence of the medium's subconscious, instead of finding himself privileged to say that there is no choice between spirits and subliminal. In the first stages of the problem he may well limit the believer in spirits to the evidential matter in behalf of personal identity, claiming all the non-evidential

material for the subconscious of the medium. But when the spiritistic hypothesis obtains legitimate recognition, in addition to the fact that we cannot arbitrarily limit its explanatory power to the evidential incidents, the critic will have to face the possibility that the non-evidential material may most easily be explained by the mental action of the control, a spirit also, and the influence of the subconscious will then be as much subject to proof as the existence of spirits. In any case we shall have more complications to deal with than have usually been assumed.

I have outlined the conditions under which the phenomena occur and it remains to examine the record with reference to each of these influences. Other questions will arise in the course of this study or will be apparent to readers apart from the problems which have just been indicated. But I shall not discuss them now. They are in some way connected with the difficulties of communicating at all, tho they are not solved by discovering that we have more than two minds to reckon with in the process of obtaining messages from the dead. But the most important thing at present is the establishment of the real psychological conditions affecting the process of communication. In the examination of these we expect to make a step in advance of all previous discussions. Hitherto I have reckoned ostensibly with the medium and the spirit endeavoring to prove his identity and not with any other minds. I have assumed that controls were present, but I have adjudged the contents of the messages as if they represented no other minds than the two. I have long suspected a tripartite or even a multipartite influence, but I have not hitherto given the idea the standing of an hypothesis in the discussion. But in the present year's work it has become more apparent than before that other minds than the communicator proving his or her identity were involved even in the transmission of the evidence, to say nothing of the non-evidential material. The discovery of indications of this process made it obligatory to give the matter an adequate analysis and discussion.

## Chapter II. Influence of the Subconscious

I propose here to examine the record for evidence of subconscious action on the contents of the communications. Before giving specific incidents, I must remark a fact which would require much labor on the part of readers to observe it at all. It is the change of procedure in regard to the subliminal entrance into the trance. Three volumes of these records would have to be examined in order to verify the statement which I shall make. It is the fact that the subliminal entrance into the trance shows less tendency to give messages than in the earlier

stages of the development. Prior to the first sudden development of the deeper trance, and that is simultaneous with the abandonment of double control and "tandem" work, it was very common to obtain messages and put them through before going at the automatic writing. But immediately after the adoption of what Jennie P. called the direct method, which was putting the spirit at the task of controlling, so to speak, they began to abandon the pictographic process as the medium went into the trance. The reason for this can only be conjectured. There was no statement of their intentions at the time, as there was at the later and second deepening of the trance. But since Mrs. Chenoweth has developed her mediumship through the Starlight control in a pictographic process there has been the dominance of visual influences in the results, and probably she is by nature a visual. At any rate the visual process has been the dominant one in the work so far as habit goes. With this in view it would be an important thing, when bringing on the trance for automatic writing by the direct method as against the pictographic and indirect method, to see that the pictographic process did not receive any exercise, since its momentum would extend over into the direct process. Whether this was the motive or practice we do not know, but it is the fact that fewer occasions occurred in which pictographic processes were used in this initial stage of the trance. The record only shows the fact, not the reason for it. Now and then the giving of messages was indulged in this initial state, but the occasions were proportionately few as compared with the neglect of the policy.

All this means that the subconscious enter less into the contents of the record than when it was made the vehicle, alone, for transmission. The presence of a control or of another spirit means that the functions which were used by the subconscious in the subliminal stage are employed by another personality. Impersonation begins with control of outside agents. Control by the subconscious means that its influence on the results will go *pari passu* with the directing of the organism. The deeper trance means the suspense of automatic influence on the neutral system, to some extent at least. Hence as a process of education in the suspension of this influence and for the purpose of establishing a more distinct cleavage from the subconscious accustomed to pictographic processes, the intelligent course would be to omit the delivery of messages in this oncoming trance for direct methods. That at least is the apparent nature of the development.

It is more frequent at the end of the automatic writing that the subconscious is used for delivering messages. But there has been little disposition to do even this except when it would have been a disap-

pointment to the sitter not to get what he or she desired. Often the direct method has been a practical failure, and rather than let the sitter go away with a bad opinion of the results the situation has been redeemed by returning to the pictographic process and the subliminal, when the messages would come thick and clear. But perhaps more often the recovery of the normal state has been marked by as sudden a return as the entrance into the trance, and as free from efforts to give messages.

In the automatic writing the evidence of subconscious influence is slight as compared with the subliminal entrance and that evidence, if such it can be called at all, is so exposed to the interpretation that it is the influence of the control that we can never be sure that it is due to the subconscious. I should not suspect its presence at all were it not that two of the personalities among Mrs. Chenoweth's guides occasionally mention things which Mrs. Chenoweth knows, and this lends color to the claim that they are secondary personalities of Mrs. Chenoweth herself. These personalities are Starlight and Jennie P. The influence of Starlight is not noticeable in the automatic writing, but there is evidence that Starlight knows the normal life of Mrs. Chenoweth quite as well as Sally knew that of Miss Beauchamp, in the case of Dr. Morton Prince. Mrs. Chenoweth is herself aware of this fact. That however, is neither here nor there. But there are no indications that Starlight intrudes Mrs. Chenoweth's normal memories into the automatic writing. Indeed there are no indications that she is present in that work. But there have been a few indications that Jennie P.'s knowledge of the psychic's normal life has influenced the contents of messages in the deeper trance. But it avowedly takes the form of her presence and impersonation and, tho it represents knowledge which Mrs. Chenoweth possesses, that does not prove that the subconscious initiates it. It is certain that the subconscious does not display in it the self-consciousness that it often shows in the subliminal intrusion of its own memories. I do not recall any instance in this record of Jennie P.'s introduction of normal memories of Mrs. Chenoweth into the automatic writing. Traces of the influence of that personality on both the automatic writing and the contents of messages are frequent, but not of Mrs. Chenoweth's normal experience.

In giving specific incidents of subliminal influence on the record I must distinguish between those incidents which merely reflect subconscious action, without even pretending to come from spirits, and such incidents as might be taken for communications. It is probable that we shall rarely find impersonations of the dead in the records of the subliminal where we find traces of subconscious memories. Perhaps



we shall find none at all. But we shall often enough find incidents that are a complete fusion of subconscious and messages obscurely understood. That is, the subconscious is more or less self-conscious, so to speak, and is interpreting what it gets indistinctly. The subconscious functions are active, but the contents of normal life do not enter into the result, save as an apperception mass for helping the interpretation, but not as messages mistaken for transcendental communications, as might well take place in such a borderland state. I have witnessed in one medium just this process. She could not always distinguish between the messages imported into her mind from without and the ideas aroused in her own mind by the messages. It is possible that we might find instances in which the foreign stimulus succeeded only in arousing action and transmitted no messages, but aroused subjective action and ideas which were mistaken for spirit communications. But this is no place to discuss them, especially as I have but few instances that would suggest such a view. Here we have only to indicate its possibility as an extreme form of what can be observed in a less manifest way with the subliminal work of Mrs. Chenoweth. But there is no direct impersonation of the dead in the subconscious incidents drawn from the normal memories of Mrs. Chenoweth. Her subconscious seems not to be infected with any definite tendencies to illusions of this kind. It is either conscious of the sources of the incidents or it simply uses the mental functions for the interpretation of foreign stimuli.

#### *Examples of Subconscious Influence*

The first instance of subliminal action in this record is the very first sentence (Oct. 20) expressing the view, "It is not hard to die." This does not purport to represent a message from the dead and we must not mistake such instances for evidence of impersonation: for it is nothing of the kind. It is a subliminal observation on her own state and represents what has frequently occurred in the development of the deep trance. Ever since we began developing the deeper trance, Mrs. Chenoweth has shown a subconscious fear of death. She has no such fear normally, but this fear began, very early in the deepening of the trance, to show itself and to bring out remarks about dying. It was not particularly manifest until the time when the double control and "tandem" work were abandoned. It was then that the first decided deepening of the trance began. The fear after that was so great that for a very long time Mrs. Chenoweth would seize my hand with considerable violence and hold it tight as soon as the pencil was dropped at the end of the automatic writing. But as she grew accustomed to this deeper trance this fear diminished and she would be less hurried and

less excited about the return to normal consciousness. Sometimes even she would not take my hand, tho this was rare, but she grew to take it calmly. Here in the sentence quoted the reader will observe a calm observation of the resemblance between the trance and dying. She is apparently self-conscious. She is at least an observer introspectively of what is going on and makes no pretence to communication with the dead.

In the subliminal recovery there is no trace of subconscious memories in the result. There are indications that memories of the communicator are present and are actually mistaken for present experiences of the medium herself. She is frightened at the waves and drowning as if they were her own situation. But a most important name comes in the midst of it, so that we have evidence of transcendental influences intruding themselves into the recovering consciousness and the mind wavers about their meaning, at no time becoming clearly conscious that the mental states represent this foreign stimulus.

At the second sitting (Oct. 21) as she enters the trance, there is again some confusion about the source of the impressions received. There is no pretense of spirit messages, but there is observation and reflection on the sensations or *quasi*-sensations present. Mrs. Chenoweth sees colors and herself wonders whether the fact that she was painting just before the sitting began was the cause of them. Apparently the momentum of her employment a short time before affects the sensory functions sufficiently to instigate hallucinations. At any rate the tendency is soon repressed or inhibited and the automatic writing begins. She awakened from this trance without any hint of subconscious invasion. The material was all from the communicator, except for the conscious (subconscious self-consciousness) knowledge of the transcendental influence tho it was "mixed" and confused so that she could not get the whole of it.

At the opening of the third sitting (Oct. 22) there was some apparent attempt to communicate, but it was soon shut off and the automatic writing began. No definite traces of subconscious memories appeared in the writing. At the end of the sitting, the only indication of subconscious ideas borrowed from normal consciousness was the allusion, after discovering supernormally that I had been at Glasgow, that she "supposed I went to London." I had not told her how I went to England, and she had inferred that I went direct to London. Here she was comparing her own belief with the rather disconcerting information supernormally acquired that I had gone to Glasgow. She then dropped into supernormal messages again.

At the beginning of the next sitting (Oct. 27) the subconscious is

quite clearly indicated and it is brought out by contrasting the pleasant character of the vision which arose at first with general convictions about a hell. Evidently the reflective faculties were aroused. The following is the passage referred to:

Oh isn't it lovely?

(Yes.)

Hm. [Pause.] Do you believe in Hell?

(It depends on what kind.)

[Pause.] The old fashioned kind.

(No.) Fiends, pitchforks, and fire? (No.)

[Pause.] I am glad. [Pause.] It would be strange that I never saw anything of the kind if there was such a thing, wouldn't it?

(Yes.)

I suppose people never dreamed of any torture except physical, but now we know of a torture much more dreadful which is mental. That is your kind of a hell, isn't it?

(Yes.)

Hm. [Pause.] Heh [smile] we needn't have that, if we keep clean thoughts. [Pause.] It is so heavenly here, that is why I thought of the other. [Pause]

Immediately she began to see visions of a communicator. But the reader will remark distinct evidence, admitted by the subconscious itself, of normal ideas intruded here, reflectively at that, into the effects of transcendental influence on the organism in its effort to produce pictographic images. At the end of the sitting there was nothing except the consciousness that the transcendental impressions were not clear. Normal memories did not intrude themselves.

At the opening of the second series of sittings there were no traces of subliminal invasion, tho the pictographic process was tolerated and some efforts were made to get messages through. There were also no traces of subliminal memories in the recovery at the end of the second sitting.

In the subliminal entrance of the third sitting there was only the indication of fear, which evidently meant that the trance was becoming deeper than was pleasant to Mrs. Chenoweth and her fear of death was aroused. No attempt was made to send or receive pictures. At the end of the sitting there was some reproach administered to me for my eager hunger after "tests," an attitude of mind not at all like Mrs. Chenoweth normally, but much more like Jennie P. There was no evidence that Jennie P. was present and there never is distinct evidence of this in the subliminal stage of the trance. But the reproach

for my wanting more evidence in a name, especially as it came immediately on my request for the name, was just like that personality, as she resents my demands for more evidence when she is controlling the deeper trance and automatic writing.

In the first sitting of the third series a most interesting incident occurs in the subliminal entrance to the trance. Even the normal began to get effects of apparently outside influence just before the vision of light appearing which is a signal to the subconsciousness that the trance is advancing and foreign impressions making themselves felt. After alluding to this light the subliminal took up the cue as follows (Nov. 31):

There isn't half so much imagination in the world as people think, is there?

(No.)

When some one can't see or hear or feel, but another sees, hears or feels, they almost universally shout imagination.

(Yes.)

It would be all right to shout back, fool, wouldn't it?

(Yes.)

[Distress.] Yes, I know I am all right, but I feel as if I were dying. "To sleep and then to wake."

This last remark shows the influence of Shakespeare, and whether it is a memory of Mrs. Chenoweth herself or a timely reference of one of the controls at the inception of the deep trance which immediately follows, is not determinable. But the reading of Shakespeare is evident in the allusion, and with the allusion to "dying" it confirms previous remarks about the deeper trance and its relation to the process of dying, even tho it be an imagination of the medium in the subconscious state. But the first part, remarking about the imagination, is distinct evidence of subconscious reflection (subliminal self-consciousness) on the impressions present, whatever their source, waking memories of what is usually thought when such impressions come out; and they well put the case as theories on the part of those who do not have the experiences themselves, but are all-knowing about the experiences of others. There are traces here of the distinction which the mind of Mrs. Chenoweth makes between her own mental states and those instigated externally. Nothing of importance occurred in the subliminal recovery that would show subconscious memories.

It was some time before the subliminal again showed traces of normal memories or reflections on the approaching trance. The time was taken up with the effort to get pictographic messages. On

November 12th there was a recognition that the pictures came too rapidly for utterance and that I should be unable to record them if uttered so rapidly. But this self-consciousness, so to speak, in the subliminal approach to the trance, was soon lost in the description of the pictures. The subliminal here closed with an allusion to the patience required on both sides to get the best results. At the end of the sitting the expression: "Thinking about an oyster and it turns into a balloon," may have any interpretation we please. It had no evidential significance for personal identity and may be a subliminal interpretation of a hypnagogic illusion, tho we have nothing but conjecture to support this view of it.

In the subliminal entrance of a later sitting, the subconscious, remembering that the sitter had left the séance room earlier than he should have done, remarked (Nov. 19) that it "thought you were mad with me when you went off yesterday." But whatever we say of this as a subconscious utterance, it was probably based upon a correct reading of the sitter's mind, because his results had been disappointing.

Some time passed before any trace of subliminal invasions manifested themselves and the instance which I wish to quote from the subliminal recovery of the normal state is really equivocal. The subconscious asked the sitter (Dec. 3) if he had a mother-in-law in the spirit world, and as he was not a married man he rather gave himself away by asking what was meant by mother-in-law. The correction by the subconscious was that it thought there was but one meaning to the term and asked me if the sitter thought it had made a mistake and meant stepmother. Then, on my answering "Probably," the statement came that it meant "stepmother" which was correct, but apparently the subconscious may have been set at the correction by the form of the sitter's question. There is no assurance of this and I refer to the instance as a possible, not a proved, intrusion of the subconscious into the general stream of thought.

The subliminal remained uneventful for some sittings and then came out in an interesting allusion to Kate Field, representing information of which the normal consciousness was perfectly aware. But it did not purport to be a spirit communication. It came as an incident of solicitude for Miss Whiting. But, as if in immediate correction of this, automatic writing took place and Kate Field reversed the suggestion which the subconscious had made and gave better advice than the normal and subliminal of Mrs. Chenoweth had conceived. [Matter omitted from this series by J. H. H.]

A month or more later a very clear illustration of normal memories intruded on the subliminal recovery, but after all the trans-

accidental matter had been given. The night before, I met the President of the Spiritualist Association and in the course of our conversation I remarked that the churches would take up the subject and not retain the name which the spiritualists had given the facts and the theory. Mrs. Chenoweth rather resented this unwillingness to acknowledge its character and I explained why it would take this course. The next day (Jan. 20) in the subliminal recovery of the normal state, the following was directed to me, but did not represent any impersonation of the dead:

Did you think I was selfishly fighting to help Spiritualism independently of the churches?

(No.)

You said you didn't care what the name was, and I said I didn't want to be swallowed. I would rather be the whale myself. It wasn't because I was particular about a certain group being recognized, but because the church always puts forward so many unimportant truths and hates this wonderful and most important fact and doesn't emphasize it, and it ought to. That is all I fight for.

Immediately Mrs. Chenoweth awakened and had no memory of what had been said. This is as clear an illustration of subliminal or subconscious utterance as can be desired, tho it does not invade the messages from the transcendental in any way whatever. It is surprising that it was not remembered when it came so close to the recovery of the normal consciousness.

In the subliminal recovery of the next sitting, for a new sitter (Jan. 26), tho his home is almost on the Charles River the allusion to that river is most easily accounted for by being regarded as a subconscious invasion in this borderland state, tho there is not as clear proof of it as may be desirable.

In the recovery from the trance of the next sitting (Jan. 27) the allusion of the subliminal to the sitter's slow speech indicates an intermingling of subconscious interpretation of sensations caused by his voice, but there are not other contents from the subconscious. The same phenomenon occurred in the next, and last (Jan. 28), sitting of this friend, only it was a visual instead of an auditory impression this time and the visual impression had to be supernormal, for Mrs. Chenoweth had not seen the sitter, but described him as "looking like an Episcopalian," tho he was a Unitarian.

Nothing more occurred of interest until the last sitting of my Secretary when the subliminal discovered who had been present and talked about it, but did not interfuse any normal memories with it, as she

might have done, for they were there plentifully. [See *Journal*, Jan., 1920.]

In the subliminal recovery, much later, (April 1) when I had been absent for some weeks, an allusion was made evidentially to a baby of the sitter's, "in heaven;" and the subconscious went off into the following very much after the style of "Starlight":

"I think it is wonderful to have babies in heaven. It is just as good as having them here, if you only knew it. Of course you miss a thousand little things that you see other people do, but there are a thousand more that are just as sweet and beautiful when your spiritual consciousness is awakened. There is something to that little word "treasures laid up in heaven," can't put money there but you can have babies there. Bless their darling little souls! They are an everlasting joy. They are the jewels. I don't know your baby's name, but I know she is a lovely flower, a lovely lily."

There is no pretense that this is from the spirit, and it is so characteristic of Mrs. Chenoweth's attitude toward babies, having lost her own, with its attendant grief, that it is more likely a normal memory than a remark externally inspired. It reflects so clearly her own mental attitude. This is followed by attempts to get supernormal messages.

Again, the week afterward, when no strange sitter was present and Easter was approaching, the following appeared in the subliminal recovery (Apr. 8). Referring to my return to the work, the subliminal said:

Easter will be come and gone before—what an awful time they make, preaching that awful thing! Why should they preach the most awful thing that ever happened to a prophet of truth? Don't need to keep that in the minds of the people.

The idea here in mind is evidently the doctrine of the sacrificial atonement and represents the normal feeling of Mrs. Chenoweth. She recovered normal consciousness immediately following the utterance.

In the subliminal recovery after my return, the second week, the subconscious revealed the normal perplexity about the dress Mrs. Chenoweth should wear at a reception. The single sentence: "I don't know what dress to wear at the reception," was followed by an effort to get some message in a few sentences, and then the normal consciousness returned.

In the subliminal entrance to the trance on the date of May 19th, 1914, Mrs. Chenoweth broke out with the following:

My mother.

(All right.)

I didn't know her. I only know her from the picture. That is who it is. I am going away with her.

This was followed by the first appearance of Father John, one of Mrs. Chenoweth's "guides" and the explanation that they had planned a new departure and development of the deeper trance. Mrs. Chenoweth knows her mother only from a picture, as her mother died when Mrs. Chenoweth was too young to remember. A year or two earlier in the subliminal recovery she had seen her grandfather in the same way soon after the deepening of the trance was undertaken.

After this deepening of the trance nothing evidential occurred in the subconscious states. There is no doubt that, through all the subliminal entrances and exits from the trance, the subconscious was the vehicle for all that was said, but it was kept free from the report of normal memories, and we are here only dealing with evidence of subconscious invasions, not with material merely explicable by them. What I have quoted represents the year's work and it will be apparent to readers that the subconscious memory of normal life played a very small part in the provable contents of the subliminal utterances. It offers a fair standard for estimating the probabilities of the rest of the record where we have not even the incidents which would suggest such a source. The automatic writing presents practically nothing evidential of this invasion, and much of the subliminal stages is evidential matter perhaps even better than the automatic writing. It is often so and hence we see indications that the deepening of the trance was a measure for excluding the influence of subliminal memories from the material of the record.

I have not quoted passages which are explicable by the subconscious and not evidence of it, for the reason that I have been observing the distinction made at the outset between subconscious *functions* and subconscious *contents* in determining the communications. The non-evidential matter in the subliminal stages, when it represents the action of the mind on impressions coming to it from without, may readily enough be explained by subliminal functions working on the habits of the mind, but they never purport to impersonate the dead. Hence, whatever place we assign the subliminal on the record, it has no importance in the criticism of the spiritistic hypothesis. It is but the *medium* of communication and is working under difficulties in getting the impressions or in interpreting them. But all this represents only a slight influence on the result by the subconscious.

By comparison of this record with the earlier work of Mrs. Cheno-



weth the reader can easily remark a difference, however he may explain it. Take Vol. III and Vol. VI of the *Proceedings*, when the trance had not yet been deepened to any such extent as at present, and the first thing to be remarked is the absence of such frequent confusion and the less fragmentary character of the real or alleged messages. The results in those records are more like the work of Starlight, little of which has been published at the date of writing this paper. The sitting for my father-in-law in Vol. IV of the *Proceedings* (pp. 736-776) and the paper on the communications of Carroll D. Wright in the *Journal*, Vol. VI (pp. 345-384) will illustrate the work of the Starlight control, and comparison of this with that and also of the two volumes above mentioned with the same will reveal a great change in the matter as time progressed. The pictographic process very much resembled the work of Starlight in respect of smoothness and verbosity. But these later records, in eliminating this verbose style, produced something like the confusion and fragmentary character noticeable in the work of Mrs. Piper, and it meant a process of reducing the influence either of the subconscious or of the controls on the matter communicated. It may not have modified the use of the subconscious as the instrument of communication, but it certainly reduced the amount of contents that can be supposed to come from it. What the trance means, therefore, in this respect, to express the case in terms of psychology, is the dissociation of content from function in the process of communication with external minds. The degree of trance will depend on the extent of rapport with the spiritual world and of this dissociation. I have symbolized this by a diagram in Vol. IV of the *Proceedings* (p. 303). In that manner we can conceive that the two extremes of mediumship would be these: one type all subconscious content with foreign stimulus, and the other type all content from the spirit and merely subconscious function as its vehicle. There would be every degree of interfusion and intermixture between these extremes. If the representation of the case be as the communicators make it, then the degree of rapport and of content dissociated from function will be proportioned to the removal of the medium's spirit from her body, putting any construction you please on this form of statement, whether it be spatial removal or merely degree of suspended influence on the part of normal and subconscious action.

It is possible, perhaps probable, that the direct method as distinguished from the pictographic process may involve wholly different functions, and indeed the fact that it finds its expression in the motor organism while the pictographic process is primarily sensory, rather makes this view clear and decisive, even though there may be connect-

ing links between the two methods. It may be that pictographic agencies prevail in all expression of thought, but they are not so apparent in the product of the direct method as in that of Starlight and the double control of Jennie P. and George Pelham. Something also will depend on the nature of the medium and her development. There are more visuels in the world than audiles, and more audiles than motiles, though all of us have auditory and motor functions alike. It is only a question of the natural mental development and expression to determine whether a subject is a visual, an audile, or a motile. The dominant development in any one direction will determine the kind of mediumship and also the extent to which different types of spirits can communicate accordingly. But this general question aside, the point to be remarked here is that the direct method which employs the motor organism may be the one best adapted to the elimination of subconscious contents from the communications, especially in visuels where the pictographic progress has been the customary one. Whether this is a necessary matter or not, it seems to have been the actual course of things in the development of Mrs. Chenoweth's trance.

It is possible that it is not merely the trance condition alone, but the proximity of the communicator to the organism. In the "tandem" method combined with the pictographic process there was the appearance of keeping the communicator farthest away and if proximity has anything to do with it the mind of the control would be the dominant factor in the messages; the purity of them would depend on the control's power of inhibition on its own thoughts. But in adopting the direct method they seem to have brought the communicator nearer and thus to have limited their own influence while increasing that of the communicator. The deepening of the trance seemed to be merely an expedient for enabling the communicator to get nearer than by the other method, while it correspondingly reduced the influence of the medium's subconscious on her organism by virtue of further removal. The facts would seem to indicate this relation of proximity to the results. The influence of the medium's mind, conscious and subconscious, decreases with the degree of removal or suspended function, and the influence of the spirit's mind increases with the degree of substitution and proximity in the place of the normal occupant of the body. Interfusion of personality would thus appear to be a natural or a necessary effect in the results and the facts point to this being true, whether necessary or not.

It is apparent from the quotations made that the influence of the subconscious content of the medium, Mrs. Chenoweth, is not great even in the state when it would be supposedly the greatest. The subliminal

stage of the trance represents the greatest degree of proximity to the organism or the greatest degree of unsuspended action, minus the normal, and in that borderland state we should expect the subconscious to exercise the largest influence possible. This influence, in so far as contents are concerned, is not great, and disappears in proportion to the deepening of the trance; tho we assume, as I do, that the functions of the subconscious, which are the same functions as the normal consciousness, remain intact and active, simply dissociating the contents of knowledge from the contents of the messages intro-mitted from the transcendental world.

### Chapter III. Influence of the Control

The manner in which I have endeavored to explain the decreasing influence of the normal and subconscious contents of the medium's mind and the increasing influence of the foreign minds substituting their activity for that of the medium, prepares us for the problem that is now before us. It is to examine the record for the intromission of the control's mind and thought into the contents of messages from other spirits. If the proximity of the communicator's mind is a condition for transmitting messages, the simultaneous proximity of the control would naturally affect the same result, especially if the process of communicating is not wholly under the voluntary management of the spirit. The very situation creates an *a priori* presumption in favor of this intermingling of the communicator's thought with that of the control and it would only remain to see if there were any facts supporting the hypothesis.

There is a great deal of evidence in the records discoverable by patient reading and a knowledge of psychology, to show that communicators do not have that kind of control over their messages that a living person has over the expression of his thought. In normal life we voluntarily limit the expression of what goes on in the mind. We select what we wish to say in conversation or in the communication of our thoughts. We omit or inhibit all that is irrelevant to the topic of interest. But in certain forms of abnormal life this control of expression is not so complete. In echolalia, for example, the organism automatically expresses what comes to the mind. The patient has no control over the connection between sensation and motor expression. In certain forms of insanity a thought has but to come into the mind to be expressed. The subject cannot help or hinder it. The whole affair is spontaneous or automatic. It is probable that these instances afford some analogy for spirit communication, not for the reason that the spirit is in an abnormal state of mind, but for the

reason that the ordinary inhibitions on transmission or expression do not apply. The analogies in communication may be more like those of the transmission of electric waves which can be picked up in wireless telegraphy by a properly adjusted instrument and this without reference to the action of the transmitting station. The message goes in every direction and will be received by any instrument at any place, provided it is properly attuned. It is possible that the spirit simply thinks and can do nothing more to determine whether a particular thought shall produce its impression on the medium's organism. The will has nothing to do with anything but the determination of the thought which shall be dominant, just as in normal conversation between the living. The fate of the thought in the effort to communicate will depend on the condition of the medium and the situation with the control, or the relation and rapport between the outside thoughts and the medium. The transmission may be involuntary and the receipt of it may depend on the attunement of the instrument, so to speak. That attunement may be the attention, conscious or subconscious, of the medium. For instance, in normal life we may be engaged in conversation with a friend and, having our attention concentrated on nothing else, we hear nothing else. But if attention be distracted by another's conversation and so turned to it, we do not hear the conversation of our friend, though we continue to fix our eyes upon him. Our perception is determined by our attention, not necessarily by the action of the other mind. A similar phenomenon may occur in communications with the dead. The rapport of the medium's mind may be diverted by attention or analogous influences, so that messages intended by the communicator may not be received and those not intended by the control may get through. The attention or condition of the medium's mind may be the determining factor, and not the will of the communicator. Add to this possibility also the analogies of transmitted motion or physical energy, as in wireless telegraphy, and we may have a situation both of fluctuating rapport and of changing dominance of thoughts in the persons present to communicate. The will of the communicator will not be the decisive factor in the transmission. The presence of other minds in the situation offers a chance for their thoughts to come through all unintentionally. I have witnessed this type of phenomenon in the record often enough with communicators when more than one were avowedly present. This may not be so noticeable with the influence of controls, for we do not know their lives and characteristics well enough to pick them out in the composite result, but when the incidents reflect the personal identity of different persons said to be present we have a fair criterion of what goes on in the pro-

cess of communication, and it indicates the involuntary influence of minds not trying to communicate, but only to help other communicators. This should be quite apparent on the hypothesis that pictographic processes prevailed. I need not go into that aspect of the matter at present. A hint of it is sufficient for those who have mastered what has been said upon the process in Vol. VI of the *Proceedings*. But in any case, the analogies of proximity and intensity suffice to explain much, the intensity varying between the different minds present, and the whole being affected by the analogies with diverted attention on the part of the psychic's mind. If we could establish the same relationship between the communicating spirit and the organism of the psychic that prevails in the normal life of the living, we might succeed in conferring the same power of controlling the communications and interfusion would no more occur than it does with the living. But as that relationship is not established, unless it is in the worst forms of obsession, it is quite probable that the law which determines what message shall get through is something like the one I have indicated, though it is a complex one and so creates all sorts of liabilities toward failure and confusion. This law covers the variations of attention and rapport on the part of the medium's mind and the variations of proximity and intensity on the part of the communicator's, now the control and again the personality whom the control or other person is helping.

When it comes to the evidence for the invasion of the control's mind upon the contents or character of the messages, the first general fact, which cannot easily be illustrated, is the quite general impression which sitters get that the communications are not characteristic of the person expected or thought to be present. The criterion of personal identity which most people use is characteristic thought and language and when they find that this is lacking they become sceptical of the spiritistic source of the messages. Their standard is a wrong one. Specific incidents told in sufficient numbers and with the proper organizing selectiveness are the proper proof of identity. Characteristic thought and language may be useful and effective in the same direction, but those who know anything about the subject would not expect this to come unadulterated. But the average layman expects it and the scientific man observes that it is not often manifested, and the consequence is that the layman, and with him the impatient sceptic who ought to know better, throw doubt on the claims made for the messages.

On the other hand, the investigator who is familiar with voluminous records and who has studied the normal and the subconscious char-

acteristics of the medium's mind will always remark that the messages are no more characteristic of her thought and language than of the alleged communicator. The conflict with her style is as great as that of the facts with the alleged spirit, and unless we assume that the subconscious will always show different characteristics from those of the normal consciousness, we cannot resort to it for explanation; and we are left in the air for explanations. It is also a fact that we can get no proof of subconscious action except from identity of contents with the normal memory or identity of characteristics in thought and language. This assumes that the personality is a unit and any other supposition would eliminate the evidence and divide the personality, which, tho it is assumed by the psychiatrist, has not been as well proved as he imagines. There are groups of mental states simulating differences of personality, so far as memory is concerned, and so a divided personality in that sense. But where there is a specific claim to a difference of personality, the case of "split personality," as conceived usually by the psychiatrist, has not been fully proved. In such cases as those of the Thompson-Gifford phenomena, the DeCamp-Stockton phenomena, the Ritchie-Abbott phenomena, and several others like them, not yet published [1914], the supposed secondary or multiple personalities disappear in obsession or spirit control and the unity of the subject is preserved. But I shall not resort to debatable cases. I mention them only to indicate that I shall not permit undisputed assumptions against the position I am explaining. It is undoubtedly true that we can *prove* secondary or split personality only by identity of mental contents between the normal and the subconscious, with amnesia in the normal of what went on in the subconscious, and by identity of characteristics in thought and language between the two. Where as distinct a cleavage exists between them as between two living people, the case of secondary personality has still to be proved. Hence when we find that the messages do not exhibit the psychic's normal memories of her mental characteristics of style in thought and language we have the same right to dispute the explanation by her mind that the sitter has to question the authenticity of messages on the same grounds. You cannot argue against spirits on the ground of a difference in personality, and at the same time defend secondary personality on the same ground. The action of spirits is quite as compatible with variation of personal characteristics as secondary personality is.

Now the whole perplexity is easily solved by the hypothesis that the messages are affected by the control's personality as well as that of the subconscious of the medium, or perhaps without the subconscious

of the medium. Nor do I make the hypothesis arbitrarily. It is the facts that suggested it to me and they are very strong in its support, tho they are not so clear and not so numerous as are the facts in proof of the personal identity of a given spirit. But they are nevertheless unmistakable. The first incident to be remarked in support of the general principle of this invasion of other personalities than the regular communicator is one that is not found in the present record. But it is so apt that I shall quote it from memory. A sitter's father was communicating and giving excellent evidence of his identity. He made a remark about his smoking and I noticed that the sitter shook her head in the negative. After the sitting I asked the person who had been present if her father smoked, and she replied that he never used tobacco in any form. I then asked if her grandfather, the communicator's father, had smoked, and she replied that he never had a cigar out of his mouth. Now it happened in the communications that the sitter's father, who was communicating, claimed that *his* father was present helping him. The reader will readily see what probably took place. The characteristic and memory of the father came through impersonated as a habit of the son, and it matters not whether we assume that it came from the grandfather directly or indirectly, it was not the primary and personal thought of the communicator, and but for the circumstance that the communicator happened to remark the presence and help of *his* father we should have had to declare the fact false. But the circumstances enabled us to trace its origin and we may thus have the invasion of the communicator's memories by the memories of another. No one can assign any limits to such a process, except the laws of communication, and what they are we have not yet completely determined.

It is true that the critic may justly reply that the communicator may have tried to assert the habit of his father and that the abbreviating and fragmentary character of the process may have resulted in real or apparent impersonation of himself. That is a legitimate supposition. But there are several instances of the same thing in this record where the impersonation is not so apparent and we shall come to them in due season. What I want to emphasize here is that, however the one personality may have performed the act of transmission, the contents prove that there is more than one personality concerned in them, nearly or remotely. The incident illustrates what *may* be true and true on a large scale.

It will not be so easy to trace the influence of the control on the contents of the record, because we know nothing of the control's identity or history, so that the presence of its influence will depend for

assertion almost entirely on the judgment of the person conducting the experiments. One would not suspect it until familiar with the complex machinery of communication; and even then he could not sustain his view without an acquaintance with a very large series of records. I shall therefore be somewhat handicapped for objective proof in this instance, but I shall endeavor to make it as clear as the circumstances will permit.

The automatic writing is the best objective evidence of this invasion, and may be discussed at length later when we can make the comparison more effectively. But I have noticed that the personality of G. P., of Jennie P., and of Dr. Hodgson has often been reflected in the writing when another communicator was supplying the contents of the messages. The best illustration of this was during the double control and pictographic communications by Jennie P. and G. P. George Pelham has his own characteristic handwriting and I can usually recognize when he is the communicator by this style. It is the same with Dr. Hodgson. I can tell his presence by the writing alone. The same is true of Jennie P., save in one instance when it was explained voluntarily by herself, showing she was conscious of the change. But the handwriting of Jennie P. has no resemblance to that of George Pelham, except the resemblance which both have to the normal handwriting of Mrs. Chenoweth. Apart from this resemblance one could not fail to distinguish their presence by their characteristic writing. But during the double control of these two personalities the writing was a perfectly distinct fusion or average of both styles. It was varyingly more like Jennie P.'s than George Pelham's, and again, more like George Pelham's than Jennie P.'s. Sometimes the control would begin with the dominant style of one of them, gradually change into the fusion of both and at the end show the dominant style of the other. But usually, when both were controlling the style had the combined characteristics of both. All this time the contents were from another communicator; and not less interesting was the fact that the handwriting of the double control was often influenced by the incidental communicator, so that you had three personalities beside the normal habits of the medium reflected and merged in the writing. This being true, we should as naturally expect the psychological contents to be equally composite, and it will remain to show that this is the fact.

It should be noticed by the readers that the communicator often claims that others are with him, sometimes three or four spirits, and the control often remarks, when a communicator has failed, that another person was trying to communicate at the same time and that



this caused the breakdown of the regular communicator. Moreover it should also be remarked by all who are familiar with the records of Mrs. Chenoweth that the controls insist that the communicator himself should give the name, whenever that is at all possible, and the control will not even try to do it until the communicator has failed. Apparently the system is to put two or more communicators forward to help each other, keeping the controls in the background, so that the direct thoughts and memories of others than the controls may have access to the organism. If this be true the whole machinery of the process reflects the supposition that the minds of the controls are likely to befog and influence results and to prevent the evidence for personal identity from being so characteristic. Apparently the object of this whole direct method was to eliminate the influence of the controls as much as to eliminate that of the subconscious of Mrs. Chenoweth. The putting forward of two or more other personalities may be for the purpose of getting any one into rapport with the organism and then to be prepared for a prompt substitution of another when the first breaks down. This substitution takes place, whether it be by a new stranger or by the control, and it is in this complication that the interfusion of personality is likely to take place. We shall probably get better evidence of this interfusion in the incidents of different communicators than in the characteristics of the controls. Attention will be called to this as the incidents are remarked. But there are illustrations which those long familiar with the personalities of the guides can detect and which would not be so apparent to casual readers of the record.

#### *Examples of the Influence of the Control*

The first passage in the record that suggests the intrusion of the control into the message of another spirit is found in the eighth sitting of the season (Nov. 4) and is dovetailed into the communication of the spirit so deftly that only one very familiar with the whole process would suspect it. The communicator began in the usual way with the automatic writing, which is to write generalities until the control is well established, and then to give specific incidents. In the midst of it the communicator remarked the communicating did not depend on "conversion or becoming spiritualized, but it is a matter of breathing the air at a different altitude." The simile is not natural for a new communicator. It is not impossible that a new communicator should make it, but the comparison is so characteristic of Dr. Hodgson, George Pelham, or Jennie P. that it is natural to imagine their invasion to help out the communicator in his explanation of his diffi-

culty. The principle of this interfusion is avowed a few minutes later in another and definite way. In explaining the difficulty of communicating clearly the communicator said: "Wait a little, two of us here and each one's thoughts are struggling for expression and it makes confusion."

At a later date one of the communicators, in the midst of the communication, expressed himself thus:

"If I had my theories put in practice no one would die until old age had released them from all obligations, but that would make a dreary world of it over here. J. P., whom I lean on for help, sometimes reminds me that it would be a vast and limitless old folks home" (Nov. 12).

This at least implies the intrusion of Jennie P's ideas into the message of the communicator, whether at the time of the automatic writing or prior to it. The analogy is entirely like her and I could have recognized its humor, if she had not been alluded to in the effort.

At a still later sitting (not here included) another comparison was made that suggests an unconscious invasion of the communicator's thought. The statement was: "The power is here, but it is more like getting the trolley disconnected and then there are many sparks and flashes and onward movement."

Then the communicator added: "Father is writing now." Accepting this last statement as true, the person alluded to never saw trolley cars and neither did any of the supposed controls unless it were Dr. Hodgson, and there is no evidence that he is present at this juncture, though it is possible, as it would have been quite natural for him to help. He knew the communicator's daughter who had evidently just tried to express. Of course, the subconscious of Mrs. Chenoweth knew all about trolley cars and we can suppose that the intrusion was that of her subconscious, and I do not object to that hypothesis, though the invasion occurred in the automatic writing. But it would imply the principle of what I am contending for; namely, the invasion of other than the communicating personality, though we are here discussing that of the controls. The evidence is that it is not the communicator's terrestrial knowledge, if we assume that the communicator is the person asserted.

The next instance is a doubtful one, in so far as invasion simultaneously with the messages of another communicator is concerned. But it represents the obtaining of control by one person when another was expected. I had a clergyman present for sittings. He happened to be a man who knew something of Professor James and probably Pro-

fessor James knew something of him. At any rate Professor James purported to communicate and explained that it was the accident of curiosity and proximity, when he was mentioned, that caused him to get into control (Jan. 28). He had no power of inhibition. But his message did not incorporate itself in the body of another communicator's as would be necessary to illustrate clearly the principle I am contending for here. His supplanting another communicator involuntarily illustrates the possibilities and may be quoted here for that fact. [Instances will occur in the following pages.]

The next instance (Feb. 2) is represented in the use of a single word, that of "Mille," which is possibly for "Mlle." The attempt was evidently to get the name "Betty" which was the name wanted, and as the child whose name this was had an ancestor who could speak only French and who had evidently tried to communicate earlier, we may suppose that this intervention of the "Mlle," assuming that this was intended, was from this French communicator with a view of making clear who was meant. But again this instance is too uncertain for clear evidence.

The next week another sitter was present and there was difficulty in getting the message through, the communicator, as is often the case, not realizing that the thought must be on the paper, not merely guessed by the sitter or reader, in order to be evidence, and I intervened with an explanation of what was necessary, as follows, with the communicator's reply (Feb. 11):

(Yes but it will not be evidence until it is on paper.)

I wish you were at the bottom of the Red Sea, for I could talk with him all right, but I really know you are quite important just the same. (Good, I understand.)

It is so exasperating to be pulled up to some particular word just for you. I mean a place we had a great many flowers growing.

Any one who knows the personality of Jennie P. will recognize it at once in this resentment at my interposition of an explanation. No other communicator than this one ever rebuked me so, but it is just like Jennie P. to scold me in this manner. Jennie P. has often reproached me for just this very thing and the reference to the "Red Sea" is just arbitrary enough to recall her unmistakably. At any rate the whole spirit of it is hers and reflects her ideas much more definitely than those of other communicators who have not shown any such knowledge of the method as Jennie P. defends. It would be clear evidence of the invasion if the reference had been definitely ascribed to

her, but it is not and we must be content with the personal characteristics to make it probable, while we admit the ground on which the inference has to be made, whether it be conclusive or not.

The next instance is too long to quote or explain at length. It is the interfusion of incidents which the sitter thought applied partly to his *maternal* grandfather, but a part of which were definitely applicable to his *paternal* grandfather. The whole record of them will have to be read and compared with the notes to see this. While the incidents do not illustrate the intrusion of the control, they do illustrate the invasion of more than one personality in connected messages which are apparently from one communicator, and that only indicates that the same effect might take place with the control, tho the control's power of inhibition may usually be so much better as to prevent the evidence of his invasion from being so clear. Cf. series XVI. (Seaman.)

In the next instance the allusion to Jennie P. rather makes the case more probable. The communicator had advised his widow to marry and had even selected the person and time for it. But he was asked a question about the risks, which seemed to bring him to an appreciation of what he had not realized before and he seems to have suddenly been influenced by Jennie P. to reverse his judgment, as appears in the following passage.

"See here. No man can be their father any more than a man can be her husband. If we keep in contact spiritually, I can advise and help and be on guard and do for them from this side as much as any two men.

(Good.)

I am not impotent and I find every day new power and new opportunity. Jennie P. tells me to brace up and not let any nonsensical ideas of chivalry keep me from the place where I belong and I think she is right. I had a feeling that I was a sort of a dog in the manger.

(No indeed.)

But I see now that I underestimated my growing spiritual power. Tell my darling to let the whole matrimonial question go to the dogs. I will take care of her and the children and grow stronger every day."

This is entirely in the style of Jennie P. and not at all in that of this communicator. The very terms "nonsensical ideas of chivalry" and "go to the dogs," with their abruptness and boldness are exactly in the manner of Jennie P. and such expressions are not usual with other communicators, who generally show the utmost politeness and reserve in their manner of expression, being less dogmatic than is Jennie P. who is as cocksure of everything as a mediaeval theologian.

But whether we regard this as a direct or an indirect intrusion of Jennie P., it is here.

The next instance is of another kind. I had an old friend of Dr. Hodgson present at a sitting and the automatic writing clearly showed the presence of Dr. Hodgson, though the communicator purported to be the sitter's father. As soon as this was indicated, I wrote on a slip of paper the words: "Hodgson and your father" and handed it to the sitter. Mrs. Chenoweth was in the trance and could not have seen me write it even if she had had her eyes open. In a few minutes the hand wrote: "I have Richard Hodgson near." But there was no later evidence that Dr. Hodgson's thoughts intervened or interfused with those of the communicator. He apparently affected only the writing.

This terminates the instances to which I can appeal for any clear suggestions, not proof, of the invasion of controls or helpers in the messages of other communicators. I wish the evidence were better, but when controls have practised inhibition of the transmission of their own thoughts, it would naturally occur that the evidence of invasion would be slight, except for those long familiar with large series of records. However this may be, it is clear that the definite evidence is not large in this record and that we shall have to rely much more on general characteristics for the proof than upon those specific incidents which are necessary to give the case the merit of demonstration, and it is not easy to select those general characteristics. Perhaps no one could do it but myself, and I am frank to say that I should not be sure of my own judgment in the matter.

The reader may be able to observe for himself the difference psychologically between the subconscious of Mrs. Chenoweth and the maturer nature of the thoughts in the automatic writing, and that difference would suggest that the subconscious of the medium is either not the same for the different stages of the trance or that the deeper state is infected by the influence of the controls. It is certain that the language and technical expressions of this deeper stage show a constant character, and this in spite of the fact that different communicators are present at different times. As the language is often not that of Mrs. Chenoweth's normal life, any more than it is characteristic of the various communicators, it is natural to suppose that it represents the influence of the control on the messages, even though we also find definite evidence of invasion by the subconscious of Mrs. Chenoweth. All depends on the extent to which the mind of the control must influence the whole process of communicating. The common character of the style for all the communicators is decidedly in support of the invasion of the control, provided we feel assured that the

subconscious of the medium has been more or less eliminated, and the appearance of technical terms characterizing certain controls and not the normal life of Mrs. Chenoweth strongly favors this view. For instance, Jennie P. often uses the French word "confrères" in her own communications, and it occasionally comes in the messages of other persons, tho it is a word which Mrs. Chenoweth would not naturally use. I have found the word in the mouth of such communicators only, as a usual thing, as either knew French or were probably being helped by Jennie P. Professor James, who knew French well, used it, whether under her influence or not makes no difference. But ordinary communicators have not used it save when we may suppose help given by Jennie P. The words "contact" and "expression" are used by all communicators, though Mrs. Chenoweth does not use "contact" in ordinary conversation, but does use "expression" in the sense in which it is used by communicators. But then Mrs. Chenoweth has acquired some of her own language from the controls themselves, as I have been able to ascertain, and this would postulate that some of it, tho subconscious, is not a normal acquisition.

However all this may be, it is more suggestive than demonstrative, and I do not pretend to regard it as having a satisfactory probative character for general readers, or perhaps for any others. It is to myself even nothing more than a working hypothesis which has more in its favor than against it, and hence I do nothing more than advance it at this stage of the experiment for further investigation.

#### Chapter IV. Mediumistic Processes and Problems Involved Therein

##### *The Pictographic Process*

I have already discussed the question in a previous report whether the pictographic process enters into the direct method of communicating. *Proceedings*, Vol. VIII, 503ff. There is not much to be said on it here. Occasionally the control resorts to it when the communicator breaks down, but that is not evidence of what I mean here. The question is whether the communicator, be he control or other personality, uses pictographic processes to get his own thought through by automatic writing. There is not much evidence in this record that it is a factor, but such as there is should be noticed.

The first clear instance of it is in the communication of Mr. Stead (Oct. 21). He refers to "Piccadilly Square." Now no Englishman, and least of all Mr. Stead, would say "Piccadilly Square." He would say "Piccadilly Circus," as there is no such "Square" in London. It

is easy to suppose that the mental picture of the place came either to the subconscious of the psychic or to the control and that "square" was the interpretation put on the picture, which is just what the subconsciousness of Mrs. Chenoweth would have done under the circumstances. Any American would have done the same, but not an Englishman. This was in the automatic writing and so represented the direct method. Of course, if G. P. were controlling, he might have interpolated the term "square," but it is easier to suppose it subconscious probably. In any case the pictographic process is the better explanation of the anomaly, though it does not account for the name "Piccadilly" so easily. But in the fact that "circus" should have come from Mr. Stead and would be the term he would use, we have clear indications of distortion by some other mind than his own, unless we suppose that he was somewhat confused himself, when momentary forgetfulness or amnesia might make the word "square" come more easily, as "square" represents a very frequent name for such places in London.

But if the pictographic process be involved in this instance, it is probably but a part of it and in that case we should have the supposition of a complex method of getting messages through. It is possible that this is true and that the fact accounts for the fragmentary nature of the messages. But we have no means at present of illustrating any such supposed process. Of course, the process is common in the subliminal, but I am here considering the direct method of automatic writing, where we do not get distinct clues as to whether the process is simple or complex. It is certain that much of the material is not easily interpreted by the pictographic method, as it involves language and ideas which never seem pictorial to our own minds in their normal action. But if it be pictographic in the general communications, one does not see how proper names and specific incidents should give any more trouble than general ones.

Moreover it is important to remark that Jennie P. has no difficulty in communicating what she pleases by the direct method which does not superficially indicate any traces of pictographic processes, but when she tries to give messages representing the memories of others the pictographic process is perfectly manifest and shows great difficulties in presenting the facts accurately. That is, in spite of the direct method, her own thoughts show no traces of pictographic agencies and are expressed with the utmost ease, while the effort to communicate the thoughts of others besides at once betrays pictorial means and great inaccuracy and difficulty at the same time. This

would establish a strong presumption against more than a casual influence of the pictographic process in the direct messages.

The next incident is near the end of the season (June 15). My brother purported to be communicating. He made a reference to a "home-made musical instrument," which I did not recognize and pressed for description. The answer soon came that it was a "reed flute." I never heard of any "home-made reed flute," and while I was trying to think what it meant he soon corrected it by reference to "willow whistles" which we were said to have made. This was correct. We had made willow whistles in our childhood and it was quite natural for my brother to refer to them, and not true or natural to refer to a "reed flute." But in the pictographic process it would be quite natural for the subconscious of Mrs. Chenoweth or any control not acquainted with what was meant to interpret the picture of such an instrument as a "reed flute." It came in automatic writing and it would appear that the pictographic process was involved in this instance. One cannot easily give any other explanation of the confusion, though it is as possible that other than a pictographic process made the correction.

In any case the evidence for the existence of the pictographic process or its dominance is not great, and indeed so meager as to raise the question whether we might not best interpret it as the control's occasional catch by mental picture of what was in the mind of the communicator that did not get through until the control intruded his or her interpretation to help the medium's mind to get it through; and then the original communicator could superpose his idea on the general one of the subconscious. This view of it would re-inforce the idea that the mind of the control may influence the communications.

### *Proper Names, and Fishing and Guessing*

The difficulty of transmitting proper names has been one of great perplexity to students of this subject. At first the believer in fraud had no trouble in urging his explanation, but soon it became clear that the very uniformity of this difficulty was an evidence of some sort of genuineness in the phenomena. Tho several efforts have been made, both by Dr. Hodgson and myself, to form some tentative theory that would partly account for the difficulty, it has never been wholly explained. It seems to hold true of all the psychics with whom I have had to deal and they were all but one from private life, and that one I have not endeavored to exploit in any special manner. With her, too, proper names gave the same difficulty as with the others. But I



do not mean here to enter into any general discussion of what this difficulty is or may be. I only wish to discuss briefly the relation of it to "fishing" and "guessing," which have been so frequently urged against mediumistic performances, and mostly by persons who have never investigated them scientifically.

"Fishing" and "guessing" are used usually to imply that the medium is consciously guessing with the hope of making hits, not only in regard to names, but also in regard to incidents. I shall here examine them only in their relation to proper names, as the incidents in such a record as this one so completely exclude both fishing and guessing as to make them wholly negligible. But the manner of getting proper names so often lends color to that hypothesis that it is necessary to examine it briefly, with a view of ascertaining whether it is applicable or not, and, if so, just in what sense it is so.

In the first place the reader should compare records and observe the simple fact that, collectively and comparing different sittings, Mrs. Chenoweth at once gets the initials of the correct names so often that we cannot attribute the fact to chance. For example, to use Greek names of the alphabet for sitters, Alpha gets the initials A, E, M, and P which are the correct initials of the person that a father would give as a communicator. Beta gets B, G, J and N, which are correct for him, Gamma gets A, C, F and S, Delta gets H, O, S and W, and so on, so that instead of repeating the same initials as trials, as fishing and guessing mediums would do, the psychic names apparently at random the right initials each time, and by the time that a large series of records has been made we find that he or she is correct so frequently that the hits are not due to chance. How much more will this be true when the full Christian names are given, even when they are so common as John, William, James, Henry, George, Mary, Anna, Elizabeth, Margaret, etc. The record will show in abundant cases that such names are correct hits without apparent guessing on the part of the medium, to say nothing of the many instances in which an unusual or a pet name has been given. Fishing and guessing are excluded from such instances. But often when the initial of a correct name has been given the medium goes on to give the complete name, and often does it very promptly. But as often or more often the effort to give it shows a play about it which has all the characteristics of fishing and guessing. This description of the process leaves the impression on readers that the phenomena are not genuine.

But I shall promptly cut this Gordian knot, by admitting that fishing and guessing do take place, and yet insist that the phenomena are still genuine. *The fishing and guessing are on the other side.* That

is, the psychic is not fishing and guessing to try the sitter's response, but to try that of the communicator who labors under difficulties analogous to our communication over a telephone or whenever there are physical obstacles to communication with each other in normal life. Either the psychic or the control does not receive the messages or impressions clearly and has to guess at what they mean until the communicator assents to the right name or impression. This is a perfectly simple explanation of the facts wherever we have evidence of both honesty and the existence of supernormal facts. Of course, wherever we have no evidence of either honesty or the supernormal no such hypothesis will legitimately apply. But given the fact that chance coincidence has been transcended and a perfectly uniform law of phonetics is followed in the effort to get the correct name or word, we have a clear right to apply the "fishing" and "guessing" to the effort to get at the spirit's mind and not necessarily that of the living. Indeed, the subconscious might even honestly try to ascertain from the living whether her guess was correct or not, where there is no disposition to distrust the process. But this aside, the point here is to recognize conditions under which the process is perfectly legitimate. When a man applies the theory we have a right to demand what type of "fishing" and "guessing" he has in mind or on which side they are considered. It is a superficial objection in such a record as the present one to apply them without qualification or with the implication that they are either consciously indulged by the medium or even unconsciously indulged in relation to the sitter alone. The actual existence of the supernormal in the data, and even in regard to many proper names, requires the consideration of the situation in which the control or the subconscious is placed in its relation to an external and spiritual world, to say nothing of the law of phonetics that is followed usually in the effort, while "fishing" and "guessing" in normal life usually follow the law of different names, though the other is not without its illustrations. But usually the effort plays around the correct initial which is gotten at once and without "fishing" and "guessing."

Hence it will be apparent why I conceded that the processes are actually employed at times to get at the impression of the communicator. I even conceded that the subconscious may often do the guessing to help out the communicator, while at other times it is the control that is doing the "fishing" and "guessing" and the subconscious is passive in it. There need, then, be no concern over attempts to apply those processes destructively to the problem. They also have a constructive application, and wherever the supernormal has been proved

we have the right to demand of the critic that he distinguish between the two points of view.

### *A Residual Problem*

There is a certain kind of perplexity, if only a logical one, in the discussion of the influence of the subconscious and of organic habits on the messages, that should receive a moment's attention, though we are not prepared for any adequate solution of it. On the one hand we assume, at least for the sake of argument, that the subconscious memories, organic habits of the organism, and general influence of the medium's mind affect the contents of messages, even if this influence goes no farther than determining the language employed to convey them. On the other hand, the claim is made by the controls at times that the medium's spirit is removed from the body and the organism used for a direct medium of transmission, the idea being that the discarnate spirit uses the organism as he would have used his own when living. Now if the soul of the psychic is removed from the body, how can it affect the messages, especially as it is often assumed that the medium's spirit is far away? That is to say, if the soul of the medium is not present in the organism, how can it affect the messages? If it is there, how can we reconcile this view with the assertion of its absence?

The theosophists would answer the question by saying that the astral body and the soul are different things and hence that the astral with its records of normal experience remains in the body for the use of the discarnate spirit when in possession of the body. This assumes a memory and mental activity in the astral organism as well as in the spirit which is supposedly removed. The view has been itself obtained from statements purporting to be communications from the dead, in which the astral body is often described as a "shell" which ultimately perishes while the spirit survives. But there are certain difficulties and objections to this doctrine which should be mentioned. First, in so far as it has been derived from communications with the dead, it should be remarked that the conception may be nothing more than an opinion or theory of the dead and so not represent a statement of fact. For our purposes it would have to be verified adequately before it could be assumed. It is my own belief that many opinions are communicated from the dead as statements of fact, but which are discountable as mere opinions. Second, whether the communicated idea be an opinion or a statement of fact, it is easy to misunderstand its real meaning. So many communications from the spiritual world are symbolic or fragmentary that it is quite possible this theosophic doc-

trine, in so far as it has been acquired from the dead, is a sensory analogy merely to enforce a distinction. We have always to employ sensory analogies to describe the phenomena of consciousness, tho we are aware that our descriptions are symbolic only. The theosophic doctrine may be nothing more than an apprehensible distinction between sensory consciousness and inner consciousness, the distinction which the Emperor group drew, in their communications through Mrs. Piper and Stainton Moses, between the "exterior" and the "interior" consciousness, probably the same as our distinction between supraliminal or normal consciousness, in so far as it is sensory, and the subliminal consciousness. In this sense we might regard the basis of our bodily memories as a "shell" destined to perish. But the term "shell" might convey a totally false conception of the facts. Third, the theosophist assumes a difference between the astral and the spiritual body, so to speak. In other words he assumes at least two transcendental organisms, one for the sensory memories and the other for the pure spiritual activities. But, altho there is evidence for some sort of etherial double or organism accompanying the physical body, there is no evidence for a distinction between it and some other etherial organism supposed to be the condition of inner or spiritual consciousness.

The only psychological fact that tends to support the theosophical doctrine at this point is the undoubted distinction which we have to draw between sensory and inner consciousness, supraliminal consciousness associated with bodily activities and subliminal consciousness whose associations and basis we do not yet know. Amnesia is the phenomenon in connection with anaesthesia which enables us to discover clearly the distinction. We find that, in cases of dissociation, the area of normal consciousness and memory is diminished while the sub-conscious goes on receiving and interpreting impressions as if the sensory activity were not disturbed. If we assume that these different functions require a different subject and on the ground of that, set up two etherial organisms, we should have the doctrine of the theosophists. But it is not at all necessary to suppose a distinction of organisms to distinguish between different functions. It is possible to regard sensory activity quite as much as the function of the etherial organism, which also functions as inner and subliminal consciousness, as to make it the action of another organism. We always find various functions associated with the same organism and there is no reason here to make a metaphysical distinction to account for a phenomenal one. The sensory functions may be the more superficial ones incident to bodily associations in the objective world, and when the body is removed or

the spirit leaves the body the sensory functions atrophy, so to speak. There is a complete analogy in the atrophy of those organs which are necessary before birth and useless afterward. But they were all organs of the same body. When they were of no use in a changed environment they stopped acting or functioning and other functions dormant in the first environment became active in the new. It is quite possible that it is the same with sensory consciousness. It is a function for use in the physical world or environment and perhaps simply atrophies, so to speak, when the soul is separated from the body; while the functions that were subliminally active in the body become the primary functions in the new etherial world.

This psychological analysis of and explanation of the facts makes it unnecessary to resort to a distinction between etherial organisms. The consequence of this may be that the spatial distinctions involved in the doctrine of removing the spirit from the body to use it for communications may be partly a representation of feelings on the part of the medium and a construction of different space relations by the communicator, if the latter may be assumable at all. But when we remember that in our dreams we take no account of our bodies, and observe our apparent locality in the dream as real, we may imagine that the subconscious representation of "removal" is merely the sensations of motion, kinaesthetic sensations, as in the dream life, and does not necessarily represent actual motion at all. The representation of distance may be merely a time relation converted into space by kinaesthetic sensations which are dissociated from the bodily movement and so have no real motion in connection with them. We do this in our dreams all the time. We always think we are where our mental imagery and memories represent us to be. Bodily sensations no longer exist, at least of the normal and supraliminal type, and our conceptions of space remain in our memories to superpose themselves on the dream imagery. In the subliminal stages of Mrs. Chenoweth's trance, which is in fact but a form of sleep with transcendental rapport, the pictographic images leave on her mind the impression of being where they are represented as events, and this is but a reproduction of what we are all familiar with in our dreams. It is taking these pictographic images as real that causes the sense of place in them. If only the medium would recognize, in this trance, that they were merely transferred thoughts by the spirit, she would probably not have the spatial feeling so clear. This very thing has apparently occurred once in this series of experiments, tho published independently. It was after the new deepening of the trance had been effected, when in the subliminal recovery Mrs. Chenoweth seemed to discover that what

she had previously regarded as real was only a thought transferred from the spirit. I quote the passage:

Here I go under these ropes again. [Had referred to this in the subliminal entrance to the trance.] Oh, it is all nonsense. It was just somebody's thought, wasn't it?

(Yes.)

I am not going to be silly any more. I am not going to let their thought affect me so. If I didn't I wouldn't be a medy any more, would I?

(No.) [See record of June 16, 1914, below.]

This was the first intimation that Mrs. Chenoweth's subconscious had that the pictures she had were merely transferred images. Always prior to this she had taken the pictures as realities in a dream. But here she is getting the right connection of them. Supposing, then, that her subconscious representation of removal from the body is but the production of kinaesthetic sensations, subliminal ones, while anaesthesia is being produced, we shall have a perfectly intelligible psychological meaning for the statements without interpreting them as actually spatial.

But then we have the statements of the spirits implying spatial separation; yet that may be due to a difference between their spatial conceptions and ours, or the necessity of communicating in spatial terms even when they do not, in their environment, think in them. This metaphysical doctrine, however, is too dubious to urge and tho the psychological interpretation of the facts comes the nearest being satisfactory it does not wholly remove the claims made by the trance personalities. There is, nevertheless, a point of view which should be mentioned that may help to reduce the amount of perplexity without acceptance of the metaphysical doctrine stated.

The fact of control or controls in the case of mediumship is connected with a long period of practice and adaptation to the mind and organism of the psychic. This goes on to the extent that the control seems to know all that the medium knows in her normal and subconscious states. It may be that this is done to enable the controls to master the ideas and language of the psychic for the sake of converting spiritual experiences into their mundane terminology. In that case the ideas and language of the medium would be both the instrument and the limitation of the control. All the spatial conceptions of the living would be imported into the account of states of consciousness; and the whole conception of mere suspension of normal and subcon-

scious control might be converted into the idea of removal, and so get expression in those terms.

There is, of course, no evidence for this, but the fact that spatial ideas get into dreams that are not real requires us to accept cautiously all doctrines involving the setting up of unnecessary realities in the interpretation of abnormal and unusual phenomena. The best that we can do is to say that the problem requires investigation and that we have not yet obtained a satisfactory solution of it.

### Chapter V, Series I, Oct. 20, 21, 22, 1913

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

October 20th, 1913. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sigh and long pause.] Oh! [Pause.] Hm [distress] [Pause.]  
It is not hard to die.

(Who says that?)

[Long pause and fist rolled up and apparent attempts to write.  
Pencil given followed by pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

\* \* [scrawl and pencil fell and reinserted. Pause and distress in face.] \* \* [scrawl, pause and scrawl again which is a possible attempt to write 'W'] Wil... [scrawly and uncertain of reading.]

(What is that?)

S \* \* [scrawls] S S S [P. F. R.] [For "Pencil fell and reinserted."]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] S t . . . S t e a d [P. F. R.]

(Good, glad to greet you and when you say why you have come first this morning I shall be glad to know.) [Thinking of the experiment in London, Eng., where he was alleged to be present.]

[Pause.] come for [not read] for evidence.

(Yes.)

and one here to say somewhat about the matters discussed at interview. They [looked like 'Thay' and purposely not read, as I was thinking of a name of which this was the first part.] They mean all right. [Pause.] you [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

have put new wine [pause till read] into old bottles. [Pause.]

(Who is the one over there with you?) [Thinking of Mr. Thayer.]

An . . . [not read at time and not clear writing.]

(What is that last word?)

A B A B was with me and is now with me [style of handwriting altered greatly with the beginning of the 'A. B.']

[P. F. R., and hand seized mine before the reinsertion of pencil and held it a moment, and Indian uttered.]

cannot yet do what I am pledged to do but am not disturbed.

(All right. Take your time.)

I have a reason for showing up now.

(Yes, I believe it and who . . . ?) [Thinking of Mr. T——, who had mentioned Stead apparently or he was present when Mr. T—— purported to communicate in London.]

She [Pause.] (Good, go ahead.) is here. She expects me to come here now as p . . . [Struggle and P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

I promised to do. [P. F. R.]

(Yes, I understand.)

I have as much to do now as I [read 'it'] I [Pause and P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] you were not afraid of the result [read 'small' doubtfully] result after the talk. [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

not so erratic [N. R.] [For 'Not read.'] erratic as \* \* [scrawl and pause.] supposed . . . might be supposed and that is one of the things discovered. [Pause.] Order [N. R.] Order and good sense prevail though [so read.] all [hand pointed to word read 'though' till read 'through'] the effort that is all that can be demanded [read 'communicated' knowing it not correct.] demanded.

(Stick to it and tell me who *she* is.) [Still thinking of Mrs. T——.]

My friend over here is the one I referred to a friend of the \* \* [pause] Annie. [P. F. R., and pause.]<sup>1</sup>

(Is this still Mr. Stead?)

Stead.

(Now, who is the friend with you?) [Thinking of Mr. T——.]

[Long pause and scrawl, P. F. R., pause, and P. F. R. again.]

(Stick to it.)

---

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Stead had communicated soon after his death on the Titanic, so that the reference to him in this respect is not evidential, Mrs. Chenoweth knowing well enough of his death. I did not suspect at once who was meant by the "A. B.," but when the name Annie came I saw it referred to Mrs. Annie Bright, editor of "*The*



[Pause.] boy [heavy writing.] boy of mine [pause and scrawl.] not that did I mean to write just then although he is with me of course but I have another who is here and who wishes much [read 'more'] to come to day. Perhaps I have started in too soon.

(No, you stick to it and we shall get it all right, and if you can say to whom he wishes to send a message it will make . . . .) [Writing began.]

Sister and my son. [P. F. R., and Indian. Pause.] W. S. Stead. [P. F. R., pause and P. F. R. again.] Edward. you know Edward Edith.

(Yes.)

Edith Edith. (Yes, I do.) young good good girl working hard to get the chief. [Pause.] Edith is all that I could wish for in the work. You saw Edith.

(Yes, I did.)

and she told you about her work the great work she is doing now. You know what it is to have a work of encouragement [scrawly and N. R.] for she is . . . encouragement for she is working against great odds so much opposition in a quarter from which it should not come.

(I understand.)

Faithful Edith I mean you gave her word of encouragement not she gave to you. It was good. I was there heard it all [distress] and smiled approval [approval] and will do all I can to supplement that work there with additional proof and testimony here.<sup>2</sup> You do not think me the idiot some of my confreres have [read 'but'] have thought me.

(That is right.)

but you cannot say much yet for I am still a tabooed one among the more conservative but I kept my head just the same and I know it now much [scrawly] better than before I came. I know that Edith has thousands of papers. You know to what I refer.<sup>3</sup>

---

*Harbinger of Light*," in Melbourne, Australia, who had recently died. Both facts were known to Mrs. Chenoweth. But with subliminal powers only a fraction of what they are supposed to be, she should have had no difficulty in giving the name. The association of Mr. Stead with her name is very pertinent, as he knew Mrs. Bright. The fact might be guessed by Mrs. Chenoweth, but it was not a matter of definite knowledge to her.

<sup>2</sup> Mr. Stead's son had been referred to at earlier sittings and his death was a fact known to Mrs. Chenoweth. Edith is the name of Miss Harper, who was Mr. Stead's secretary when he was living. Her name and relationship was not known to Mrs. Chenoweth. Mr. Stead was called "chief" by his colleagues, a fact not known by Mrs. Chenoweth. Edward is probably a mistaken effort to get the name Edith. The reference to opposition seems pertinent.

<sup>3</sup> The allusion to his being a tabooed man is quite characteristic. Mrs. Cheno-

(She did not mention it in that way, but I imagine it to be true.)  
[I had no inkling of such a thing from her.]

yes yes yes so much matter to go over. She will help [P. F. R., and  
distress. Groans as writing went on.] by keeping records carefully  
[N. R.] there are ... carefully there and I will report there and have  
[superposed] I have a regular [N. R.] time ... regular [N. R.]  
regular ... to go there but take a chance here with the others. How  
did you like her bureau.

(I did not have time to see it.) [The fact was that I heard when  
there that it had been abandoned and I did not wish to say so here.]

I thought you knew something of it from the conversation I heard.<sup>4</sup>

(I knew of the bureau and I would ask if you knew of anything  
else I did.) [Thinking of sitting with Vango.]

yes and I want to tell you about it not yet but when a little better  
settled. I have no regrets none whatever. [Pause and scrawl.] you  
know Edith's work.

(Yes.)

writing writing writing. [P. F. R.]

(Has any one else been writing?)

[Pause.] yes you mean the other girl or yourself.

(I mean the other girl, and wish ....) [Writing began.]

My [pause] my daughter.

(Yes, that is right.)

yes. So characteristic of her so like me she is you know. [P. F.  
R.] S Ste ... [Indian.] Stella. Stead.

(Good.)

my Stella.

(That is right.)

weth probably knew he was a much criticized man, but she knew less than was  
necessary to make this reference so pertinent. Mr. Stead knew keenly enough what  
was thought of himself in respectable quarters of the Society for Psychical Research  
and he was quite indifferent to it. He did keep his head better than was supposed,  
though he was not always discreet in his treatment of the problem. His fearlessness  
made him less prudent than those classes who do not care for the welfare of  
the world.

Miss Harper was engrossed with his papers, being occupied writing his life. This  
fact neither Mrs. Chenoweth nor I knew.

<sup>4</sup>I did not visit Julia's Bureau which Mr. Stead had founded. As a contem-  
porary note indicates, it had been abandoned for lack of funds and apparently Mrs.  
Chenoweth did not know the fact, tho she knew of its prior existence. I did  
have some conversation with Miss Harper and others about it, a fact not known to  
Mrs. Chenoweth. The reference to writing evidently points to the work of Miss  
Harper, as she was engaged at the time in going over the records of Julia's Bureau  
and other material for his biography.

[Distress and groans.] My Stella My love to Stella.

(Yes, I shall.)

[P. F. R., and pause. Hand reached and held mine a moment after letting pencil fall again and reached for pencil which was reinserted.]

Stella feels me with her as she said. [distress.]<sup>5</sup>

(Why did you refer to me as writing?) [Thinking of possible reference above to my taking notes at and after Vango sitting.]

[Pause.] When I said which one You or the girl is that what you mean.

(Yes, exactly.)

I referred to what you have written her.

(All right.)

and it was a pleasure to me to have you do so. We must ...  
[Pencil fell and hand tried to brush the papers away, and after a pause the voice whispered "Mother."] [Then a pause.]

[*Subliminal.*]

What did you do? What did you do?

(Nothing.)

[Pause.] Where is the woman?

(What woman?)

Where is the woman?

(What woman?)

That is here.

(What woman was that?)

Did you have a woman here?

(When?) [Thinking of Mrs. T——.] Just now. (No.)

Was there a woman writing?

(No.)<sup>6</sup>

So dizzy, I am just whirling around just like a whirlpool in the ocean. Whirling around like a swirl, swirl, swirl. My God! I am drowning.

---

<sup>5</sup> Estelle is the name of Mr. Stead's daughter, not known at the time to Mrs. Chenoweth, but she afterward became personally acquainted with her. Information from Miss Harper indicates that Mr. Stead never called her Stella, but Estelle. This daughter was engaged at the time in writing a biography of her father, a fact not known to Mrs. Chenoweth.

<sup>6</sup> The persistence in my mind of the incidents about Vango is explained by the following facts. When in London I had arranged for a sitting with him under an assumed name and took a friend with me who wished to hear from her husband. Mr. Stead was referred to in connection with her husband, both having died on the Titanic. Hence I wanted to see if any cross reference might come here.

(Who?) \* \* [Not caught.] (What did you say?)

[Pause.] So cold.

(Who says that?)

I don't know. I feel it. So dark. [Pause.] Where did Astor go?<sup>7</sup> [Pause.]

(Go ahead.)

[Pause and sigh.] Now I see the light. [Pause and hand laid on mine.] If it were not so cold we could keep up. [Pause.] Oh dear! [Opened eyes but showed that she was not normally conscious.] I thought it was night. I thought I saw the stars. [Here Mrs. C. awakened and remarked: 'Back again.']

(Do you know what you said?)

No. [Normal.] [Further questioning showed she had no memory of what occurred after opening eyes.]

We had no conversation before the sitting about my trip. I simply said I had a pleasant voyage and Mrs. C. remarked that she did not dare ask any questions. I remarked that she knew about the British Association and she said she did, and that was all I said, and we talked about Spiritualism and my article on it.

I had hoped to have Mrs. Astor present today, but last Saturday afternoon I received a telegram from her saying she could not come this week.

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

October 21st, 1913. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sigh.] Oh, I got to go. [Long pause.] It is funny that I am seeing all these people again.

(Yes.)

What is the matter? Are you discouraged?

(No.)

---

<sup>7</sup> This reference to Mr. Astor is quite remarkable. He, too, had died on the Titanic and so was associated with Mr. Stead in that voyage and accident. But the pertinence of the reference is due to more than this circumstance. In the previous spring I had Mrs. Astor at a few sittings and no name or incident came that made the sittings evidential or revealed who was present, though those who are familiar with these phenomena would have recognized that the direction of the communications was correct. In order to get more satisfactory results I had invited Mrs. Astor to take the first sittings of the season and the fact was not known to any but myself and Mrs. Astor. She could not come. The pertinence of the reference to him and the giving of his name is evident, and so also the reference to drowning.

[Long pause.] You are not to be. [Pause.] I see so many colors, orange, red, purple. It is strange. I was just painting before you came. I wonder if that is what did it.

(Probably.)

Isn't that funny. My thoughts of colors piled up here. [Pause.] Hm. It is gone. [Long pause, and reached for pencil, which was given, when it fell and had to be reinserted, followed by a long pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

\* \* [scrawls. P. F. R., and pause, followed by distress.] S [pause] \* \* S [scrawl.] S t e a d and a word about my efforts previous to this. I am aware of my contact with the light at another time and place and in a different manner but that must not hinder my expression here with you for I have so much of importance to do with you direct [read 'and' doubtfully and hand pointed till read 'direct'] yes [to reading]. It is like me to show up when I have a chance but this is [sheet changed and pencil fell and control lost for a time.] so different. Do you know to what I refer.

(No, I do not until you make plain where it was that you tried to communicate before.)

The Indian saw me at the hotel where our mutual friend had an attack of shivers and there was some word or message given by me but I do not forget it when here and try to avoid any repetition of any evidence which I might give to you. I refer to this now that you may have clear sailing. I prefer that the light be kept in ignorance of what I say or do at other places if that can be done for it will give me less work in my effort here because I must see what is already registered on the consciousness and not ['and' erased, and I suspected the intention to erase 'not,' and so reread, when hand tried again to erase.] avoid those matters.

(I understand and would be glad to have the previous effort elsewhere made perfectly clear. If you can tell where it was and who were with you or who were present on this side it will make it clear.)

[I had not observed that it referred to Miss Whiting and the hotel where she was staying.]

This particular case to which I refer is what occurred one evening when the light I am now using was calling on that eminent writer and friend L. W. and where there were many spirit friends present and has no connection with any evidential work I have tried to do elsewhere. This was simply a glimpse of me and a bit of a message to my friend borne earthward [earthward] by the little Sunbeam.

I make all this effort that you and I may start square with this

undertaking [written illegibly and not read] undertaking and also to let you know that I have memory of that evening. If I have memory of that I also have memory of other events which have transpired since I came to the work on this side. [Indian.]

I am glad of yesterday. It gave me joy. [period inserted.] I will come again but I do not desire to use all the time you have when there are so many here to greet [N. R.] greet you.<sup>8</sup> [period inserted.] So I was not very scientific in my methods. That makes me laugh.

(Do you remember what made you so impatient of the English Society?) [I had in mind a story told me by Sir William Barrett, but do not know that Mr. Stead ever knew the real facts.]

And the English Society so impatient with me.

(Yes.)

We were never able to agree on the way evidence should be gathered. They have the same old story now that they had when I tried to be of some use to them. Stead is unscientific. yes yes that is what they said and too ready to jump at conclusions. I have little patience with them or their refusal to accept some authority that is not the word [read 'sort'] to use ... word ... but I lose the word I want. It means the same thing. They work altogether on one line and let no other types of phenomena get a hearing.

(I understand. You were a member of the Society, were you not?)

At my death or before.

(I am inquiring, as I do not know.)

I had a membership in the Society but I was not active in their work. They were too slow and laborious for me. still I appreciate the careful [N. R.] careful and trained methods [groan] I know they had as little use for my methods as I for theirs but I always felt it was due the effort they were making to place [read 'have'] place the truth in a proper [proper] way that I should at least keep [keep] a membership.<sup>9</sup> I ....

---

<sup>8</sup> This reference to "L. W.," Lilian Whiting, is pertinent enough. The previous evening, when I was present, Miss Whiting, who is quite psychic, had an attack of "the shivers," as she often does on such occasions, indicating the presence of some one trying to communicate. There was no evidence that Mr. Stead was present, though that is as likely as anything else. The allusion to "the Indian" is to "Sunbeam," one of Mrs. Chenoweth's familiars.

<sup>9</sup> All that is said about Mr. Stead's attitude toward the English Society is perfectly characteristic, and represents more than the knowledge of Mrs. Chenoweth, tho Mr. Stead, when living, had many years before expressed himself very vigorously in a sentence or two in the *New York American*, which I happened to see because of his letter to me expressing the same sentiment. Mrs. Chenoweth knew nothing of this. She probably knew in general his difference of attitude on

(I understand, and to return to another matter I would ask if you kept track of me when I was in England or know anything I did besides seeing Edith?)

Yes I do know and did keep track and know to what you refer. Another [another] friend of mine is the thing you refer to and an old haunt [read 'hand'] haunt yes place familiar to me and associations familiar also. I do not mean the rooms of the Society but a business place where you and some one I know a friend indeed who [read 'also'] had no [pause and pencil pointed at 'who' till read] question as to the use and value of work already done . . . already done but who expressed some doubt about the future of my plans which were broken by my death.<sup>10</sup>

(Yes, but I . . . .) [Writing began.]

the [superposing and hand pulled down making a scrawl.] man you mean.

(Tell about that person.)

A man I refer to.

(Yes, but tell who he is or I can't tell anything.)

you want me to tell his name. name.

(Yes, by all means.)

H [pause] He . . . He r [pause, and I thought of name 'Herbert'] You know whom I mean now.

(You mean Herbert.)<sup>11</sup>

[P. F. R., three times.] I have two dear f . . . [pause.] I have two whom I wish to speak to of [effort to erase 'to'] one in business one carrying out some of my plans \* \* [not read, but evidently attempt at word 'social'] socially Socialist Socialistic plans. Was I a Socialist.

(I do not know.)

Somewhat yes somewhat and had a work commenced for the betterment [betterment] of men and one I trust is going forward with it. \* \* [might be 'H' or 'TS' or scrawl.] [P. F. R., and hand seized

---

the subject. He was not an active member of the English Society, a fact not known by Mrs. Chenoweth. Nothing could be more characteristic than the statement that he had "as little use for their methods as they for his." He did not remain a member of the Society.

<sup>10</sup> It is apparent here that the allusion is to the abandonment of Julia's Bureau, though it is not so clear as is desirable. If it be this reference it is a correction of an apparent error when the continued existence of that Bureau was apparently assumed. Cf. Note 4.

<sup>11</sup> Herbert is the name of Mr. Stead's living brother. The name was mentioned at an earlier sitting and so I did not insist on getting the whole of it here. This relationship is mentioned a little later and neither the name nor the relationship was known by Mrs. Chenoweth.

mine and held finger. I reinserted pencil and held finger end in palm of hand, as this was wanted.]<sup>12</sup>

B r o t h e r.

(Yes, who was the brother?)

my brother is at work in my place. [period inserted.] Do you know what I mean.

(No, I do not, but I shall inquire about it.)

You know my boy.

(I have heard of him because he was mentioned through this light before you passed out.)

Yes but I have two two children you know.

(You mean you have two living.)

Yes<sup>13</sup> [P. F. R.] F F \* \* [scrawl resembling 'a'] I am conscious that I am taking too much time from your other friends.

(I understand.)

[Indian and pause.] P i c c a d i l l y S q u a r e. [P. F. R.] P i c c a d i l y you know.<sup>14</sup>

(Yes, I know the place, but that is all.)

Nearby I worked 4 [I paused before reading] 4 I know more [read 'not'] more much more boks [books] you are familiar with the two place more than W where I lived. W W.

(Finish that.) [Thinking of Wimbledon.]

[Pause.] If I can. W W i [pause] [P. F. R. and distress.] W i m . . . [pause and distress.] \* \* [scrawl.] W i m b . . . b b l e W i m b l e t o n

(Good. I understand.)

W i m b l e d o n n o t t o n.

<sup>12</sup> Miss Harper writes me that Mr. Stead was not a Socialist and had no affiliations with that organization. His interest in every association for the betterment of mankind, however, allied him in sympathy with the efforts of Socialism, tho he was more individualistic than the Socialists. Miss Harper writes that he was much impressed with the organization of the continental Socialists in 1911. None of these facts were known to Mrs. Chenoweth except that Mr. Stead was generally interested in human welfare.

<sup>13</sup> Mr. Stead has three sons and a daughter living. I knew of the daughter, but not of the sons, and Mrs. Chenoweth knew of neither at the time.

<sup>14</sup> "Piccadilly Square" is evidently a reference to "Piccadilly Circus," and is to that extent a mistake, probably due to the American usage of "Square" for such places, which by the way are "squares" instead of "circuses," the latter term never being used in this country to my knowledge. Mrs. Chenoweth may have heard of "Piccadilly," but probably never heard of "Piccadilly Circus."

Miss Harper writes that "Piccadilly Circus" had no special association for Mr. Stead, but that she, a short time before, read a paper at the International Psychic Club, which is only a few steps from Piccadilly Circus. But this reference was before the paper was read. She thinks, however, that he was trying to give the Square on which his town residence was situated. This is possible because he soon gives the name of his country residence.



(Good. I understand.)

Where J [P. F. R.] lives no no I live.<sup>15</sup>

(Yes, I understand.)

Wish you could have been there and I so expressed myself to my friends. Ask them. They will tell you.

(All right.)

[Indian and pencil fell, hand reaching for mine in desperation. I placed mine on hers and there was a pause.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh take away those elephants. [Pause.] Were you ever in India. I have been. [Long pause and distress.] Do you know Edith's mother?

(Yes.)

Do you? (Yes.) Tell her he likes salad as well as ever he did. What does that mean?

(I think he is proving his identity.)

It looks like watercress. Do you know watercress?

(Yes.)

It looks like that. It is green. They eat it don't they?

(Yes.)<sup>16</sup>

Goodbye. Are things coming anywhere near it?

(Yes.)

Are you going to have a great year's work?

(Yes.)

Got to. There are some nice people you met while you were away and they like you all right. You are two leagues ahead of them, do you know it?

(Yes.)

I mean that honest, not flattery. They stop to learn so many les-

<sup>15</sup> The reference to the number 4 might possibly refer to the number of his children living, or may be a confused reference to a number of places where he had lived. Wimbledon was the place of his country house where he had lived for years, but was not living at the time of his death, a fact not known to Mrs. Chenoweth.

<sup>16</sup> Mr. Stead, it seems, was never in India. The name Edith, as explained above, is that of his former secretary. Her mother is still living, a fact not known by Mrs. Chenoweth, nor that I had met her when in England. Of the allusion to salad and water cress, Miss Harper writes as follows:—

"The reference to 'salad' and 'water cress' is very good. At supper, after the weekly meeting of Julia's Circle, there was always salad and water cress. And though Mr. Stead was not particularly addicted to salad, he liked the cress, and I can well imagine it would stand out preëminently in his mind in connection with these weekly meetings which he always loved. Indeed, he would hardly fail to remember it if he remembered anything at all."

In the automatic writing he had just given the name of the place where he had lived at one time.

sons the same time. You have jumped ahead, a double promotion for you. [Long pause.]

Do you know a great big house with grounds and you go up a little driveway to it. It looks like a country home.<sup>17</sup>

(Whose?) [Thinking of a recently deceased friend.]

I don't know.

(Find out.)

[Pause.] Do you know any one named Julia?

(Yes.) [I think this is the correct name of friend in mind.]

Well, I think it is Julia's home.

(If it is the right Julia, tell me.)

How do I know it is the right Julia?

(Find out.)

Do you know the letter A connected with her?

(Yes.) [Initial of middle name.]

Julia A. I suppose you will ask me for the rest of the name in a minute, won't you?

(Yes.)

Do you know any one named Ames?

(That is the Julia of Stead's book.) [Not the person I had in mind.]

Is it?

(I had another Julia in mind.)

Another one that commences with A?

(No.) [Not exactly a correct answer, but it is not initial of last name which I thought psychic meant.]

Well, it is mixed. I can't get it. I am too near. I didn't know Julia was named that. How do you know it?

(I heard of it.)<sup>18</sup>

[Mrs. C. awakened hearing my answer, but did not know what had occurred just prior to it.]

---

<sup>17</sup> Miss Harper writes that this is a good description, as far as it goes, of Mr. Stead's house and drive at Wimbledon where he had lived many years. They were not known to Mrs. Chenoweth.

<sup>18</sup> "Julia Ames" was the name of the person who had communicated so much through the hand of Mr. Stead himself and was the source of the little book, "After Death," published by Mr. Stead. Mrs. Chenoweth knew of this book and the name Julia, but says she did not know her name Ames, a fact quite credible, because it was not published in connection with that book and even I did not know who she was until it was written here and I made inquiry.

I had in mind another person, a personal friend of mine who had recently died, whose name began with "Julia A.," and from whom I might expect to hear. But my mind is ignored, at least in giving the name Ames.

I then questioned Mrs. C. as to whether she knew Julia's last name and she said she did not, and that she merely knew that Julia was the name of the lady connected with Stead's book, which she says she has not read and that she had never heard what Julia's name was.

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

October 22nd, 1913. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

Yes [Pause, cough and Indian. Long pause.] I don't know who that is.

(Find out.)

[Pause.] It is a tall slender man, gray hair, so quiet, unassuming, so carefully dressed, rather slow. Hm. [Pause and a little distress in face, and pause again.] Oh [pause] I heard some one say, Why Thomas Hyslop. Have you got some one by that name?

(No.)

[Pause.] That's what I heard.

(I think I have heard the name.)<sup>19</sup>

[Pause.] Hm. [Pause.] He doesn't seem to make an effort to tell me anything, but some one spoke to him as if surprised to see him about. [Pause.] Hm. [Pause.] Oh there is such a lot of people here. [Pause. Sigh and distress.] Don't stifle me. [Pause and reached for pencil, which was given, and then another pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[Writing began very slow and continued so throughout the sitting.]

Greetings and warmest congratulations.

(Greetings to you, whoever you are.)

With new and re-enforced hope the work begins and a wonderful spirit of sublimity [read 'sublimely'] sublimity [read 'sublimely' again and hand pointed, when I read it correctly] pervades the place to which I have been invited to come this morning. I am aware of all the excitement produced among thinking people by the recent utterances of the great men in the work and it gives stimulus to our efforts on this side. We could serve our fellows with greater power if the

<sup>19</sup> The name Thomas Hyslop has no meaning to me, nor does the description recall any one that I know. Whom I could have had in mind at the time when I said "I think I have heard the name," I cannot recall now when making this note. It is not any relative within the limits of my memory. Nor can I recall any Thomas who might be confused with a Hyslop.

work were not retarded by apathy and any message which creates [read 'excites'] interest and creates discussion is hailed by us with delight.

Your visit was timely and important and helped to establish relations which we earnestly desire. R. H. was in his element and felt that American effort had been justified and no belittlement of methods or measures or men would ever be tried again. There ought to have been a united effort to \* \* [erased] have each representative of other countries make plain speech of accomplished work, but that will come at a later day.

I am well satisfied with the general result. Epoch making time and some of your working hypotheses were entirely new to your English friends but the lucidity [read 'avidity'] lucidity of the position was grasped and made many \* \* ['h' or 'p,' but erased.] hiherto [hitherto, but not read.] problematical situations . . . hitherto [not read at once] hith . . . [read] yes simple and readily understood. You will know later what I mean.

(All right.)

I am here not only to say pleasant and cheerful things but to assure you that the work is being outlined and condensed to a degree of usefulness. I have at times been able to come here in a way that proved my interest only but I hope to do more than that. We who have records that are easily accessible to the readers of psychic matters must drop our effort at personal identification except in rare instances and devote ourselves to the assistance of those who are less unfortunate [*sic*] and to philosophizing and stating and restating and instituting some definite and constructive lines of experiment between points of contact that will prove our conscious life today and our knowledge of what is needed to build up a civilization of highest ideal types.

You can [read 'are'] well . . . can . . . understand what I have written and know the difficulties we have been laboring under when we were still an unrecognized community over here and when our energies were centered on memories either past or special. Now thank God a new era opens up for some of us. Do not dream that we forego the pleasure of making allusions to the past whenever and wherever able which set out our identity. That we shall continue to do always as it is a part of persistent personality to do just that but not all of our effort will go that way.

(I understand.)

I am Sidgwick.

(Good, can you say what happened on the other side of the water to make you come today?)

Yes and I have tried to say it several times when I hesitated I tried to interpolate it but it did not come.

(What . . . . .) [Writing began.]

I came [Read 'Same'] I came there the other side and there was effort to give greeting as here done yes [to delayed reading of 'done']. I will return to this again and again. My purpose is to keep a virtual [new pencil given and rejected, when a second one was given.] a virtual promise [promise] and also to refer to an interview which was of greatest interest to me.

(Yes, who was present at that interview?)

That is just what I am trying to make statement of.

(All right. Stick to it.)

It is more of a pleasure than you can imagine to come here early in the experiments but I had decided to do so \* \* [probably intended for '2'] 2 friends there and such evident interest in me and my effort and it was so still and quiet except for animated converse and a time to make [not read] make R. H. R. H. jup [jump] with enthusiasm. He was there also with us.

(I believe it.)

and it gave him a chance to note [read 'hold'] note some points. very little difference of opinion in that interview. [P. F. R. three times and struggle to keep control.] Yes and he he he the other friend he [read 'the'] he was as glad as you and . . . [P. F. R. twice.]

H H He He n . . . Henry Sidgwick.<sup>20</sup>

(I understand.)

[P. F. R. and pause.] Glas \* \* [evidently intended for 'gow' but not read.] [Pencil fell and long pause. Indian and pause again.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Who is that Glasgow?

(Tell me about it.)

He said the word. Did you go to Glasgow? Did somebody try to write it for you?

(Yes.)

Hm. (Find why.) What? (Find why.)

---

<sup>20</sup> It was very pertinent to have Professor Sidgwick come at this juncture. I had lunched with Mrs. Verrall and Mrs. Sidgwick, Miss Verrall also being present, and had a long interview on the subject of psychic research. The allusion to "2 friends" present is correct, but perhaps not evidential without more specific mention of who they were. I did present many new points of view, but I doubt if their lucidity was apparent or acceptable. The general attitude of mind is characteristic of Professor Sidgwick, as it represented the main motive of his interest in psychic research. Mrs. Chenoweth knew absolutely nothing about him.

It seemed another word after Glasgow. It seems like an institution, more like a college or school. Do you know what it is?

(No.) [I should have said Yes, though I said No because I did not go to any institution in Glasgow, but to another in Edinburgh.]

Did you go to a big building there?

(No.)

You certainly did something. Did you land at Glasgow from the steamer? I get a picture like you and a building somewhere else. I don't know whether it is commercial or academic. A building something like that attracts you and you went there on business, didn't you?

(Yes.) [University in Edinburgh in mind.]

I didn't know you went. Isn't that funny. I supposed you went to London. I will tell you more about it when we get more settled you know.

(Yes.)<sup>21</sup>

[Hand reached for mine. Pause.] How is the boy?

(All right.) I mean your boy. (Yes.) Your wife is very proud of him. He is doing something well. She just spoke of him. He is a good boy. (Yes.) Next week? (Yes.) and forever and forever? (Yes.) George says he got crowded out this time. He will show up when there is any business. Do you know anybody that has got twins? Were they ever in your family? (Yes, who?) I don't know. Perhaps I know it because it seems familiar. Did I know it? It seems two babies. It makes no difference. It just came now. They are your mother's babies. [Awakened.]<sup>22</sup>

#### Chapter VI, Series II, Oct. 27, 28, 29, 1913

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mr. Welsh.      October 27th, 1913.    10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitter admitted and long pause. Sigh and pause again.]

Oh isn't it lovely?

(Yes.)

Hm. [Pause.] Do you believe in hell?

(It depends on what kind.) [Said to exact explication.]

---

<sup>21</sup> I landed at Glasgow on my trip to England, a fact not known to Mrs. Chenoweth, and immediately went to Edinburgh, where I called at the University and then on one of the Professors there. This fact also was not known by Mrs. Chenoweth, but it is not clearly indicated in the message. I did not stop at Glasgow.

<sup>22</sup> There were twins in my father's family, I being one of them and my deceased sister the other. The fact was mentioned in my Piper Report, which had not been seen by Mrs. Chenoweth.

[Pause.] The old fashioned kind.

(No.) Fiends, pitch forks and fire. (No.)

[Pause.] I'm glad. [Pause.] It would be strange that I never saw anything of the kind if there was such a thing, wouldn't it?

(Yes.)

I suppose people never dreamed of any torture except physical, but now we know of a torture much more dreadful which is mental. That is your kind of a hell, isn't it?

(Yes.)

Hm. [Pause.] Heh [smile] we needn't have that if we keep clean thoughts. [Pause.] It is so heavenly here, that is why I thought of the other. [Pause.] Hm. [Pause.]<sup>23</sup>

I see a lovely lady.

(Describe her.)

What for? She don't know you.

(I may find out.) [Had in mind some possible friend of sitter.]

[Pause.] All right. [Pause.] Just a minute. [Pause.] Quite tall, blue eyes, brown hair, slightly gray, fair skin, rather slender, about 60, perhaps a little more or a little less, very strong and active, the most prominent article about her is some earrings, quite long dark [pause] Oh pendants. [Pause.] Hm. Her hair is parted. [Pause.] Hm. [Pause.] Yes, she is very religious. I would think she belonged to the Episcopal church or a church where prayer books are used. I see one in her hand. Hm. [Pause.] Wait a minute. [Pause.]

There is a letter L with her. It sounds something like Letitia, Lettie or Letitia. [Pause.]<sup>24a</sup>

<sup>23</sup> The reference to hell has only one item of interest and that is its identification with bad thoughts and heaven with "clean thoughts." This is the conception of Mrs. Chenoweth as representing the reaction against the old ideas.

<sup>24a</sup> The sitter writes regarding the description of the lady referred to that it "might, in its general tenor, be considered fairly like my mother. In one point it was quite correct. She was a member of the Episcopal Church and was a deeply religious woman. She was, in person, rather slender, as I have heard her described. I note one item in the description of the medium's vision which at the moment I supposed incorrect, but which, upon inquiry, after my return to Philadelphia, seems to have been quite correct. I inquired of two of my sisters whether mother wore earrings. Both answered in the negative. Previous to this I asked the question of my sister, Mrs. George Strawbridge. She answered, 'I think she did and I think I have a pair of her earrings in the bank.' I asked her to look them up, so as to see if they tallied with the medium's description. After the negative answers of my two oldest sisters, I went back to Mrs. Strawbridge with the question: 'How do you reconcile your positive answer with the negative one of the other two sisters?' She replied: 'All I can say is that when I was a young girl I bored my ears myself for earrings. Father said to me in regard to it: "My dear, you seem to have more vanity than good sense, but since you have done this, I will give you a pair of earrings which were your mother's."' She subsequently found these earrings and I had

I'm gone. Oh she makes me so faint. Oh [great distress.] She went \* \* [one word not caught.] so quick. [Hand trembled.] Oh please. [Hand jerked and signs of distress.] Oh [groans. Pause and pencil given, pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[P. F. R. Long pause.] \* \* \* \* \* [scrawls and pauses.] \* \*  
[G ?] [P. F. R.] May we make our trial here.

(Yes, you certainly can. You are welcome.)

my dear one is here [distress and pause.] and I wish to greet him and write some good [distress] word of my [struggle to keep control.] knowledge of his life.

(Yes, take your time and we shall be very patient until you get good control of the writing.)

I hear [distress] and understand.

[Pencil held between first and second fingers, and seemed awkward to write so I asked to change the pencil. I tried to do so. The hand resisted and then yielded, but immediately wished to change it back, which I did.]

So hard

(I understand and think it . . . .) [Writing went on.]

to die when life is so vivid and full of love. [P. F. R. Indian and pause.] Mother is glad to come here. [P. F. R.] Mother is glad to come here.<sup>24b</sup>

(Yes, I understand.)

Mother is glad to come here.

---

them for several weeks in my possession. They agreed with Mrs. Chenoweth's description, being long pendant earrings. However, they were not *dark* but fairly bright, being made principally of gold.

"Some weeks later, one Sunday morning, happening to be idly glancing over the heterogeneous contents of my bureau drawer, my attention became fixed upon the object which prompted me to say to myself: 'That is certainly an earring, it is long, a pendant and moreover it is dark—it fits fully the description of the medium.' It was a Sandwich Islands earring, made of wood, light in weight but dark in color, rudely carved and inlaid on its principal surface with mother-of-pearl. On a small piece of paper that adhered to the side was written in my hand: 'Sandwich Islands earring, June 13th, 1864.' It was a curio which I had bought when a boy at the Sanitary Fair, held in Logan Square, Philadelphia, and of which my father, John Welsh, was president.

"My mother was an Episcopalian of the old Evangelical type. Therefore the description of her as apparently seen by the medium with a prayerbook in her hand impressed me as being in accord with her personality."

She had blue eyes, brown hair, but no gray in it; was of fair complexion and 36 years of age when she died, not 60. Her name was not Letitia, but this was the Christian name of the sister of the old family cook.

<sup>24b</sup> The previous note explains the relevance of the indication that the sitter's mother is dead.



(Yes, I understand and so will the friend present. You can go on and free your mind as you wish.)

Mother is glad to come to you and to repeat some of the experiences [N. R.] experiences of the past as that is the thought of the ones in charge the past the past [Pause.]

(I understand, and perhaps you know what occurred very recently and may be able to say something about it. I mean as recently as a few hours ago.) [I had in mind raps that occurred to sitter in his room in the hotel this morning early before rising.]

I [P. F. R.] hear and know what is meant and will try and tell about it first let me get hold a little better.

(Yes, all right.)

I have been here long enough to have mastered some conditions but not quite all. [Pause.] She she [pencil tapping paper] She is here \* \* [scrawl.] I mean another who is with me here and who desires to communicate and there is also [pause.]

(I understand. Go ahead.)

most a [probably started to write 'anxious,' but erased.] eagerly waiting for me to establish the condition which will enable her to do so—

(Good.)

It is with reluctance that I keep [keep] hold but it is best just now although she is not as weak as you might think more excited [delay in reading] than weak. [Struggle to keep control.]

(I understand. Stick to it.)

[Groan. P. F. R.] Do not be discouraged.

(No, we are not.) [Message probably said by control to spirit.] for all is being done that can be.

(Yes, I understand.)

[P. F. R. Pause.] D [?] [P. F. R. and Indian.] I am still here.

(I understand.)

3 of us together now. [Pause.] \* \* [scrawl.] my darling one. [P. F. R.] \* \* [scrawls.] [P. F. R. twice and pauses.] I have been before to you. [Pause and P. F. R. twice.] \* \* [scrawl or attempt at letter 'M'] D D \* \* [possibly 'E'] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

C C [possibly intended for 'E' both times.] E. Oh it is so [distress] hard to say what I want to say to you dear but I have courage and want you to have patience and I will do all. I did not want to die [Indian.] you know that I did not want to go but it is not as dark as it seemed for his light is all about me.

[Pencil fell and new one given. Great struggle to keep any con-

trol and writing became heavy and in large script with great pressure on pad.]

\* \* \* [scrawls in vertical lines.] I must say [Indian.] what I want to if it is at all possible for it is so important [important]. you do not know how it hurts to wat [want] to say something. E E \* \* [second letter or attempt at it not legible.] \* \* [P. F. R. and long pause. P. F. R.] <sup>25</sup>

[Change of Control.]

[Five pencils rejected. Evidence of Jennie P.]

\* \* [Probably, scrawl for 'G'] Good [N. R.] Good morning. It is about time I took a chance here. I hate [N. R.] hate this wobbly paper.

[Pad not steady. New one placed under hand.]

Give me something sted . . . [probably for 'steady' and so read.] and I will try to do something to help this spirit who is so excited. there are two ladies who are most interested to come and a man is with them. One lady seems to have been over here much longer than the other and to have much better control over her . . . of . . . emotions but that is only a question of a little time after [read 'when'] all . . . after all. Do you know me Hurricane.

(Yes, I do.)

all right. you know that I [pencil tapping.] never show up unless there is great need because you make so much fuss over your supplies yes [to delayed reading.] yes you want to save everything and I want [read 'won't'] want to see things fly.

Well to return to the two ladies one has been trying to communicate at another place and made some sort of connections [not read aloud.] connections.

[Pencil worn out and three rejected in getting a new one.]

Sorry to make you trouble. Am I no — no — I am not. Well . . . [Pause.]

(What were the connections?)

You mean what sort of manifestations.

(Yes.)

I will find out find out ['find' not read first time.] she desired [read 'tried' without excuse therefore.] to tell him [read 'them'] . . . tell . . . She desired to tell him your friend in the chair

(Yes.)

---

<sup>25</sup> The sitter could find no significance to the initials D, C or E. It is possible that all three letters were a confusion for the one which came at the end of the passage; namely E, and this may have been an attempt at Emma which came later.

about them herself but perhaps if she tried on another line that matter would flow in half unconsciously. It is a sort of stage fright some spirits get when they try to recal [recall] some special event especially when you pounce [written 'ponce' and not read.] pounce [N. R.] pounce [N. R.] P O U n c e on them like a schoolmaster.

(I understand.)

Yes you say you do but you go in the same old way when you see a chance to make a good point. I will never get you educated for you always have an ye [eye] open for a good bit of evidence. How many times have I got to repeat that it does not come that way. You . . .

(I often find that, unless I hint at a point on which the communicator should work the mind soon wanders from the real point and we get only generalities.)

[Pause.] Oh yes I se [see] what you have written there but as often you turn them aside as you \* \* [apparently 'hlp' for 'help'] them to a steady point [N. R.] steady [N. R.] steady point.

(All right.)

I have to deal [N. R.] deal with the individual [N. R.] spirit . . . individual spirit and I only tell you these things to help you.

This particular spirit is very sensitive and very strong at the same time and quite acute to suggestion and the sound [read 'sort'] sound [N. R.] of . . . sound of your voice even [N. R.] even had [N. R.] an influence on on her. [Not coherently read at time.]

Who is crazy you or me.

(Perhaps both of us.)

even your voice had an . . . [passage read correctly.] yes good boy. I do not like to waste time half as much as I like to waste materials so I hurry on with these directions and instructions.<sup>26</sup>

Do you know a man [delay in reading] a . . . who is a father to the younger woman over here ['younger' read 'young' and pencil tapped till corrected.] There are two women one is the mother of your friend I think and the other is a woman who has gone more . . . gone . . . more recently than the other. Do you understand.

(Yes.)

and then there is a man apparently the father of the younger woman here also and then a young man quite young when [N. R.] he . . . when \* \* ['he' evidently.] came . . . he . . . here who seems like

<sup>26</sup> Jennie P. loves to scold me and uses materials scandalously. The messages that are most successful do come in the way indicated, too often buried in a mass of non-evidential and irrelevant talk. The comparison to stage fright in the communicator explains an undoubted difficulty and may be a half justification for Dr. Hodgson's theory of a dream or trance state when communicating, tho that is not as forcible today as it was then. [Since, still less so.—G. O. T.]

a brother to the friend present yes [to reading] a little brother gone some time. Do you know \* \* also.

(Not that he knows of.) [Sitter shook head and said:] (There was a sister.)

no this is a little *boy* [underscored.] grown in the spirit and now a man <sup>27a</sup> and do you know any one by the name of Emily or Emmy a name somewhat like that which seems shortened for family use [delay in reading] for family use. [Pause.] <sup>27b</sup>

I will not stay longer but will let her do her own writing. The most that . . . The most that has been done is to get an established atmosphere but do not worry [delay in reading] yes worry. It will be all right.

Do you know or have you been in contact with some one very recently who has made some study or is interested in the brain [N. R.] brain [N. R.] B r a i n [read 'Braith'] B R A I N.

(I know, perhaps, what you mean by the word *brain*, if it is symbolical.) [Thinking of name of my former housekeeper whose name was 'Brain' and who died a year or so ago.]

I see a brain. I see a picture of a human brain just as it is photographed for use in medical books and I could think of nothing else than that it must be an association of some sort with you very recently.

(Find who it is that sends the picture of a brain.)

Hdgson [Hodgson] standing her[e] [read 'sending her'] standing here has the [read 'her'] the picture in his hand [read 'mind'] hand. It is either something about disease or some one who is a specialist on those matters. Don't you think for a minute that we don't know what brains look like when we see them. We don't often get a peep at a real set so R. H. shows a picture of some.<sup>28</sup> That is only frivolous writing. Goodbye. Whirlwind. J. P.

---

<sup>27a</sup> The sitter writes in regard to the "little boy" mentioned: "At the time of the sitting, I was ignorant of the fact that an infant brother of mine had died, or if I ever knew it I had forgotten it. But after my return to Germantown, I questioned my sister, Mrs. Strawbridge, on that point, and she said that mother lost a boy in babyhood. I am the youngest member of the family and this happened before my birth. My mother died when I was 9 months old."

<sup>27b</sup> In regard to the name Emily the sitter says: "None of those of my generation were named Emily. My sister Mrs. Strawbridge lost a granddaughter of that name several years ago. This only occurred to me after my return to Germantown."

<sup>28</sup> I know of no reason for the reference to the human brain in this connection. But the reference to a picture of a brain suggests that the communicator, Dr. Hodgson, might have been aware of the picture of a brain taken by Mrs. du Pont Lee and which I published. There is not adequate evidence of this, but the fortuitous manner in which the reference is made and the coincidence involved requires the mention of the incident, if only for the chance that might be involved in it.

I have been trotting trotting Trotting around after you all summer and I will tell you about some of the things I have seen later.

(All right.)

[Hand reached for mine. Indian gibberish.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Distress and clutched my hand.] I see a big Wife. (Who says that?) [Long pause. Sigh and long pause again.] Goodbye. (Goodbye.) [Sitter leaves room.] He is not from England is he? <sup>29</sup> (No.) I get these English things all mixed up. Is he discouraged? (No.) How do you know? [Pause and awakened.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mr. Welsh. October 28th, 1913. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitter admitted. Long pause. Violent jerk of hand and upper part of the body like an electric shock. Pause and sigh of relief and pause again.] Hm. [Pause and slight jerk or electric shock again with twisting of the face.]

Do you know any one named Carrie?

(Yes, I do. Do you?) [Said to sitter.] (Mr. W.: Yes.) (Yes, go ahead.)

I mean in the spirit.

(Mr. W.: Yes.)

She is here. I feel so nervous. Very dark hair, dark eyes. [Pause.] Do you know?

(Mr. W.: I find it difficult to answer positively. Her hair was inclined to be dark.)<sup>30</sup>

The one I see is so. I only know the people I see. [Pause.] It makes me so sick. [Distress and pause.] Go away. [Pause.]

Now I see Dr. Hodgson. [Pause.]

(Mr. W.: Dr. who?) (Dr. Hodgson.) [Said to sitter.]

and with him is some one named Merrick. It sounds just like Merrick. There is a name like that is there not?

(Mr. W.: Yes, I know a name just like that.)

Hm. [Pause.] Heh, heh. [Smile on face.] Do you want me to tell just what I see Dr. Hyslop?

<sup>29</sup> The sitter says of the allusion to "Wife" and England, that his mother died in England and her remains were brought home, by her husband, for interment.

<sup>30</sup> The sitter recognizes the pertinence of the name Carrie and the description of her. His comments are: "Carrie Welsh had dark eyes. She died probably twenty years ago and upon her deathbed made reference to a religious address which she had heard in St. Mark's Church, Frankford, shortly before her mortal illness."

(Yes.)

There is a little girl and a horse. A country place, you know and this is such a gentle horse and this little girl plays around it. [Long pause.] <sup>31</sup>

I'm going. [Pause and pencil given.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

Sarah is here to greet you.

(What Sarah?) [Thinking it possibly my Aunt Sarah.]

Aunt Sarah.

(Whose aunt?)

[P. F. R.] No — is [P. F. R.] Aunt Sarah is here to greet you. I am your Aunt.

(You mean mine?)

no no no [and heavy line or dash drawn after last.]

[I looked at sitter. Mr. W. nodded head, signifying he knew.]

(Yes, I understand now. So did I have one.)

Yes, but I am not your Aunt but his.

(Yes, that is perfectly clear now. Go ahead.) <sup>32</sup>

I have been talking over some of these things with the friends here and I am convinced that it is time to help him to a conclusion if we can. I have been over on this side of life for a long time and it seems rather strange to try to make direct expression but the family ties are still strong with us. We always were a family of strong ties and have kept rather close to each other in this life. I have commissions from so many who are so eager to give you word of their [distress] well being and vital interest in this work which is new to most of us but which is to be further [I accidentally touched arm and it withdrew and paused as I read word.] ed by your own experiences [struggle.] H—— is here too [distress] I do not mean Hodgson but a member of our family and also [distress] B Do you not know who B is.

(If you can give . . . .) [Writing went on.]

B yes I know you want the rest. B e B e n B e n [P. F. R.] You know now.

(Not clear yet.) [Sitter shook head.]

<sup>31</sup> The sitter's comments on this passage are: "The name Merrick is that of a well known Philadelphia family, with whom my father had intimate associations. A number of prominent ones among us belonged to this family with whose names I was familiar in boyhood and early manhood." The reference to the little girl and the horse is not intelligible to the sitter.

<sup>32</sup> The sitter writes of this "Aunt Sarah": "It seems quite clear that this refers to my Aunt Sarah Lowther, my mother's sister who passed from this life in October, 1860. She was a woman of fine mind and character and deeply religious."

B e a ['a' not read] a woman B e \* \* [possibly 's'] a woman in our family a woman. Bei Ber. [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

I want to write it.

(Yes, take your time.)

B e r [pause] t [P. F. R.] s [pause] Bess. Cannot do it [Pause.] Yes but wait a little.

(Yes, we shall. You go ahead.)<sup>33</sup>

I have known of the interest and some concern [read 'common,' doubtfully, and finger pointed and read 'woman' doubtfully] wh... concern other than personal which he has had in this theme and have known of his reading and study and we have all followed the intent of his pursuit. [P. F. R. Indian.]

Just a moment till I get on a more specific line.<sup>34a</sup>

(I understand.)

[Pause.] are you not [pause]

(Stick to it.)

C [P. F. R. and distress.] is [pause] C is for one who still lives. [P. F. R. and Indian twice with pause between.]

(Stick to it.)

[Long pause.] Do not get nervous with me

(No, I shall not.)

for I am trying to help. 3 are here most anxious to come 3 are here now. [Pause.] I had a home a long way from here and may be able to recall some of the things which will help to prove it.

(Yes, do so.)

I suppose that is what you want.

(Yes, exactly.) (Mr. W.: Yes, yes.)

<sup>33</sup> Of the confused passage attempting to give a name, the sitter comments as follows: "I was sometimes called Bert or Bertie as a child, a nickname for Herbert."

The instance of confusion here is a most instructive one. Ordinarily Ben and Bess would not be mistaken for Bert or Bertie, but my experiments through a speaking tube confirm the liabilities illustrated here. [In reply to further inquiry, Mr. Welsh replies: "Ours was most positively a family of strong ties."—G. O. T.]

<sup>34a</sup> The reference to the sitter's interest in this theme is very pertinent. He writes of it as follows:

"The allusion to the alleged interest that the family group on the other side have had in my 'concern other than personal' which I have had in this 'theme' (i. e., psychic research), is very interesting to me, because it tallies exactly with the facts that I have read and studied, observed and gathered testimony on this subject of psychic research, first because I wanted to know the truth; and later, when what seemed to me to be the truth became more clearly-outlined in my mind, I wanted to help with it those who, having fallen into doubt or complete scepticism about a spiritual unseen life and immortality, could through this means have their faith in it established. It is true that my studies had more than a 'personal concern.'"

Do you remember a long low window in my home almost to the floor in a room which looked out upon open spaces like broad fields. The window was long and narrow \* \* \* \* [first word read 'with' doubtfully.] [Pause.] was long and narrow — ...<sup>34b</sup> and do you know about Grandfather—yours not mine.

(Mr. W.: Yes, yes.)

who was such a stickler for his own forms or ways— Do you remember how unchangeable [N. R.]

(Yes, that is all right.) [Sitter had nodded head.]

unchangeable he was and if I tell you that he is the slowest [N. R.] one among us . . . slowest one among us to accept any new doctrine of faith you can believe it.

(Mr. W.: Yes, yes.)

But even he will have to come to the facts. I do not say this to have you recall his rather narrow conceptions except as a little test. He came over here after some illness that made his death a thing to be glad of— Relief I mean.

(I understand.) (Mr. W.: Yes, yes.)

and he still clings to Grandmother who would always do everything just right

(Mr. W.: Yes.)

no one else could. She always had to treat him somewhat like a spoiled baby.

(Mr. W.: Exactly. Most extraordinary.)

and I tell her [all superposed while I was writing sitter's statement.]

and I tell her that she does the same thing now but she does not mind any of our chaffing but keeps right on in the same sweet way. She

<sup>34b</sup> The initial C is possibly a second reference to the Carrie previously mentioned, but there is no assured evidence of this. Of the allusions that are efforts to prove the statements and identity of the communicator and those with him, three in number, the sitter says:

"This and subsequent references would seem to be to old 'Springbank,' our summer home, seven miles from the heart of Philadelphia on the outskirts of Germantown. To this place of 100 acres, bordering on the Wissahickon, 'Aunt Sallie' and all of us children were passionately attached.

"The reference to a 'long low window,' when I heard it made, at once brought up to my mind the memory of my aunt's bedroom in the third story at Spring Bank, which had in it, if I remember correctly, a sort of door window. All the windows looked out over broad fields that extended up to the edge of the beautiful woodland that ran over steep, rocky declivities of the Wissahickon Creek. This, thro a gift of my father to the city, now forms a part of our park system. The relation to my grandfather Lowther was clear. He bought this summer place as a joint summer residence for himself and my grandmother and our family, mainly because my oldest brother Edward (to whom he was devotedly attached) admired it so much."



always smoothed out every wrinkle for everybody with a quiet little word which made us all believe that we were all right and everybody else would know we were in a few minutes.<sup>35</sup> I wish you could see just how wonderfully real the life is over here.

Do you recall anything about [Indian.] an [pause] old [pause] J o e [pause] old

(Mr. W.: Did she say a man or woman?)

horse [written as sitter spoke.] an old horse.

(Yes.). [Sitter nodded head.]

[Pause.] Can't whip that horse said Grandfather but no one could make it go without. a kind of family heirloom he proved to be. [P. F. R. Indian.] That was one of grandfather's whims and the horse was not to be handled [N. R.] handled by irreverent hands. [P. F. R.]<sup>36</sup>

(Stick to it.)

I want to recall about a family party a family gathering just before a death— Some occasion where all meet together for an anniversary and soon after there was a death of one of the older ones. That was a woman who died that time. [Pause and groan.] M a ... [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

am I getting anything through.

(Yes, you are. Go ahead.)

Do you know M a r i e

(Do you know Marie?) [Said to sitter.] (Mr. W.: Mary.)

no M a r i a. M a r y is right.

(Mr. W.: Mary is the name of my mother, if that is what she means.)

<sup>35</sup> The characterization of the grandfather in the record receives the following comments by the sitter:

"I should say that my grandfather was 'a stickler for his own forms or ways.' He certainly was very argumentative, fixed in opinions and quick and passionate in likes and dislikes. I remember hearing him say in debate, 'I will give my head for a football,' if the thesis he maintained was not correct.

"I would say that he was slow to accept a new doctrine, but others might hold a different opinion. His illness was such as to make his death a relief to all. It was caused by a violent indigestion, the last of many severe attacks that resulted from the giving up of all physical exercise and habitual over-indulgence in eating.

"Dr. Lowther had a quick and sometimes rather violent temper. Grandmother's influence upon him was quieting. She was of a placid disposition."

<sup>36</sup> Of the allusion to a horse Joe, the sitter says: "I know of no one named Joe. My grandfather Lowther had a horse named Rollo, but none named Joe that I know of. Rollo was rather before my time, so that I cannot speak very positively about him, but from what little I know on that point I do not think that the characteristics mentioned would fit him."

and it is she who passed away soon after a little social gathering. not a long illness but still rather serious. You know what I mean.

(Mary was the name of my mother. She died of consumption.)

He thinks I refer to the whole long illness but there was a sudden turn and going out after a little happy time which I think he will recall. [Indian and new pencil given.]<sup>37</sup>

She is so happy to get into communication with him— That is his mother of whom I write now. She was gentleness yes yes gentleness and Christian fortitude. you know how she loved flowers. Does he not know about a flower which grew . . . a lily a lily which she loved.

(Mr. W.: Very likely.)

Cala C— [Sitter looked doubtful to my look.]

(Not certain yet.)

He does not recall you mean.

(Mr. W.: Her total qualities are there. She died when I was eighteen months old.)

the calla lily was a favorite and I think grew in her home. I have so many messages from her to him for she has always been a guiding star to him. His boyhood was marked w . . . [read 'worked' doubtfully and hand pointed till corrected.] with such longings and aspirations that found [read 'find' and hand pointed till corrected.] little understanding

(Mr. W.: Most extraordinary.)

sympathy from those about him and he often went apart and seemed almost to commune in his longing to do so with her and always in the silence of the wood or the night and the dark. She seemed to be like an angelic atmosphere which sustained him. Poor little boy she often said, so sensitive and yet so obstinately refusing to take sympathy which was only proffered without real understanding of him. [Distress.] God blessed him in giving him an angel mother who watches over his spiritual welfare.<sup>38</sup>

---

<sup>37</sup> In regard to the woman who died and the party gathering, the sitter writes. "I cannot answer the question so as to throw any light on the description except on a few points. My mother's name was Mary. She died of what we called in those days 'consumption' of the lungs, tuberculosis now. The illness, contracted shortly after my birth by exposure to cold when she was still weak, terminated fatally in London, England, nine months later. I know nothing of a 'party gathering' at that crisis."

<sup>38</sup> "My mother was a gentle character and of a very spiritual mind, just as was Aunt Sallie. As to the love of flowers I assume that she loved them as all such temperaments do. I cannot ascribe any particular meaning to the reference to calla lilies. But the general description of her by the alleged communicator impressed me at the time when I heard it and it does so now, when a year later I endeavor to answer these questions.

I have so many more things to say. Something about her her grave.

(All right. Go ahead.)

long way off [P. F. R. and sigh.] [Pause, P. F. R. and pause again.] \* \* ['I' or 'T'] T T who is T.

(You tell.)

T h [pause.] I am losing my hold.

(I understand.)

Take my hand. [I took hand.] I want to write more. T [read 'S'] T T \* \* [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

T h o m a [P. F. R. and pause.] S O h T o m. [Pencil fell.] <sup>39</sup>

[*Subliminal.*]

Who is Willie, do you know?

(Mr. W.: Why I have a brother by that name.)

[Pause.] Good isn't it. (Yes.) He isn't much like him. [Pause.]

Is he? <sup>40</sup>

(I don't know, but will find out.)

[Pause.] And you know I see a big letter J just here. I think it is somebody in the spirit, you know. [Pause.] I don't think it is James.

"To my mind one of the most striking passages in all this alleged communication from my Aunt Sarah Lowther—in its exact truthfulness and in the apparent impossibility that the medium could have given it in any other way than by Aunt Sallie being the communicator, is the following: 'His boyhood was marked by such longings and aspirations that found little understanding.' That was exactly so. I was an extremely sensitive imaginative child, and I suffered extremely all through the period of adolescence, because my mother having died, I was deprived of her sympathy, love and guidance. Her place was inadequately filled by a half-sister of immature years (19 at the time of mother's death) who was perfectly conscientious according to her lights but quite destitute of the inspiration and loving quality. Aunt Sarah Lowther saw this unfortunate condition of things with a clear and discerning spirit, and she did her best to supply not only to me but to the various members of the orphaned family, the mother's love taken from them by death.

"The passage, therefore, depicts a very real condition which lasted during my early childhood and made it a period of great unhappiness to me, one of unsatisfied longings and aspirations."

<sup>39</sup> "My mother's grave was 'a long way off' in the family plot, 350 miles from Boston."—H. S. W.

The name Thomas has no meaning to the sitter. It was not completed and the coming on of the subliminal prevented its development.

<sup>40</sup> "The name 'Willie,' and the communication that purported to come from him impressed me very deeply at the time that it was made, and has done so ever since for reasons that I will explain. It is the name of my youngest brother, but who was several years older than I. He was known as 'China Billy,' because as a very young man he went to China on a sailing vessel, 'before the mast.' He was intellectually very bright but lacked stability of character and thereby caused great anxiety to my father and to us all by an ill regulated life."

[Pause.] It is awful. It's just John. You know what it is. There are two Johns.

(Mr. W.: Yes.)

Because I see two fingers go up. There are two Johns. [Pause and smile.] <sup>41</sup> I have to go I suppose, don't you?

(Yes.)

Too bad. I could stay all forenoon and all afternoon. [Pause.] Wait a minute. Do you know any one named Betsy or Bettie.

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded assent.]

Sometimes they called her one and sometimes the other. She had a mixed personality, you know.

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.]

She is awful busy and active.<sup>42</sup> [Pause.] Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

Just before I go I must tell you about a name I hear. Eunice. Do you know any one named Eunice?

(No, not sure now.)

It seems as if they called her Eunie.<sup>43</sup> Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

[Long pause. Sitter left. Pause.] My head aches. [Rubbed face and awakened.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mr. Welsh. October 29th, 1913. 9:30 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitter admitted. Long pause, sigh, pause, Indian. Hand moved.]

<sup>41</sup> "The name James has no significance to me, but the 'two Johns' mentioned would refer perhaps to my father and my older brother as both of them bore that name. One of the most convincing things to my mind is the record of where the medium seems to see 'two Johns.' My father was John Welsh. The account of what one of these Johns says about religion and the concurrence of his views with mine is exceedingly striking. This is most characteristic of my father's thoughts about religion. I was once much struck with a remark of my deceased cousin; he told me that father had said to him he believed that a religion would arise to take the place of existing Christianity. This rather shocked me at the time, but I have since wondered whether father did not foresee what is now taking place, viz., that through psychic research and spiritualism in its purity a fresh interpretation is being put upon Christian truth and it is being made much more adaptable to the uses of fresh bodies of men and women who through it are having a reconciliation of science and the Christian religion wrought out."—H. S. W.

<sup>42</sup> "Bettie might well be Bettie Welsh, my brother Samuel's first wife, to whom I was much attached and who died, after seven weeks' illness, in 1886."

<sup>43</sup> "Regarding the name Eunice, when I heard this mentioned, it conveyed no significance to me, but upon my return to Germantown I learned by inquiry of my sister, Mrs. Strawbridge, that Eunice was the name of a nurse of my mother's."

Hm [uttered in distressful manner and breathing became labored with slight groans]. Yes, yes. [Pause.] Oh how dark it is. [Said in distressful tone.] How dark. [Pause and groan.] Oh, Oh, I am afraid.

(Don't be afraid. We shall help.)

[Pause and reached for pencil and pause again.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[P. F. R.] Mother comes

(Yes, you are welcome.) [Writing difficult and said to encourage.]

with a love undimmed by years of [pause] so . . . [P. F. R.] silence and gives message of peace to her boy. Peace that cannot be taken away. [P. F. R., pause and sigh.] I want to grow [suspected word but did not read].

(What is that last word?)

grow strong in this method of communicating because it gives a better and clearer way of understanding of contact by [erased or tried to erase.] to you.

(I understand.)

but through all the years I have been in spiritual contact which has made it possible for me to guide you many times. I knew [read 'know' and hand pointed and read again 'know' questioningly.] knew the care you received and the many changes that came [read 'come,' hand pointed, read 'time'] in . . . came . . . early manhood before you were able to take up the work you most desired and the path was made. I have your [Pause and pencil started to fall when I replaced it. P. F. R., pause, and P. F. R.].

(Stick to it.) <sup>44</sup>

[Change of Control.]

[P. F. R.] W W W W [Indian.]

(Stick to it.)

W i ['i' not read.] W i l l i e.

(Go ahead. Finish that.)

W i l l i e want[s] to come so much. Do let me come.

(Yes, we shall.)

---

<sup>44</sup> This passage has no evidential incidents. It is only what one would expect, if the spiritistic theory be true.

Four or five years ago I paid a visit to a well-known medium in West Philadelphia, of whom I had been told by my good friend Mr. William N. Bricker, a prominent Methodist and a real estate dealer. In concluding the séance, in which some quite remarkable things were told, relating to my personal affairs, she exclaimed: "I see the name of your spiritual guide,—Mary,—written in letters of light, above your head." My mother's name was "Mary." This seemed to agree with the Chenoweth communications. The two psychics could have known nothing in a normal way about my relatives or personal life.—H. S. W.

you know me and want me do you not

(Mr. W.: Yes.) (Yes, indeed.)

and I want to say so much to you for I am all right quite all right. I am here [superposed and not read] with .. here ... all the help that can be given me. I wanted to live. it was so good to live but this is life too yes life. [Indian and clutching my hand a moment.] I am not unhappy but I am always looking for a chance to get to you. I don't care where it is [new pencil given] if I can only reach you. Did it seem a tragedy to have me go.

(What makes you think that possible?)

Because it was so unnecessary apparently. [P. F. R. twice and struggle to keep control.] Still here. So sudden. [P. F. R.]

(What was so sudden?)

Death and so dark but all light now. F a ... [P. F. R.] F a ther. [P. F. R.]

(Go ahead.)

[Pause.] F a t h e r. [Pause.] I love [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

y ... [P. F. R. twice, and struggle to keep control.] Shock to die as I did. Dear dear how I want to write all about it. I have so much to say.

(Yes, are you a relative of the friend present?)  
of course.

(What relation are you to him?)

Do you think I would come with her unless she were helping [helping] me to get to him.

(I understand, but you know that our evidence must be what is written on the paper.)

I lose sight of the side you speak of but I will try and keep [keep] it in mind.

(I understand. Go ahead.)

Don't be nervous.

(No, I shall not.)

D a ['a' superposed.] [Indian and pause.] W i l l i e. [Pause.] I suppose I ought to write about grandmother.

(All right.)

here in spirit. [Catalepsy seized hand and arm reached out to me, dropping the pencil, and I rubbed arm and held forehead, until normal trance was recovered.]

Want him [voice] [Pause and new pencil given.] <sup>45</sup>

<sup>45</sup> The name Willie was explained in Note 40. It comes again here with additional statement of much significance and the sitter writes of it:

J J a [N. R.] J a [N. R.] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

M [Pause.] J a m e s.

(You mean that for James?) [Same mistake as day before, and thought it such for 'John'] J a [P. F. R.] How can I write what I want to. I get so anxious.<sup>46</sup>

(Yes, I understand, and shall be patient. I think I know what you are trying to do, but, of course, I do not dare to speak it because it would spoil the evidence. Just keep at it and I shall not worry.)

Thank you and I will try hard to write what I wish. I have tried to come before at another place to him not to you.

(I understand.)

I have tried to have him hear me. J o h n John.

(I knew that was what you were trying to say.)

Yes it just slipped into the James [N. R.] the James but when I began to write about something else it came without any trouble.

(I understand. Can you tell what relation you are to the friend present?)

I ought to be able to write that if I know anything at all. My chief concern is to get here and free my mind about my going or rather my coming for I write as from a present location. I cannot but feel his regret and the regret of the others that I had to come but I begin to see something more than the accident of death in this for I am going on and they will find it out. I [?] so ... so ... s o n.

(All right.)

It is quite a game to cheat the operation of the activities of the brain.

(Yes it is. I understand.)

I think I am getting on don't you.

(Yes, first rate.)

I never felt any more active than at this moment and if I only had a body like yours instead of a borrowed brain I would sit down and talk to you and go on with my plans as if it were yesterday that all was well.

It is hard to see you missing me so much. D a [Probably for 'Do'] [Pause.] [Pencil tapped some moments.]

---

"The nature of my brother's life and the ideals that governed them were so sharply opposed that opposite impressions would naturally be produced on the expression of the face and on the spirit. His saying that he was 'not unhappy' seemed to me very significant, considering the facts of his life. What is reported as referring to 'tragedy' of his life fits the facts concerning his death."

<sup>46</sup> The names James and John were explained in Note 41, the one unrecognizable and the other that of the father and a brother.

father I miss you too for you always kept near to my plans. I left so much undone. That is what seems so hard to you as if all all were lost but no it is all with me just as if I had stayed. [Indian.]

New \* \* [Pause.] New place.

(I understand.)

[Groan and pause.] that's all. Do you know why I want to write New York.

(You tell if you can.)

Not because of your [so read] you—J. H. H. but for another reason. You had some correspondence with my father did you not.

(I do not understand that question, because I am younger than you, if I am certain who it is communicating, but I suppose you refer to your son here do you not?)

(Yes.)

(Your son says that your father, if you are the friend's father, died before this friend was born and so he could ...) [Writing began. I had asked sitter if he had corresponded with his grandfather.]

I did not mean that he communicated with my father but I was trying to say that you had corresponded with my son.

(Yes I have.)

I did not get the [read 'in'] father ... the ... in the right place ... right.

(All right.)

It is not so much a [Indian] tragedy as on ... You know Willie.

(Yes, the friend present knows a Willie and it would be good to give the relation and if possible the last name.)

and you also know John (Yes) and you know that I am the father who has been gone a little while over here and that I am with his sweet mother who preceded me to the land of souls. [Pencil thrown away and disgust shown in manner of thrashing hand about.]

[Pause.] Willie B. [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] B r ... cannot do it.

(Yes you can.)

[Pause.] Is H here you H. are you H.

(Mr. W.: Yes.) (Yes it is.)

and glad I am to have you here H.

(Yes and he is glad indeed to have you come.) <sup>47</sup>

<sup>47</sup> The sitter can make nothing out of the name attempted in "Da" ["Dad?"]. The name Willie has been explained and here the exact relationship of the John is indicated, that of the father. Nor can any meaning be attached to the name Henry. The H and He previously mentioned may have been an attempt to begin "Herbert"—"is H. here."



and I have kept a little quiet to let mother come. you know mother is here.

(Yes perfectly well.)

and she wanted to come so much and do you know A A [pause]  
A Al A A l [Pause and P. F. R.] I am not unreconciled to the passing over but would gladly have stayed if I could to have finished my work.

(Yes, when you can, tell what kind of work that was.)

H e H e n r y [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

knows me and my work.<sup>48</sup>

(Yes, that is no doubt true, but it is not evidence of your presence until you get it on this paper.) [I assumed communicator read sitter's mind.]

I ought to know evidence myself as well as you but you have always been a searcher.

(Yes, I understand.)

Psychic Researcher I mean (Yes.) quite long enough.

(Good.) [Hand threshed about and apparently reached toward sitter and I asked him to sit nearer. He did so.]

[Pause.] Religions grow and sects [N. R.] sects [read 'souls' and then 'seeds'] sects are formed and all kinds of people make use of all kinds of forms but for men like us there is only one religion. Revealed truth applied to life. [Cf. Note 41.]

(I understand.)

I am not as stupid as I may seem to be but wisdom often hides behind the mask of stupidity for purposes quite sufficient to warrant the play. Do you understand.

(In general I do, but I am not sure who says it.)

I say it W. you know W—

(You mean Willie.)

Yes, but my name is William.

(I understand.)

just the same. [P. F. R.] [Hand pounded paper.] [distress.]

Father, Mother, Willie, H— all here Henry Henry Henry Henry.<sup>49</sup>

Do you want me to write about books books books.

(If you can.)

No but I would meant that [two words not read] to be a test ...

<sup>48</sup> The initials and letters "A and AL" are not intelligible, nor is the Henry as just explained.

<sup>49</sup> The several names are intelligible from previous notes, except that of Henry, which may be a mistake for some one unrecognized.

meant that to be a test for we are all so interested in them all of us—  
You know what that means.

(Could you say now?)

Is he discouraged with me.

(No, if you could give the last name, it would clinch matters.)

my last name. (Yes.) you ask so much.

(It takes . . . .) [Writing began.]

J [pause] this is not for John. this time. J you know what that is for.

(He does not recall it.) [Sitter shook head, indicating he did not know another John. A second John was recognized the day before.]  
[P. F. R. Pause. Hand reached for mine.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh I see so many people all around here. [Pause.] Get away.  
[Hand acted as if to push some one away.] [Pause.] Makes me dizzy. They did not get through all they wanted. Can you give them another chance?

(Perhaps later.)

Do you know any one that begins with D. Sounds like Dora Doris, name something like that.

(Mr. W.: No, not recalled.)

I think it is like, you know Theodora.

(Mr. W.: No.)

I think it is a name with something before it. Dora the last of it, sounds like Theodora, Leonora. Ends like Nora Dora you know. Don't get it very well. I am so dizzy.<sup>50</sup> [Pause.] But I want to know if he is fond of Shakespeare.

(Mr. W.: Yes.)

I can see Shakespeare's country just like pictures of Shakespeare and characters all standing out about me. He is dramatic, but he likes Shakespeare's characters.<sup>51</sup> It is funny my being chosen to think out these things. People annoy him when they come in, supersensitive but don't want to be, but he is kind, nervous, high strung man. You know it.

(Yes.)

All right, just the same, high pitched. He has lots to do yet. He

<sup>50</sup> The names Leonora, Theodora, Nora and Dora have no significance to the sitter, so far as he can recall.

<sup>51</sup> Of the allusion to Shakespeare the sitter says: "The reference to Shakespeare has great significance to me personally. The tragedy of Macbeth has been a favorite object of study with me since my college days."

is not half through. He is something like you, with something to do, you know it.

(Yes.)

He knows it and feels it himself, he is awfully strongly individualized. He usually works alone, though he is associated with others. He has many acquaintances and friends, but he works alone. He shuts out others and must work alone. But he comes back and joins them, you know. [Pause.]

Yes. He isn't going to die. No, but his people died young comparatively speaking. It seems like that. [Pause.] I don't see his name.

(I wish you would.)

I don't. Why do you wish it. You are getting to be a regular old test hunter. What do you want names for, or how they die. It is not so important as to tell what they are doing now, what spirits are doing to serve the world. Don't forget that. Don't be a pump.

(All right.)

Now that makes you cross, don't it? (No.) Well, I got to go. I would like to stay and get more. When I am independent I get more. [Pause.] Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

[Sitter left room and Mrs. C. recovered normal consciousness in a few moments without saying more.]

### Chapter VII, Series III, Nov. 3, 4, 5, 1913

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mr. R. November 3rd, 1913. 10 A. M.

[*Normal.*]

Did you hear music?

(No.)

I wondered if there was an organ outside. There isn't is there?

(No.)

[We had been talking a few moments before about Emma Abbott, the singer,<sup>52</sup> and her alleged appearance at a recent circle which Mrs.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitter admitted and tied article placed on table. Contents unknown.] [Long pause.]

---

<sup>52</sup> My allusion to Emma Abbott is to the case already published (*Proceedings*, Vol. VII), the sittings for which had already been held prior to this time. Chenoweth attended.]

Light, that light I don't like. [Distress and pause.] I don't like that light in my eyes. [Pause and slight groans followed by distress and pause.]

Hm [Uttered like a groan.] There isn't half so much imagination in the world as people think, is there?

(No.)

When some one can't see or hear or feel but another sees, hears or feels, they almost universally shout imagination.

(Yes.)

It would be all right to shout back, fool, wouldn't it?

(Yes.)

[Distress.] Yes I know I am all right, but I feel as if I were dying. [Pause and groans, with distress in the face. Hand jerked twice.] To sleep and then to wake. [Pause and reached for pencil, which was given.] <sup>53</sup>

[*Automatic Writing.*]

\* \* [Alternate scrawls and pauses.] Mother gives greeting to you.

(Thank you. We greet you gladly.)

[Pencil fell and reinserted twice. Pause, Indian.]

I am at [read 'all' and hand paused till corrected.] last at last with [pause after 'w'] the [P. F. R. as hand was moved to left side of pad.] [Pause.] So weak.

(I understand. Have patience and you will soon have control. We shall not worry or hurry you.)

[Pause.] My boy my boy.

(Yes, he welcomes you heartily.)

I am happy [P. F. R., as hand was moved to left side of pad.] and my heart beats with joy [pause] today [P. F. R. as hand was moved to left side of pad, and sigh.] God is good to His children and does not leave them comfortless. I know enough to keep my heart in peace but at first I did not and wished [P. F. R.] to have things different. I have so much to say so much that interests me in your life and work. [Pencil twirled in hand a moment.] you are not always conscious of our [read 'often'] of our care but it is continuous. [P. F. R. and Indian.]

---

<sup>53</sup> Mrs. Chenoweth often has the experience of seeing a bright light as she goes into the trance. It occurs more frequently when her own guides or some of the Imperator group are present as she goes into the trance.

She has frequently alluded to dying as the trance comes on. Her oncoming trance has resemblances to sleep and it is probable that death has the same resemblance.

I do not know just where to begin but [sigh] am told to recall the past.

(Yes, that is right.)

if I can and so I will try.

(That is exactly what we want.)

[Pause.] I would like to speak of my [pause] own mother who also is here.

(That will be welcome.)

his grandmother. (Yes.) [Sigh.] and she has been here a long time too.

(I understand.)<sup>54</sup>

and I want to recall a ride taken by me a while before my death a ride in a carriage with a child [groan and struggle.] and I was not well at that time and I was ailing for some little time before I really gave up to the last sickness.

(I understand.)<sup>55a</sup>

[Pause.] Do you know anything about the white church on a corner of a street with a broad space open space in front and several houses and stores in a kind of s . . . [pause] Square. [Written in distress and with effort.] and a store [read 'stone'] store near with a sign on it with the name [pencil tapping] S [pause and tapping pencil.] [Indian.]

(Stick to it.)

S m a r t. [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

S [Pause and P. F. R. Pause again.] S l a \* \* [possibly 'a' or 'd'] \* \* [P. F. R.] [Long pause.]

It began with S. Do you know what I mean.<sup>55b</sup>

<sup>54</sup> The implication is that the communicator is evidently the sitter's mother, as indicated at the outset by the reference to her and greetings. But the fact is that his mother is still living. Later incidents indicate that the passage can have no meaning unless the communication is from the sitter's father. His mother, the sitter's grandmother, had long since been dead. The sitter's father had died a few years prior to this time.

<sup>55a</sup> Of the reference to the ride the sitter says: "I often went driving with my father when I was a child before his death and I remember that my father was not well at the time."

The allusion in the message to "*my death*" and the "*ride taken by me*" are indications that the experience was by the communicator, while the incident being true of the father would exclude the hypothesis that the communicator was a woman. The greetings sent at the outset would probably be by the grandmother through her son, the sitter's father. Also "Father" comes near the close of the message as a possible signature to it.

<sup>55b</sup> Of the incident about the church the sitter says: "It could possibly mean Trinity Church with S. S. Pierce's store on the corner. When the church was built it was very much whiter than it is now."

(Mr. R.: I don't know. If I knew what city it was in.)

Just a minute. I will try and get it. I feel some anxiety [anxiety] to get though [through] some good thing if I can. [P. F. R.]

(Yes, I understand.)

[Pause.] A small place some distance from here west of here. S . . .<sup>56</sup> [Groans and struggle to keep control. Indian, pause and hand jerked as if shocked by an electric current, paused and jerked in same way a second time. Pencil fell and picked up with point upward and hand tried to write, when I tried to change pencil, but hand clutched same and refused to let me. Hand showed catalepsy and I had to rub it. Finally hand yielded and I changed pencil, and when writing began it was very heavy.]

my my boy I love you and cannot keep calm.

(Let me help you keep calm if I can.)

[P. F. R. Indian and distress.] W [P. F. and new one inserted.] F a t h e r is not [P. F. R. twice and pause.]

(Stick to it.)

[P. F. and hand tried to put it between first and second fingers and I inserted it as desired, but hand could not write and I placed pencil in normal position. Indian, pause and pencil thrown violently away.]

[Change of Control.]

Too cool here. [I saw meaning and closed window at once, which had been raised and let in the autumn air.]

Lowers the temperature and we have to work too hard to keep [keep] it normal and so cannot help the communicator as we ought. It is better too warm than too cool.

(I understand perfectly. I had fears of just that thing when I felt the hand.)

The lady is most eager to give some direct evidential matter and she is very clear in her mind and firm in her purpose and has also a very great affection which will help her to get hold of some things associated with the life of her child. I will not stay as we are humoring [N. R.] humoring the desire to have each [read 'both'] spirit . . .

---

Trinity Church, Boston, was built by the sitter's father. It is situated on Copley Square, the possible meaning of the reference to a square.

No explanation can be assured of the name "Smart" or the uncompleted name "Sla. . ." If it refers to the S. S. Pierce store it is a bad distortion. The only thing to favor this is the limitation of the assurance about the name to the letter 's' which is two of the initials in the name of the owner of the store.

<sup>56</sup> No meaning can be assigned to the reference to "a small place west of here." Nor is the letter "S" intelligible in this connection unless it refers to the previously indicated S. The letter W is the initial of the supposed communicator's only brother William.

each . . . tell its own story. They may blunder and struggle but the very blunder and struggle helps [helps] you to understand the problem.  
(Yes, indeed.)

Is there not one whose name begins with I who had some association with her mother. I ask this because she makes that letter so many times. It is possible that it is the name of a place but it seems like a proper name of some sort. [Heavy dash drawn for period.]

(Please to ask her to give some of the other letters.)

[Pause.] yes [Pause.] a [Pause.] d [Pause.] I do not quite catch it but it [is] something like Indiana or Idaho. They do not sound alike and I hear no sound but see the letters somewhat jumbled.

(I understand.)

Perhaps she can write it for herself. [Pencil fell.] <sup>57</sup>

[Change of Control.]

[Distress and pause.] Some one is trying to help me but I desire to do it all myself if I can.

(Good. I understand.)

I seem to be a great deal stronger since I let go for a moment.  
(Yes.) Do you not think so.

(Yes, I do. I noticed it.)

All I desire is to prove to him that I am able to come and direct and guide and comfort him and right here I w [or 'co'] would say that I have been to him before and have helped him \* \* [scrawl and sheet changed.] many times and found happiness in it. His sensitiveness is my strength. [Indian.] I did not want to go as I suppose most people do not want to die but I was not afraid. It was only to stay and do more. [Struggle.]

(I understand.)

but when I found how intimately the two [Pause.] worlds are con-

---

<sup>57</sup> The communicator broke down and Jennie P. came in to relieve the situation and at least apparently implies, tho not asserting, that the communicator was a lady. There is no clear indication that a lady was the communicator. Jennie P.'s distinct implication is that the sitter is the communicator's child. But the sitter's mother is still living. His grandmother, as indicated by the communicator, is dead. She might well allude to him as her "child." It is possible that Jennie P. did not know that the father was communicating, and thought that the grandmother was. A similar occurrence took place a year or two prior to this when a communicator got into rapport with the psychic and proved his identity, when Jennie P. thought another person was communicating. The real communicator had no relation to the sitter, and Jennie P. thought it was the sitter's father, at the time, when, in fact, there was no trace of him and the real communicator distinctly proved his identity. Cf. Note 180.

The sitter cannot explain the reference to Indiana or Idaho. From the remark of the control, Jennie P., they may be mistakes and the real reference be to a person. The letter "I" is the initial of Isabel, the deceased daughter of the sitter.

nected I felt less [struggle] grief. I always was active and full of plans [Indian.] when in the body which he knew and I am quite as active now.

(Yes, I can believe it.)

H—— He knows H—— [P. F. R. Indian.] H a . . . . H a r . . . . H a r . . . . r . . . . Harry.

(Mr. R.: Yes.) (Yes, he knows Harry.)<sup>58</sup>

I have a plan for him which I have been trying to work out for his better work in life and he is trying to do so much. I will still help. It will soon be better. W hat what [Pause.] I know *her* [under-scored several times.]

(All right. Tell about her.)

Yes, I will. I mean one whom she loves alive with him.

(Go ahead.)

who is quite as sensitive as he is but more fearful nervous. you know what I mean.

(Yes, I know what you mean by fearfulness and nervousness, but I would be pleased to know definitely to whom you refer, who the living person is.)

[New pencil given.] S [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] S [Indian and P. F. R.] S I S [purposely not read] [Struggle to control. Pause and P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

\* \* [probably attempt at 'S I S,' but purposely not read.] \* \* [scrawls.] Did I not write it [written at bottom of next sheet.]

(Only three letters came and I am not sure enough of them to read them.)

sis [purposely not read though clear.] [Indian and pause.] E d [pause. P. F. R.]<sup>59</sup>

(Stick to it.)

[P. F. R. with pause between, and distress. Pencil thrown and hand pulled away from me and then reached for pencil. New one given, expecting Jennie P., but she did not come.]

<sup>58</sup> Harry is the name of the brother of the sitter's wife. Her father was very fond of this brother.

<sup>59</sup> In regard to the reference to "Sis," evidently intended for "Sister," the wife of the sitter says: "Mrs. R., my mother-in-law, was his sister. He always called her Sis or Sister. He had a friend Edward who is dead."

The communicator in this passage, including the material to which Note 58 refers, is not indicated. Allusions the next day suggest that it might have been the sitter's grandmother, not his mother. Cf. Note 65.



[Change of Control.]

Father [P. F. R.] too.

(All right.)

So hard to do just what I want to do.

(Yes, I understand. Take your time.)

[Pause.] Do you know Edith.

(Mr. R.: Yes.)

and is there not a Frank who is over here on this side.

(Mr. R.: Yes.)

and there are 3 little boys who stand around as this work proceeds [proceeds]. They were very small when they came here and are pretty [pretty] well grown now, all in one family—close to you [sigh] more like uncles than brothers but very little [Groan and distress.] It [?] [Pause.] just a little. we thought the mother [mother?] would return but she has no more energy now. She has made a good start. She has a lady with her mother whom he would be glad to hear from and do you know some one here by the name of George not Ge.P.

(Mr. R.: Yes.)

but another George who is eagerly wanting to come.<sup>60</sup> There is a large group of friends and they are all most interested in him and in his psychic receptivity [N. R.] receptivity.

You may not know about that but we do. He is so impressional always easy to guide from this side. not a weakling by any means but seeing the light quickly.

(I understand.)

The mother must have been here a little time to have so good an understanding of the work. Did she pass away in the Winter [N. R.] Winter.

(Mr. R.: I am not sure.)

I see [see] ice and snow and every evidence of cold weather and apparently it is to mark the time of her passing.<sup>61</sup>

(We shall inquire.)

It seems like a small town or if a large one it is on the outskirts of it. more tomorrow. [Pencil fell.]

(All right.)

---

<sup>60</sup> Frank is the name of a Great Uncle of the sitter. He is dead. Edith is a living cousin of the sitter. His grandmother lost several children in infancy. They would have been Uncles. This explains the reference to "3 little boys who stand around as this work proceeds." George is the name of the son-in-law of the sitter's father who was very devoted to him. He died about ten years ago.

<sup>61</sup> The reference to "the mother" would imply that the sitter's mother is dead. This is not true. She is still living. His grandmother, to whom this reference might be, died in the South in the summer time, not in the winter.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Distress and Indian. Hand reached for mine and pause. Indian and long pause again.]

Oh, do you want me to tell what I see?

(Yes.)

I see a funny bridge. [Pause.] It is divided in the middle. [Pause.] Hm. [Pause.] It seems to go right up straight and I see the bridge go up in the middle and was much as though it was that way. [Hand moving.]

(I am not sure just what you mean.)

Well, it looks as though it rounded up in the middle. It comes up straight again like a projection [pause] between. (Projection?) partition between it. Is that what you call it?

(Partition.)

It is the funniest thing. It is over the river and on the other side of the river are mountains, quite high. It is no place I know, no place at all that I know. I suppose that bridge is an arch, don't you?

(Probably.)

I supposed they made them flat. [Pause.] There is something else I wanted to tell you. This is foreign, not like America. [Pause.] Hm. [Long pause.]<sup>62</sup>

I keep seeing C-h-a-r-l-e-s [Spelled out.] great big letters. It don't belong to you I think. I think it belongs to your friend.

(I shall inquire.)<sup>63</sup>

Yes. [Pause.] Goodbye. I begin to see so many things I have to go. [Sitter left room.]

Have you got me something you want me to take?

(Hold that a minute.) [Gave sealed package to hold.]

[Pause.] I feel awful funny and sick. It is more like a man than a woman. Do you know anything about that I can't get anything. Nothing came I suppose.

(Yes, it did.)

Do you know anything about his father?

(No.)

Whether he is in spirit or not?

<sup>62</sup> Just after their marriage, the sitter and his wife spent a summer at Mountain Station, N. Y., where there was such a bridge in an artificial Japanese garden. The reference to a "partition" is not understood. The country was hilly, not mountainous. If the pictographic process be involved in this direct method of communicating it might well account for the distortion of hills in it to mountains. Cf. *Proceedings* Eng. S. P. R., Vol. XVI, p. 492, and Am. S. P. R., Vol. VI, pp 619, 671-672.

<sup>63</sup> Charles is the name of an Uncle of the sitter's wife. He is dead and the sitter's father knew him as a child.

(No.)

Goodbye. Tell him not to be discouraged. [Pause and opened eyes only to close them again, rub face and awaken.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mr. R. November 4th, 1913. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitter admitted and article placed on table, sealed in box.] [Pause, sigh, pause, groan and pause again.]

I see a letter as big as the whole side of a house.

(What is it?)

J It looks just like that [drawing letter with finger on pad.] It isn't written, but it is this way. [Printing it.] Do you know any one that speaks French that would be anxious to come here.

(Mr. R.: Yes.)

Well, this is J and it is like an apostrophe and a—i [spelled] It is a French thing.

(Get more if you can.)

[Pause.] I'll try. [Pause.] There is something between [distress] like l-e and then another space e-s-t. [Pause.] I can't see it very clearly. c-e-s-t [c'est] Does that mean something?

(Yes.)

[Pause.] Wait a minute. [Pause.] b (P?) No b [Pause.] b-e-i-n [bien]

(Bien?)

Eh. [Pause.] I can't get any more I think. [Pause.] Hm. [Pause.] p-a-s

(P-a-s?)

Yes. I seem to want to begin a new . . . . I cannot get any further than R-o-c-h-e with an accent over it, the e. Does that mean anything at all?

(Mr. R.: I think so.)

Well, this does not seem to be an old person talking. It's . . . [Pause.] d-e-l-a R-o-c-h-e, and then I see P-a-p-a written [Pause.] P-a-p-a as if it were the word Papa. Not the same word separated, but all one word, entirely different from the other, separate you know. I got to go.<sup>64</sup>

(All right.)

<sup>64</sup> The attempt to speak French is explained as follows: "The sitter's grandfather was a Frenchman and *his* father could not speak a word of English. His name was Jean Jacques Labuisse." Possibly the J looking "big as the whole side of a

[Pause.] There is another who ... I didn't see this young man yesterday did I? Over here.

(Who?)

The spirit young man.

(I believe not.)

He is helping. He belongs to her.

(Who is 'her'?) [Pause.] You know. (No.)

You don't know the lady?

(No.)

[Long pause.] Take me away. Take my spirit away. [Pause and reached for pencil.]

*[Automatic Writing.]*

I come to tell all I can to you about the life we live and its relation to you and to [long pause.] also give you the comfort which you need. I [struggle] am often puzzled about the best way to make my influence of use [sigh and Indian.] but never puzzled about there [so read and erased.] the influence itself. I have not been here as long as your \* \* [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

mother so you will understand I am not she. She came yesterday. I come today.

(Yes.)

You wish to know at once so many things that it takes time for me to get hold of. I am like a foreigner in a strange city and do not know which door to open to find what I want but I have the will to get to you and that helps so much. At first I was so surprised to find myself here but I am getting acclimated now. Does that sound strange.

(No, I understand that.)

It is exactly correct. It is not a question of conversion or becoming spiritualized but a matter of breathing the air at a different altitude.

(I understand.)

Some people cannot say [so read but evidently intended for 'sing'] sing in rare [N. R.] rarified air. The analogy is complete. I leave you to fill in the rest.

(All right.)

I am so glad to be here and my head [so read, but suspected 'heart'] my head is better. I was so glad to find it just as I did over here.

house" refers to him. But the quick termination of it in "ai" when repeated suggests that it is an attempt to say "J'ai."

The name Roche is very like another name on the French side of the sitter's family.

[Pause.] I have so often tried to come to you. It is not to you the one reading to whom I come but the other.

(I understand. Go ahead and talk as if you were talking to him.)

Yes I will try. It was rather sudden yes rather sudden but not without some expectation [P. F. R.] Do you think I can ever make my record clear.

(If you can tell just who you are it will be a clear thing.)

[Pause.] yes that does seem important. B [pause] B [Long pause.] B r ['r' clear but very small. Purposely not read.] [Hand then wrote in air.] your b [pause] \* \* [evident attempt to write 'r'] [Long pause.] I [P. F. R. and Indian.] am your \* \* [lines like 'v,' but possible attempt at 'b,' as it is often made like 'b.']] m [P. F. R.] wait a little two of us here and each thoughts [written 'thought' first and so read when 's' was added.] are each one's thoughts are struggling for expression and it makes confusion.

(I understand.)

It is not mother but two others who love him as much as she—  
[Heavy dash.]<sup>65</sup>

(I understand.)

Yes of course and it is because we love so much we are anxious  
[Indian.] dear yes [P. F. R.] father and [pause] W [pause] W  
[P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

Why do you say that.

(Because I usually find that, if you have patience and persistence, you finally get it.)

[Pause.] and you know that W is most anxious to come to you.

(Mr. R.: Yes.)

*your W your W* — [heavy dash probably intended for underscoring.]

(Mr. R.: Yes, I know who W is.)

[Pause.] W i . [Pause.] W i l l [P. F. R. twice and Indian.]  
[Hand clutching in manner of Jennie P.]<sup>66</sup>

[Change of Control.]

[Three pencils rejected.] Excuse me but I feel I must help this a

<sup>65</sup> The statement that the mother came the day before is not true. She is living. But an allusion in the passage commented on in Note 54 would make it his grandmother, mother of the sitter's father.

<sup>66</sup> Whoever it is succeeds better this time in making clear to whom the "W" refers. The communicator first refers to "Br. . .," evidently intended for brother and then gets the name "Will," which is the name of the sitter's Uncle William, deceased, and the only brother of the sitter's father.

little for sometimes a little help will adjust the whole matter and make the work come [N. R.] clearer and have [N. R.] ... come ... have ... some significance [Indian.] You see I am of some use after all besides using up your materials. There are really 3 spirits here who are each trying to make it plain who they are. One is a fair [N.R.] fair haired woman who is very lovely indeed and who has been over here for some time. She seems more like a young sister. Do you know if the friend has a young sister over here.<sup>67</sup>

(No.)

This woman has passed the greater part of her existence over here has been here years and is standing [N. R.] close ... standing [N. R.] close ... standing by the side of this woman whom I take to be his mother by the attitude she assumes and then there is a man who has been trying to write and who is very close [N. R.] close to the group [read 'youth'] group and also to the friend. He went away suddenly to the spirit. Is not old and certainly seems as if he ought [delay in reading and pencil tapped.] to have lived longer. Is there one like that who should would [N. R. and pencil tapped.] would be seeking [seeking] to come to him.

(I suppose there might be a dozen or more.)

a boy \* \* ['I' ?] you are getting [getting] funny [N. R.] funny.

(No I am not, I merely want you to understand that it is evidence ....) [Writing began.]

Do you think I am dead. My goodness after ... My goodness after all this training with you I don't have to be told ... I don't ... evidence but if I see a man struggling in the water I don't hold him by the throat and demand his relationship. You do.

(I understand.)

I only want to know if there is such a man due [N. R.] to ... due to sail on this steamer for he is making a desperate attempt to get on board. He laughs well [read 'to all,' then 'will'] well [N. R.] well when he hears you read my dissertation. he has a sense sense of fun and while it is rather serious business [read 'because' and pencil tapped till corrected.] being held up by a scientific highwayman [N. R.] highway man he still sees the humorous side of it. He has a sense of the real need [N. R.] need of evidence but don't hurry the poor thing. It is new to him in a way but still he knows something about the demands demands demands [read for first time]. I was afraid you were trying

---

<sup>67</sup> The "fair haired woman," said to be "a younger sister of the friend," the sitter, would apply to his sister who died at childbirth. She would be 38 years of age if she had lived. The sitter did not recognize her and well he might not from the allusion to "a fair haired woman." The boy is not recognizable.

to work off some of your old short pencils on me. [Evidently caused by pause in reading 'demands' and thinking I was after a new pencil.] <sup>68</sup>

Well to return to the young gentleman. He is getting a little rest while I hold the fort. You may think it a fine task ... fine ... for a lady but it is all in the glorious cause [N. R.] cause. If it were all left to the serious minded [both words not read] serious minded men who attend you it would seem like a feast of judges and I have no appetite for that sort of a party— [Pause.]

There must have been great sorrow over the passing of this spirit as I see son [N. R.] much [read 'more'] so much to indicate [delay in reading] indicate can't [read 'and'] hold ... can't ... up a steamship line [N. R.] for you ... line for you to read a word ... to indicate that there was disappointment and broken hopes and plans when this man came here and the mother [N. R.] of ... mother of your friend has him him.

(You will have to clear up that reference to the mother.)

Yes why don't you fire a shot and done with it. The lady who wrote yesterday will clear up her own misstatements. I am not a clearing house [N. R.] clearing house for all the spirits. I am interested in the man as you know and I took the lady's statement just as you did. If she doesn't know whose mother she is how do you expect me to know. This is not so much fun as it seems but is real earnest [N. R.] earnest [read] If... E A R N E S T [printed.] [Not read.] Stupid.

(Yes until you write better.)

yes earnest for if a spirit writes mother I think she knows what she is about. Fight it out with her. I return to the boy. He is still here still laughing and still beside the pseudo mother.

(All right.)

It is with a sense of joy that he is making effort to recall all he can of the past and to tell [read 'that'] tell his friends who are left that he is not [N. R.] not far away. He has the greatest desire to reach [N. R.] reach a group which is represented by this friend and to that group he has frequently tried to come since his de... since ... death. He is very bright very independent [delay in reading.] independent with all [N. R.] withal [N. R.] very lovable ... withal very lovable

---

<sup>68</sup> Jennie P. here, as often, takes me to task for insisting on specific evidence. Her method has always been to let the communicator alone and to expect specific incidents to drop into the midst of general ones. But I have found it a most unsatisfactory method, as the communicator too often rambles along and does not get the specific incident necessary to clinch any general message. It has been the fundamental weakness of her method.

Jennie P. dislikes short pencils and will often throw them away at the slightest provocation.

and he has the merriest smile you ever saw— I think I shall have to give him a chance at the pencil but don't question him too hard. He will get [N. R.] get at the point. It is his over [read 'very'] anxiety ... over [read 'ever'] O ... [read] yes I shall draw pictures for your next. You might get those more readily than my writing.

(I understand.)

I can beat H—— [Hodgson?] any way.

(All right.)

[Indian.] Don't leave just yet but let him have another trial. Oh just here the lady— the pseudo mother announces that she was trying to say something about the young man's mother who is still in your world. Do you know anything about that.

(Mr. R.: Yes.)

and it was because of his great [N. R.] great love for her and his eagerness to reach her that the mention was first made. She must be a relative of the boy's mother who is taking care of him or perhaps a relative of his father's ... his — [not read first time.] Anyway she is here and a good and helpful spirit whether pseudo or not.<sup>69</sup>

You see how wise I am getting. I hate to think of your records being burdened [ran off pad and N. R.] burdened with all this sort of stuff but the archives will hold the remarkable \* \* if you have money enough to hire [N. R.] hire a vault of sufficient proportions. Adieu fond Hurricane ... fond not friend [read 'friend' first time. Pencil fell.]

[Change of Control.]

D [pause] are [Possibly intended for 'Dear' but written clearly 'Dare'] [Pause.] F a t h e r Father I come I come I come.

(Yes, you are welcome. You mean you are the father of the friend present?)

<sup>69</sup> Readers will remark that Jennie P. resents my demand for clearness in regard to the "mother." I knew it was wrong, the sitter's mother being still alive, but I did not wish to say so. Her answer would imply that she has no more ability to determine the relationship of the "mother" than I could, though the situation quickly prompts her to call the "mother" a "pseudo-mother," evidently from my desire to have it clear. It is quite natural for the living to expect that a spirit in the position of Jennie P. would be able to know who was communicating and much better able to ascertain than we, the living, but Jennie P. implies that it is otherwise, though she has herself often shown herself cognizant of relationships or able more or less easily to get them. There are things that confirm and some that contradict her apparent claim here.

The "pseudo-mother" is evidently the grandmother, and it comes out spontaneously a little later that the sitter's mother is still living, which is correct, as we have seen, and it is explained that the intention was to say something about this living mother. She was the Catherine of earlier sittings. This cleared the case up, though it probably would not have been so but for my interference with Jennie P.



n . . . [pause] no.

(All right. You stick to it and you will get it clear.)

No no I am not the father [read 'better'] father [read 'bother']  
Father. I am not the Father.

(All right. Go ahead.)

but son [Pause.] \* \* [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

of Father and he and I are t rying to come together.

(I understand.)

and we have so much to say to you dear [pause] br . . . [hand  
relaxed pencil.] B B r . . . B r . . . Why can I not write that word.

(I have not yet learned all the difficulties and while I think I know  
what . . .) [Writing went on.]

Brother [Superposed and purposely not read.]

(That word was superposed on another.)

Brother.

(I thought that was what you were at.) (Mr. R.: I don't know  
that.)

Mother does your mother does.

(Mr. R.: Yes, I think I see.)

So hard dear dear boy for me. You want to hear from Father.

(We want, both of us, to hear from any one who can best give  
evidence and it makes no special difference to us, if only we get good  
evidence.)

D [P. F. R. twice and pause between. P. F. R. again and hand  
seized mine a moment.] \* \* [scrawls.] M . . . [P. F. R. twice and  
pause between.] W i l l i a m William [Pause.] comes here  
to report. [Pencil fell, pause and hand reached for mine.] <sup>70</sup>

[*Subliminal.*]

E—d [spelled] [Long pause.]

('E-d'?)

[Pause and sigh.] Something is wrong. [Pause.] Hm. [Pause.]

Do you know anything about Cambridge?

(What do you mean?) [Cambridge, Mass. well known to psychic.]

I don't know. [Pause.] I see. I feel so sick. I seem to be flying  
over Cambridge. Oh I don't want to light down there. [Pause.]  
Have you got any one in Cambridge you want to see? Please don't

<sup>70</sup> There is much confusion in this communication. It is evidently the brother of the sitter's father, though in the confusion he appears at first to be the father and then a son of the father, making him a brother of the sitter. But the name indicates that it is the deceased brother of the sitter's father. The "M" is possibly a mistake for "W." The D. was not explained by the sitter.

put me down there. [Pause and distress.] Oh I . . . . [Hand pulled arm of dress, distress shown and then face relaxed.] coming home. [Pause.] Lovely. [Smile on face.] It wasn't our Cambridge, was it? (Wasn't it?)

No I don't think so.

(Who did that?) [Thinking of Professor Sidgwick.]

Did what? (Tried to make that picture.) I don't know, Dr. Hyslop. I kept thinking it was our Cambridge, but when I came away \* \* [a few words lost.]

(What is it like?)

Low hills all around. It is so pretty, and water. I think I came across some water as if flying. It was water as I came across. I could see the city half on a hill just as I was coming away.<sup>71</sup> Oh I feel so sick. What kind of experiment do you think they are trying, do you know?

(I think I do.)

Oh I suppose I got to get used to it. Tell them not to fool so much about it tomorrow. (All right.) I don't like it. Perhaps it is none of my business. Is that it? (Eh-heh.) You are a lovely conversationalist. [Pause.] I could tell you a lot of things, only it is so long to answer me I don't feel like it. Goodbye. (Goodbye.) [Sitter left and Mrs. C. awakened in a few moments.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mrs. R. November 5th, 1913. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitter admitted and article placed on table as before.] [Long pause, sigh and pause and Indian. Cough, pause, slight groan and pause.]

So \* \* [heard as 'tight' and so spoken, but it may have been intended for 'tired']

(So tight or so tired?)

[No reply. Pause and twitching of face.]

Oh isn't that lovely. [Pause.] How beautiful the world is, isn't it?

<sup>71</sup> The name "Ed" might have a double significance. It is the name of the sitter's partner who died four years ago, and it is also the name of a friend of the sitter's father, and also dead. The name was referred to before. Cf. Note 59.

The reference to Cambridge has never found any explanation. It was the old home of Mrs. Chenoweth, but final indication that another Cambridge was meant and that some experiment was connected with it rather implies it was Cambridge, England, as reference is made to coming across the water. But this could apply to Cambridge, Mass.; and besides Cambridge, England, is not situated on a hill or surrounded by "low hills."

(Yes.)

[Pause.] Always we call it more beautiful by association.

[Pause.] Do you see all these people? Don't you wish you could?

(Yes.)

Hm. [Pause.] You don't think I am imagining it, do you?

(No.)

Better not. [Pause.] Frank, Harry, and Charles.<sup>72</sup>

(All right.)

[Pause.] Hm. [Pause. Shuddered and reached for pencil. Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

So you have come.

(Yes, go ahead.)

and you wonder what will come to you. I have so much to say if I can only get hold and perhaps the conditions will be better to work with you here. [P. F. R. Pause.] I am glad glad glad to have you.

(I understand.)

Do you really understand.

(I think I can see exactly why you write what you do and so would ask you to keep at it until it is clear why you say you are glad that this sitter is present.)

My chances of communication are better now than yesterday. I can draw better someway and hope I can tell some things I failed to tell before. I tried so hard to spea . . . no to write about her yesterday but I think I am not a first rate communicator. My heart overcomes my head and I lose the hold [Indian.] I am happy yes although I would have been glad to have stayed with you longer. I mean glad to have lived longer. Do you not know what I mean.

(Mrs. R.: Yes, I do.)

It is not when we say we are ready that we take the journey into the unknown I fear we would never leave the home life and love and joy to seek the life all strange and new if we had a choice but I had no choice. I had to go and it is all so wonderfully real and connected that I am overwhelmed to think I knew so little about going—

I have so many friends who are quite active in this work. I mean this scientific Research work and I am glad to be a part of it even in a small degree. I expected yes I did expect to return.

(Did you know anything about this research work . . . ?) [Writing began.]

<sup>72</sup> Frank is the name of the Great Uncle to the sitter of the day before, husband of Mrs. R., who is the present sitter. Charles is Mrs. R.'s Uncle, and Harry is the name of H. H. R.'s father, who died when H. H. R. was fifteen years old.

Yes a little [pause] more than I know now. We make plans and have the hypothesis all ready to fit the evidence and then well then you know what happens [Indian.] Some one comes along and upsets the whole theory. You will know what I mean by this.

(Yes I do, and can you tell about when and for whom you learned about this work before your passing?)

Yes I rember [remember] and one whom I knew in this work is here. I mean here in spirit and some are left whom I know in [read 'and'] this ... in this. [Indian.] C C C C. [Pause.]

(Stick to it.)

C h C a [Purposely not read each time: probably intended for *Charles*] You ought to know what you asked me.

(Mrs. R.: Yes, I think I know.)

J (What ... [Writing began.] J a s [probably not intended for 's,' but this is form of letter.] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] yes. I not only read [read in present tense] red ['read' and so read as past tense] yes I not only read but I had some experiments of my own. [Indian.] I knew I would return.<sup>73</sup>

Do you know anything about some letters and some books on this subject the books having some marks [superposed and not read] and annotations [N. R.] ... marks an ... [read] yes soft [read 'left' doubtfully] covered [read 'several'] books.

(Does ....) [Writing continued.]

no you read wrong. soft covered boks [books] [Sitter shook head.]

(No, they are not recognized, so you had better try to make clear by something else just who you are. We do not yet know.)

[Indian and pause.] Why do you not know. Who would come to her but me.

(A great many people might come and we require the evidence on paper here in order to know.)

My little [P. F. R. twice and pause between.] Mother.

(Mother of the person present?)

Mother of the person present. no indeed I am no mother and never could be unless you believe in re-incarnation. for I am of another sex.

(Good, go ahead.)

<sup>73</sup> The "Ch" and "Ca" are probably for the Charles alluded to above, and J would point to the name of the sitter's father, which was John, not James. As I was doubtful about the interpretation of what I took for "Jas," it might have been "Jno." He was the brother of the Charles just mentioned. He had an experience in psychic phenomena, which fact would explain an allusion in the communication.

It takes a woman to be a mother and I am a man and I thought you knew it all the time. I always lose sight of the fact that you are as blind as a bat and deaf as a post and yet you try to talk with us.

(I understand, and it . . .) [Writing went on.]

I am a man I repeat and she is one of my family left to [Indian and long pause.] see what I can do. I was not so old that . . . not so old that my death might have been expected but still I am no youngster [read 'younger'] youngster [heavy writing]. You ought to know that. I did work enough to take care of my family. I speak of my family as if you knew all about it. I [pause] it is all I I I I. it sounds so as you read it.

Mother is a word I wish to write but it does not belong to her but to one who is here. [Pencil changed and Indian.]

(Go ahead.)

S S S. You know S [pause] S o [pause] S o u S u S u s S u s [Not read in any case purposely.] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

S i S i s t e r. [Pause.] My mine [read 'mind'] do you know . . . mine . . . \* \* [scrawls.] and how glad glad I am and how I want to do something I left undone yes undone. you do not know how sudden it was do you.

[With the word 'My' began heavier writing and it became so like Jennie P's style that she was evidently helping, until I made the following statement.]

(I personally do not know but I imagine that the friend present does know, but all needs to be told on paper in order to make us sure.)<sup>74</sup>

School \* \* [scrawl.] m . . . me to it. I will do it yet.

(All right. Take your time.)

Do you know anything about my father here.

(Mrs. R.: Yes.)

my father here.

(Yes, she knows.) [Sitter had not spoken loudly enough.]

with me I mean. (I understand.) J you know J J a friend

J ack Jackson yes Jackson.

(Mrs. R.: I think so.)

and do you know about music my love for it.

(Mrs. R.: Yes.)

---

<sup>74</sup> There is evidence that the communicator was the sitter's father. His name was John, as indicated above. His mother was on the other side. The "Sus" possibly refers to Suzanne, the daughter of the sitter, and "Sister" may refer to the daughter who died so suddenly, as intimated here. But the "My mine" would contradict this interpretation, and as reference was made before to "Sis," (Cf. Note 59) it may be the sister of the sitter's father.

Especially singing singing and the good times we have had [Indian.] yes we have had some good times even if they were cut off too soon. you [N. R.] know... you know. [P. F. R. Pause.]

The bed was my own. [P. F. R. twice.] I cannot do anything. I seem to get so bewildered the fever [N. R.] gets ... fever [N. R.] fever gets into my head. (You mean the memory of the fever.) you know the bewilderment [N. R.] bewilderment of the last days.

(I understand.)

She ought to also. Do you know what I mean.

(She does not recall the fever, but knows ....) [Writing began.] <sup>75</sup>

Yes the feverish and uncertain state and do you know how hot I was and the clothing on the bed was almost too heavy. I mean even the weight of the sheet was oppressive not so much from heat as weakness but my head [head] was in a tumult and froze. don't forget that but I was conscious to the last that is practically conscious. you know only [N. R.] only a few ... only a few hours at the last when [read 'when' and 'where'] I cared little ... I ... when ... cared little what came [N. R.] came. at first I fought to live li ... [delay in reading first time.] then I *knew* [underscored.] it was \* \* [scrawl.] [New pencil needed and in effort to give one, hand clutched the worn one and would not permit the change for some seconds. Evidently it disturbed the control.]

no is. Oh dear if I could only write more. The service at the end was beautiful. Do you know anything about violets.

(Mrs. R.: I know something about violets.)

I know you were all glad for me when I was through with the pain but it all came on [N. R.] all came on so suddenly we were none of us prepared for it but I want to tell you dear that it is all true true and lovely. [Indian and pencil fell. Pause and reached for pencil again.]

who smoked too much. [Pencil fell and hand reached for mine.]

(You tell.) <sup>76</sup>

[Sitter shook head.] [No reply.] [Long pause.]

<sup>75</sup> Jackson is the name of a friend of Mr. H. H. R., but not enough is known about him to say whether he loved music or not, or whether he died from fever or not. [The sitter's "father" claims the love of music, and the fever.—G. O. T.]

<sup>76</sup> The incidents about the death are not clear enough to identify any one, because two persons are associated in the record, the sitter's father, who either had been or was referred to as a communicator, and her husband's father, the husband having been the sitter on the two previous days. The submission indicated in the message would apply to the latter. The father of Mr. R., the sitter of the two days previous, smoked all the time and used to say that he smoked too much. There is no recognizable meaning in the reference to violets. But he had a granddaughter living called Violet.

[*Subliminal.*]

Do you know any one named Grace?

(Mrs. R.: Yes.)

Is it any one the spirit knows?

(Mrs. R.: No.)

[Pause.] St. James.

(Well.) [Mrs. C. in normal state calls me "St. James" to her intimate friends in her humourous moods.]

[Long pause.] I got to go. [Pause.] Do you know the man with blue eyes yes and brown hair and rather fair skin, not very dark, not very light. He is a square shouldered man in the spirit. He is a very happy man, happy, pleasant, and strong and all that.

(Not recalled.) [Sitter shook head.]

Well, I should think he was about 35 or 40 years old, standing beside a group of people that come here. Goodbye.<sup>77</sup>

(Goodbye.)

[Pause.] Do you know if her father is in the spirit land?

(Mrs. R.: Yes.)

I heard him say: Tell my little girl I came to see her, just like that and it is a man's voice. Does she remember a violet?

(Mrs. R.: Yes.)

He is kind of a serious man about serious things you know Doctor. No matter what she had to tell him, he talked it out more like a woman. He is just nice: Tell my little girl I came to see her. His hair is kind of thin on the top of his head. Ask her.

(Mrs. R.: Yes.)

He puts his hand up to his head quick. He must have travelled much, ask her.

(Mrs. R.: Yes, he travelled quite a lot.)

He holds up in front of me a great big wreath of green ... [Pause.] I see a black ... Oh, it is like a black broadcloth casket, something awful black and I get the funeral. I wonder if she knows the kind of casket he had.

(Mrs. R.: Black.)

Was it broadcloth?

(Mrs. R.: I don't remember.)

Oh, I see he is so pale and thin. He is changed so much. He holds up a big green wreath. It wasn't by the family. Somebody outside the family sent it. It is standing up and is not on the casket, but standing

<sup>77</sup> The name Grace has no recognizable meaning to the sitter. The man described is recognized as the George referred to earlier, son-in-law of the sitter's father-in-law.

up by the side. It is mostly green. I got to go. Did he know anything about Boston?

(Mrs. R.: Yes.)

Well, I see something just like a group of marble public buildings. He is looking with content at the Harvard Medical Buildings. Yes I see the Library. What does he know about Boston. I see night settling down. I think he went away towards night. Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

Has he been trying to communicate?

Well he did. You didn't know it. He did try.

(Did he?)

Yes and the spirit that wanted to come most was with him. [Long pause.] [Hand fell forward on package, picked it up and placed it on breast.] That's mine.

(Who said that?)

[Pause.] I hate a hospital. [Pause and began to rub face. Sitter left. Pause and awakened.] <sup>78</sup>

#### Chapter VIII, Series IV, Nov. 10, 11, 12, 1913

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mrs. R. November 10th, 1913. 10 A. M.

Before sitting Mrs. C. mentioned A. R. Wallace, who recently died, and said she would give me the article in the *Transcript* which she had read, feeling that he might be reported here as communicating and she wished me to know what she had read about him, and said that she had never read any of his books.

<sup>78</sup> The allusion to "a violet" may again be to Violet, the name of the granddaughter, but coming in the subliminal I supposed it referred to the flower and wrote it "violet." Of the remainder of the passage the sitter writes:

"The wreath is the only floral decoration I remember at my father's death. It was green with red roses and was sent by the New Orleans Cotton Exchange. He was president of the Exchange at his death. My father went to Harvard College and loved Boston.

"I think he did try to communicate at the previous sittings, but the personality of Mr. R.'s father (Mr. R., husband of present sitter, being the sitter the two previous days) was too strong."

The evidence quoted for this belief is good and is a part of this message through the subliminal.

"Has he been trying to communicate? Well, he did. You didn't know it. He did try.

"(Did he?)

"Yes, and the spirit that wanted to come most was with him."

This statement explains much confusion in the record where it has been so difficult to decipher who was communicating.

The allusion to "hating a hospital" has no meaning unless it refers to the fact that the sitter lost a child that was born in a hospital and died in twenty minutes.



[*Subliminal.*]

[Cough and long pause. Recovered normal state and told me above about Wallace.]

I'm going. [Pause and sitter admitted, and article put on table, sealed.] [Long pause and sigh. Hand twitched, pause, Indian, long pause and pencil given, followed by another long pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

E [P. F. R. twice and pause with Indian gibberish.] My daughter [P. F. R.] <sup>79</sup>

(Stick to it.) [Difficulty in keeping control.]

I come with my [Pause and P. F. R. Statement re-read.] earnest desire to help you in your grief and to give a message of comfort and peace to you. [P. F. R. Indian.] Child child

(Yes, keep on.)

child [Struggle to keep control.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] here with us.

(Yes, tell . . . .) [Writing went on.]

and child will [P. F. R. and struggle.] \* \* [read 'be' at time, but could be read 'No be' or 'Not.' 'be' are first two letters in her name.] [P. F. R. and Indian whispered, with distress apparent in face.]

[*Change of Control.*]

\* \* \* \* \* [scrawls like capital 'O' and 'l,' 't,' or 'e,' which might imply attempt to give name.] I [I put finger in palm of hand to help supply energy.]

Mother

(Good, I understand. Stick to it.)

Mother (Yes, mother is present.) I want you always always. (Yes.) always.

(Yes, we know that and shall be most happy to have you speak or write for her all you can.)

I am here with the dear ones who try to help me but I am so excited I do not get much help. I think I can do what I want to do any way for I am more in your life than in this one for I am more interested in what you do than in anything else.

(Good.)

I am coming you know what that means. You kept saying that to me I am coming to see you [new pencil given and struggle to keep con-

<sup>79</sup> Note missing. But see Notes 83 and 86.

trol.] coming to see you. [Struggle.] Yes you did say it for me to be sure and be here today.

(Mrs. R.: I thought it.)

and I was just as anxious to get the word back as you were to have me get it.

(Yes, she . . . .) [Writing continued.]

Sunbeam I know her and she has helped me in a different way. the group I refer to R. H. and W. J. and G. P. and the Whirlwind they have all [read 'the' doubtfully] helped . . . all . . . but it was in a different way.<sup>80</sup> O it is so good to be trying again and I do not want to bring any disappointment or sorrow only the joy of the truth that is so dimly [read 'clearly'] understood . . . dimly . . . by the dark minded ones. I am working to get the power still more clearly expressed between us when we are away from here.

(Good.)

Mother did you know a lady with curls who was named Nellie. I have heard her speak of you so many times. She is not here this morning but I refer to times when we have been away from here and she has been talking with the friends about you. I believe her name is Nellie Curtis [read 'curlis'] Curtis and that she was an early acquaintance long [read 'living'] ago . . . long way off—It is of little consequence only I thought I would mention it when I got a chance and I have.<sup>81</sup> \* \* [scrawl] I have seen so many pople [people] who ask for you and I have seen so many pople [people] in your company who have asked about some of your experiences since you were here. [Indian.] J [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

J a . . . [Pause.] you know what I want to write.

(No, make that clear. She doesn't know it yet.) [Sitter shook head.]

J a c k [Erased over and over again.]

(Stick to it.)

J a [pause] Can't do it now.

(All right.)

I thought I was going to do so much.

(Could you give your own pet name when a chance occurs?)

<sup>80</sup> The sitter's mother is not living, but nothing is given here to prove her identity more than the implied statement that she is the communicator. R. H. stands for Dr. Hodgson, W. J. for William James, G. P. for George Pelham, and Whirlwind for Jennie P.

<sup>81</sup> The sitter does not know of any Nellie Curtis. The sitter's husband has a friend by the name of Elmer Curtis. But the person here described is a lady with curls and possibly the word "curls" ultimately gave rise to the name "Curtis."

yes I can and many more things but I am a little excited now.

(All right. I will try to help you keep calm.)

Of course I do not need [read 'want'] to say ... need [N. R.] need to say that I would have gladly lived for your [so written and read, but pencil pointed until read 'you'] know that now. There was so much for me to live for and I always thought I was going to do so much but I do not [pause and distress] think too much of the past [distress and groans began here and continued.] and the broken plans for it is of so little use and then again I am happy to find it is so different from what one supposes and I am never [read 'near' and pencil pointed till corrected.] far away from you. \* \* [struggle and evident effort to write 'F'] F a t h e r Father too I want to write about him.<sup>82</sup>

(Yes, do so.)

[Marked distress and groans.] I cannot \* \* [Pencil flew from hand in struggle. Groans and distress ceased and tension ceased.]

[Change of Control.]

G. P. Co. ['Co' doubtful.]

(Yes, good.)

Got too far in. It is just as important to kep [keep] a proper distance from the light as it is to get into accord with the vibratory influence but it will soon be adjusted. Emotion makes a spirit forget sometimes and slip beyond the current which is established for the communication. It is exactly like the loss of the trolley wheel on the wire. Sparks fly and all kinds [read 'puts'] of ... kinds of things happen and the power ceases until the thing is connected rightly once more.

I did not intend to make so unceremonious [N. R.] u n c e r e m . . . . [read] a call on you the first time I put in an ['a' written first and read when 'n' was added] appearance after your voyage but circumstances alter cases I have been told and it seems so now but yet I am glad, now that I am here, [comma inserted in both cases] to assure you of my interest and contact with the experimental work just as in the past. You cannot lose me.

(I believe it.)

I have no other occupation and so I stay where I can best help. It is so good to have the world waking up to the real [read 'need'] real importance of these experiments not alone to get you or R. H. a place

---

<sup>82</sup> The sitter's Great Grandfather was named Jean Jacques, but there is nothing here to indicate that he is meant. The allusion to "Father" at the end is not clear and throws no light on the identity of the communicator.

on the calendar of Saints but to understand that you really are working for them. I have many little things to tell you by and bye but now I will only try to help this family group to get what they can to the friend present and I ought to write friend with a capital F.

(I understand.)

for there is a real and vital interest in the work aside from the heart interest which is expressed to the child. You know another lady who comes here in spirit, [comma inserted.] a lady somewhat older and who has a very pleasant face and calm and sweet manner and who knew something about these matters before she came here. She is here in the room and is a friend of the Friend present a family a [N. R.] connection. [P. F. R. twice. New pencil given and rejected. Long pause.]

[Change of Control.]

E [Pause and P. F. R.] My [pause] little girl. [P. F. R. and pause. Hand put over to me as if wanting to come back and then returned to write.] little girl.

(Yes, you are welcome.)

I want Mama Mama. I love you love you do not think I forget you never never flowers everywhere. [P. F. R., distress and struggle to control.] Don't let me die again.

(No, I won't. That is all right.)

[P. F. R. and hand seized my thumb desperately.]

[Subliminal.]

I'h so sick. [Pause.] Oh you know that girl.

(What girl?)<sup>83</sup>

[Pause and sigh, with distress. Long pause.] Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

I wonder if you know any one name Florence?

(Mrs. R.: No.)

I mean alive.

(Mrs. R.: No.)

I keep hearing it over and over again. [Pause.] That's all.<sup>84</sup>  
[Long pause.] Isn't it beautiful. [Pause.] Goodbye.

(Goodbye.) [Sitter left. Pause.]

<sup>83</sup> The letter "E" may be for the Elizabeth mentioned later. There are some indications that the deceased daughter of the sitter is referred to, but the E is not an initial in her name. The opening of the next sitting as well as the address "Mama" suggests who is meant. [But "Betty" is a usual nickname of Elizabeth. See Note 86.—G. O. T.]

<sup>84</sup> Florence is the name of the wife of the deceased partner of the sitter's husband. He or some one else tried to give his name "Ed" earlier at the sittings of the sitter's husband, Mr. R.

They took all the sick feeling away when they went away. [Pause and awakened.]

After leaving the house sitter told me that the prolonged groaning when the child was purporting to communicate was exactly like the groaning and distress when the child was dying.

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mrs. R. November 11th, 1913. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

All gone. [Said as I returned from calling sitter.] [Sitter admitted and article placed on table. Long pause.]

Oh dear. [Pause.] I can see a funeral.

(Describe it.)

I don't like to. (Why?) It is so sad. It is a girl. [Pause.]

(Young or old?) [Thinking of sitter's child.]

Young, I don't mean a little girl, but a child. It is a young girl. [Pause.] I see two women and a man just standing right over this body, crying, crying and feeling dreadful. I could cry too. [Psychic half crying apparently and in distress. Pause.] I don't see any body else there. It is so funny. It is also light. Shall I tell you what I see?

(Yes.)

I see a window on the side. It seems near the end of the casket and sunshine away down at the end, like the end of the house. It seems like a curtain was up and the sunshine was coming right into the room. It is so light. They are arranging something. It is strange, but this body is not in the first room, but in one back as if . . . like a second room as if you go through the first into another. You know what I mean.

(Yes.)

[Pause.] You don't know that girl do you?

(Mrs. R.: I don't know, unless it was the baby.)

[Pause.] Also it was so white. Everything showed such sunshine falling in. There was such sadness.

(Mrs. R.: That is very characteristic of her funeral.)<sup>85</sup>

<sup>85</sup> The sitter comments on this account of the funeral as follows: "The description of the room the baby lay in until just before the coffin was taken down-stairs for the last services is remarkably correct. The only person with Mr. R. and myself was my sister-in-law Elizabeth. We were all three in the parlor alone just after Betty's death. We had all the shutters up and the sunshine came into Betty's room where she lay and flowers everywhere. We did not want it to look too sad or funereal. The room was next to my room and we walked from one to the other.

[Pause.] Well, there is . . . [pause] there was a woman in spirit when that funeral occurred, when that one went away, an older woman. I don't know whether it is the child's grandmother or not. It looks more like a middle aged woman, and yet she is like a grandmother. Was that the father's mother?

(Mrs. R.: No.) (Make that clearer.)

\* \* \* \* [sentence or two missed, but the effort was to explain that it was the relation of a grandmother of some kind.] I get mother in the spirit. Is that right?

(Mrs. R.: No.)

That is what I thought. I thought so any way. Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

Wait a minute. Do you know anything about an E connected with her. E ?

(Mrs. R.: No.) [After name was given in automatic writing recalled it.]

E-l-i . . . E-l . . . Well, you don't mean the same thing I do.

[As child's name was 'Betty' I thought she was meant and possibly this last statement was to deny this, and the sequel showed communicator was right. Sitter had nodded head, just before, showing she had recognized who was meant.]

(Go ahead. Finish that.)

E-l-i . . . E l i z a b e t h. [Letter at a time with pauses.]

(Yes, that is recognized.)

Well, Elizabeth, I saw that written.<sup>86</sup> [Pause.] When you see a thing you know it. You don't always know a relation, but infer that from the attitude, but when you see a thing you know it. [Pause and reached for pencil. Pause again.]

[Automatic Writing.]

\* \* \* \* [scrawls from right to left.] Glad and conscious [sigh] of your coming and would so much like to write about all the wonderful things we see over here for you would like to think of us in a [Indian] world of beauty and reality but there is so much to write to help you to understand our connection with you. I am [pause] not sure how

She lay in her crib after she died until just before she was put into the casket and taken down-stairs. Mr. R. and I were alone with her through the night after her death. I arranged the flowers in the room myself."

<sup>86</sup> The name Elizabeth has already been explained as the sitter's sister-in-law who was with the family at the death of the daughter. She is probably the "E" referred to twice on Nov. 10, see Notes 79 and 83.

The best conjecture regarding the "grandmother of some kind" said to be with her, the child Betty, is that it was her Great Grandmother Catherine, who has been said to be with the child in previous sittings.

much I can do but I want to try hard. I come ... [not read at time and may be doubtful.] F F [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

F a F is for me.

(I understand. Go ahead.)

F a [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] a [pause] \* \* F F a [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] th \* \* [resembles 'J,' but more likely a scrawl. P. F. R.] F r e... [None of this for several lines read at time purposely. Attempt was evidently to get 'Father,' but failed.]

[Pause.] I want to write to her for I have much to tell her about her own sensitiveness and responsive spirit. I do not mean here but at home where we are able to come and it is not imagination. Do you know what I mean when I tell her to keep right on and let us do the work as fast as we can for it is growing although she may not realize it. We have so [read 'no'] m... [pencil pointed till read 'so'] much to do on our side before we can complete the work we have begun for and with her.

(What kind of work is it?)

I refer to the definite spirit work which she knows and to which she is devoted.

(What is that?)

The writing is a part of it. Not like this but just as direct and then the other which is in the nature of a gift a gift which unfolds you know something with her hands [N. R.] hands and brain and voice [erased.] not singing. I do not want you to misunderstand but often in doing the work she uses her voice. You know what I mean.

(Mrs. R.: No.)

Yes yes like repeating or referring to the work talking to us.

(Yes, who ....?)

no one but to herself alone [delay in reading.] alone.

(It will have to be explained and described more definitely.) [Sitter had shaken head to show it was not intelligible.]

When something is done or about [N. R.] done ... about done she rises and says There is that right I wonder and did you help me and does it \* \* [possibly first syllable of 'satisfy'] satisfy. Something like that.

(Are you referring to the friend present?) [A living child in mind who shows decided psychic power.]

Who in the world would I be referring to if not to her.

(She does not recognize a thing in it.) [Sitter had shaken her head.]

I have not made it plain.

(No, it is not plain yet.)

It is a fact that she feels us about her.

(I have thought it was so once or twice.)

When she is doing something [delay in reading.] something like work and which is finished at times not sewing not [pause] writing yet something she rises from. Something where she sits do you not know.

(Mrs. R.: No, I don't know.)

Do you know anything about a table or desk where she sits to do something sometimes.

(Mrs. R.: That prayer circle.)

Not that. I cannot seem to think of an instance to set her mind in the right way. [Pause.] music music.

(Mrs. R.: No, not music.)

[P. F. R. Indian.] I am not ['not' erased.] not going to give up. (No, stick to it.)

for I have been with her when I have tried to impress her of my presence and tried to h. . . [pause and erased.] make record on my own mind of what I saw that I might recall it later and that is what I am after. [P. F. R. Pause.]

(I understand and would be glad to have it clear, but if it troubles you too much you can go on.)

[Pause.] You remember this last summer dear [pause] when sitting alone and thinking of me she often thinks of me.

(Yes.) [Sitter had nodded head.]

[Groan.] and there was writing going on and more or less that had to be done writing I mean. [P. F. R. Pause.] Wait a little and I will try something else.

(All right.)

[Pause.] F a t h e r.

(Yes, that was what you tried to write some time earlier.)<sup>87</sup>

yes and now I have it written. You know me.

---

<sup>87</sup> The only explanation of the F and Fath is that "Father" is meant, in spite of the "Fre" which is not completed. But the sequel points to the fact that it is the sitter's father-in-law.

The reference to the sitter's work and calling it "spirit work" is quite pointed. The sitter attends a circle for spiritual help to sick people and the method is a direct appeal to spirits for healing. It was in connection with the church work and was carried on so quietly that even many of the church members knew nothing about it. Mrs. Chenoweth would not know. The sitter is psychic. The circle sit at a table, which might be meant by the reference to a "desk," and the work is not sewing or music.



(You are the father of the friend present.) [I learned later and after the sitting that I was mistaken.]

Yes and have much to say.

(I understand. Some days ago a church was described. Did you have anything to do with that description?)

yes and I have had a hand [read 'hint'] in ... hand in several things that have been going on but I tell you frankly I do not think I am the most famous success at this business that hav... [attempt to erase.] has ever been.

(Tell me why the church was described.)

If I can [read 'am' and pencil pointed till corrected.] Some connection with me and a recollection of an event floated [N. R.] floated by just then and it was registered [Indian.] I still have a persistent desire to recall about the times I have tried to help her in her work. You see so many things are changed for me. I had to reverse [N. R.] reverse several opinions because I was not entirely [read 'already'] entirely [N. R.] entirely in sympathy with *all* [underscored] of this work.

(I understand, but you have not said what connection the church had with you.)

[Pause.] Are you trying to pin me down to a statement that [N. R.] that will make good evidence.

(Yes, exactly.)

Oh I se [see] I am too general and wavering and you want some of my old time assurance. Prhaps [Perhaps] I lost it when I got here but [distress] that is not the case. I have it on occasion but I do seem rather weak kneed and uncertain. Well the church was a picture [written in scrawly manner and some delay in reading] I [pause] only fragmentarily produced. [Pause.] E [read 'I'] E pi... E pic ... [erased.] E pis [pause] E E [P. F. R.]

(You will get it.)

E p i s c o p ... [P. F. R.] Episcopal. [None of this read till written.]

(All right. Where was it?)

My church. (Go ahead.) and my last rites. [New pencil given.] [Indian.] last service there.

(Why do you call it your church?)

it was my church where I [pause] \* \* [scrawl.] s e r ... [P. F. R.] s e r ... [P. F. R.] s e r v i ... c e S e r v \* \* [possibly 'ic'] S e r v \* \* [possibly 'ic' or 'ed'] \* \* [scrawl.] You know what I mean service service.

(Mrs. R.: Yes.)

Yes and where I loved to go always always \* \* [scrawls and struggle to keep control.]

(Where was that church?)

I know all you are after now and I will try and do better. I begin to get the light [Indian and pause.] M M a [Pause and pencil rejected and new one given.] [Indian.] M a . . . State of M. [P. F. R. Indian.] \* \* [scrawls which were attempts at two letters.] M a . . . [Pause.]

(Stick to it.)

a s ['s' not read purposely.] Massa [pause] chusetts Massachu [pause] setts.

(Yes, that is right. Go ahead.)

Massachusetts. I will get the rest.

(Yes, I know you will.)

B B B \* \* [scrawl probably for 'o' but not read.] B [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

B o s t o n.

(Yes, that is right. Go ahead.)

B o s t o n. [distress.] God is still a living God to me and to you my d \* \* [scrawl and not read] a [N. R.] a [pause] ughter. [P. F. and struggle to keep control. Pause and Indian and pencil reinserted.]

S S t . . . Saint [P. F., pause and Reinserted.] Saint [Pause.] D D [P. F. and Indian.]

tomorrow [pause] tomorrow. [word oral both times.]

(All right.)

[Long pause and hand reached for pencil.] E E E E E. [P. F.]<sup>88</sup>

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh who are all these people, who are these people.

(You find out.)

[Pause.] Hm. Yes. (What?) [Not heard.] Yes I will. [Pause.] It is a great company of people. [Pause.] Do you know anything about any music, wonderful wonderful music.

(Mrs. R.: No.) [I thought of music in church he attended.]

Don't you really?

---

<sup>88</sup> Probably the allusions here are to Trinity Church, which the communicator built. It is in Boston and his funeral took place there. The reference to "Saint" and "D" is not intelligible. The E repeated may be for Episcopal again, but there is no assurance on this point.

(Not in connection with the friend present.) [Sitter shook head.]

Well, I hear it just like . . . I just want to say the sound of many voices chanting about that God is King. It just sounds like many voices chanting about that God is King.

(Where is the music?)

How do you suppose I know? (Find out.) Why jump at me so? \* \* \* \* \* [A sentence lost due to rapid talking.]

There is something else. Can't you pay attention? (No.) Well, listen to what I am going to say.

(All right.)

I see a ship, the prow is fastened to the wharf. I see him on the water. Do you know anything about a sea voyage, either planned or taken by a spirit—a big ship. It is not going as if it went to Provincetown. It is more like a big liner, you know.

(Mrs. R.: Yes, he went on lots of voyages.)

And he loved the ocean trip did he not?

(Mrs. R.: Yes.)

It did this spirit so much good. The moment he was on the water he seemed to get better. While he was sick he always came up out of it and surprised every one when he went away to the spirit at last. He always got over them and expected to do it this time, but he pulled once too often. He would jump in and never spare himself. Do you know it?

(Mrs. R.: Yes. That is true.)

Well, he was not an idle spirit, by a good deal. [Pause.] there is such a lot of people with him. He was mourned right along by everybody. Oh why \* \* \* \* \* [sentence missed.] Did he ever walk across the Public Garden? It is just like tulip time. He liked them in the Garden.

(Mrs. R.: He walked across the Public Garden.)

Oh he liked spring time when the flowers were out. He is not young, but older, not too young to die when you see how much experience he had. He had as much experiences as if he lived 150 years. He did enough to make him 100 years old.

(Mrs. R.: Yes, that is true.)

Verily his work lives after him. Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

Don't forget the two houses he was interested in. [Two fingers held up.]

(All right.)<sup>89</sup>

<sup>89</sup> The sitters's father-in-law, the communicator, went abroad with Phillips Brooks, pastor of the church he built. He liked flowers, not tulips especially, but his son,

Both were his homes. [Pause.] My ... [Pause.]

Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

[Pause and sitter left room. Sigh and awakened.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mrs. R. November 12th, 1913. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitter admitted. Article, new one, placed on table. Long pause and slight groan of discomfort. Pause.] Hm. [Pause and Indian.] Hm. [Pause.]

I see all kinds of pictures. [Pause and distress in face. Groan and pause.] Ada. (What?) Ada. [Pause.] Just a minute. Wait a minute. [Pause.]

If I could only tell you all I see as quickly as I could say it, you would not be able to record it. I suppose it means something, don't you? Strange, it is like a little arrangement, a frame on which there are little colored things, little balls like kindergarten work, you know.

(Yes.)

I see a man looking at it as if he picked it up from a number of other things they use in that work. It is like a school room. He is working like those in a schoolroom and I get a schoolroom. I come down some stairs to it. [Pause.] I don't know what it means. [Pause.] It is in a city where I can hear noises on the street outside and there are all these things, some books and things that are connected with some sort of work for children. [Pause.] Hm. [Pause.] and do you know any one named William?

(Mrs. R.: Yes.)

I hear that name spoken. I don't know whether it is connected with these things or not. [Pause.]

You know, I see a woman, very slender and prim, rather set, not severely so but rather. She is talking with a man ready to communicate here. I feel she is a woman alone in the world, more like a maiden lady connected with him, Doctor, an unmarried woman. She went out before he did, but is a kind of oldish lady, 50 or 60. [Pause.] I'm gone [possibly 'going']

The name of the woman sounds like Anne, possibly it is Anna or Annie. Do you know her?

---

husband of the sitter, is especially fond of tulips. There is no special reason for allusion to two homes, except that he, the communicator, was born in New Orleans and lived the latter part of his life in Brookline, Mass.

(Mrs. R.: I cannot recall the name.)

[Mrs. C., medium, reached for me to hold her hand.]

(Mrs. R.: Yes, I recall it now.)

It is very hard to recall things on the instant, isn't it? The mind is on something else. It takes infinite patience on both sides to get the best results. [Pause, reached for pencil and pause again.]<sup>90</sup>

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[P. F. R.] D [pause] ear child I am not as remarkably stupid and forgetful as I seem. It is rather the new and unusual method of expression which [pause] makes it hard for me to tell you all I desire. My love my purposes my interests are practically the same. Perhaps I might not lay the same stress on some initial steps for the march Godward but the purpose is the same to serve God and and bring about that closer and more spiritual union which exalts and glorifies the daily life. I am less concerned about methods more desirous to accomplish the end. I find a great company of men like myself who are making discoveries and who are as eager as I to make the results of those discoveries known to the dear ones left. I am convinced that I shall always be in contact with the life and friends I have known and loved. I her ['hear' and read 'have' doubtfully] hear my name spoken in many places and know that to some it seems a sad loss to the work to have me ap... [erased] away but in reality I am of more service in some ways than I was when among my people. I do not wish you to understand that I prefer this life to the one left. I am not ready [read 'really' and suddenly corrected as hand started to rewrite.] r... to say that I am glad I am here for I am so often baffled in my effort to get into direct communication that I sometimes have a feeling that I would give all all I know or have gained just to be able to talk things over face to face in the old familiar way.

I always grow a little excited when I think of it that way but it is very natural for I know I am needed in some places. I have friends and associations very dear here but a man feels his work unfinished while there is need of his presence. If I had my theories put in practice no one would die until old age had released them from all obliga-

---

<sup>90</sup> The William mentioned here is apparently another than the brother of the sitter's father-in-law, mentioned before: for the association of a school is not applicable to that person. But the woman referred to is identified by the following statement of the sitter:

"Anne is a name in my father's family. He had a cousin Anna, and an Aunt Anne. The cousin died years ago unmarried and about 60 to 65. She was exceedingly prim. I just remember she had a younger brother William. I do not remember him except as a name. This makes it possible that the allusion to the school and 'kindergarten' is applicable."

tions but that would make a dreary world of it over here. J. P. whom I lean on for help sometimes reminds me that it would be a vast and limitless old folks home.

(I understand.)

I think God's way is the best way and that gives me peace. It is only my human longing that makes me restless.

(I understand.)

[Indian.] I have associated myself with the men who are working out some of these problems. It is a good work and calls for service and I am glad to be in it. I think I am growing somewhat stronger. I want to do some other things your mother your mother grieves sometimes but not often. I wish you could see the family here in spirit life. [Pause and pencil tapped.]

S S S S S I want to write a word S—[P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

S a . . . St St. [period inserted carefully] S S S S S Saint Saint

(Stick to it.)

\* \* [scrawl.] Saint [pause] I will get it I think.

(I know you will. Stick to it.)

You know what I am after. Saint St. [Long pause.] William [Long pause.] William. [Pencil fell and new one given.]

[Long pause.] P a P [Long pause.] au l.

(St. Paul?)

No No. Did I write that.

(Yes, I think you are trying to write something else. What is it about?)

S [Pause.] It is a name I wish to get through a name of a place dear to me. Church but not St. Paul.

(I understand. So stick to it and you will get it.)

I did not write that last for a u l but for All All [read 'att' purposely to have it clear.] no Alle. Just a minute. I will get it and [Pause.] E E [printed form both times.] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] T [purposely not read.] [P. F. R.]

(Yes.)

[Indian and pause.] F [or 'T'] [P. F. R. twice with pause. Indian.] E [Pause.] \* \* [shape of 'n' but probably attempt to write 'm'] E p i p h a n y [P. F. R.] you know what that means.<sup>91</sup>

<sup>91</sup> All this confusion ending in the name Saint Paul, whose intent is denied, and yet completed, is possibly an attempt to mention the church which stood on a square in New Orleans near the home of the communicator when he lived there.

[Sitter shook head.] (The friend présent says she does not know what that means, but I think I know exactly what you are trying to say, but it will not be evidence until it gets on the paper. I think you are trying to write the word Episcopal.)

Thank you that is it. I thought if I wrote the other word she would know it as a feast day [both words not read.] feast day. [Pause.]

(Are you or have you been trying to give the name of that church?)

Yes. (All right. Stick to it.) C C C h u . . . Church. Ch . . . Church of \* \* [scrawl.] A[-] Ch r s . . . Yes (Do you recall who the preacher was that preached in it?) you know that church well as I do for you have seen it. Not as much as I but you Hyslop have seen it.

(Yes.)

[Struggle to keep control.] Near here not New York. Great man preached there. [Indian.]

Do you know Charles not the preacher but another person in our family.

(Mrs. R.: Yes.)

B [P. F. and hand seized mine as if to return to normal consciousness, and I refused to take it, placing pencil in fingers.] [Indian and pause.] T [pause and groan. Indian.] I have some things beside the church which I want to talk about for there are so many letters that suggest or rather so many names that the same letter suggests: for instance when I begin with a C— I instantly think of Church, Christ, C and Copley and that brings confusion into my expression.

(I understand.)

Copley Square I mean as you know already only you wanted it to come [N. R.] there . . . Com[e] here and when I say you know the church I have a feeling that you have been inside [N. R.] inside the building.

(Yes, I have.)

and that was why I said you knew it almost [written 'almost'] as well as I which was not quite right but goes well enough and when I kept

---

Possibly this church was meant by the "Saint" mentioned in connection with the church associated with his funeral service. Cf. text and Note 88. This is perhaps indicated by the allusion to Copley Square, on which Trinity Church stands. The reference to "Epiphany" has no special significance here. The sitter writes of the allusion to St. Paul as follows:

"We lived, when children, in New Orleans opposite a white stone church called St. Paul's. We attended that church, and it was on the opposite of an open square." This fact shows that there was evidently some confusion in the previous allusion to the church and that some features would fit both churches.

trying to \* \* [scrawl.] write E E it brought two Es to mind in the same connection. You know now [read 'how'] what ... now I mean. I think E was a preacher rector yes rector.

(Can you give the initial of the church there?)

[Pause.] E E \* \* [scrawl.] I want to write E for that too—too \* \* [scrawl.] E m ... not Episcopal this time but Christ.

(I understand.)

Christ Christ do you not know what I mean

(Yes, I do. You refer to Emmanuel Church. That has relevance, but ...) [Writing began.]<sup>92</sup>

\* \* [scrawls.] yes that is just what I refer to for it had effect on us you and your speech. [Indian and threw pencil away. I had noticed for some time that the writing showed the influence of Jennie P and her special style. She followed with her control alone.]

[Change of Control.]

[Pencil rejected.] Too bad you have a brain. I used to think [imperfect sheet torn off] think it was only the brain of the light that bothered [N. R.] bothered the communicator but you have a power in your little head also and it is something of a task to overcome [N. R.] overcome the influence of your massive brain when it begins to ooze out in waves of thought. Did you ever know that an [N. R.] an oozing out process would produce a wave. Well it can in this instance. The poor [N. R.] man ... poor ... man is quite beside himself with his own desire and mine and yours and the young lady. It does not need the explanation of a light to make clear the difficulty. Do you think [N. R.] I am ... think ... am going to let [N. R.] ... going to let you have any [N. R.] thing ... any [N. R.] A n y [read but not aloud.] A n y thing to say not if I can keep hold of the pencil. [I had been wishing to explain the situation, but could not get a chance to put in a word edgewise.]

You have it all your own way with your inference [N. R., but suspected.] inferences [N. .] i n f e r e n c e s yes and now the communi-

<sup>92</sup> The Charles mentioned here has been referred to before. It is the name of the sitter's Uncle. Following this a most interesting confusion occurs. Following, as it does, the reference to St. Paul and repeating the allusion to Copley Square, it shows that the communicator had the two churches in mind, Trinity in Boston and St. Paul's in New Orleans. The reference to "Christ" Church is evidently a mistake for "Emmanuel" Church soon mentioned, and which had no special association with the communicator. But it does have a special association with the sitter, who attends there and does her work in connection with a circle there. It is not on Copley Square, but is not far from it. B probably stands for Boston, but the meaning of T is not determinable.

[But see note 88 and reference to Trinity Church which is on Copley Square—G. O. T.]



cator and I are going to use up a little time just for our own amusement.

(Well, he did not give the right answer to the question, and did not give the right church at all.)

I know that and so does he. Do you think he does not know when he gets it wrong but it was not his when he made the mistake it is not his fault any more than it is yours. He is trying to overcome the difficulties. It is the fault of the combination [N. R.] of ... combination [N. R.] ... combination of influences sometimes the combination flows together and makes a stream [read 'strain'] stream [still read 'strain'] stream you stupid stream of power and sometimes it does not flow but stays in distinct form. This particular spirit had a very independent action of mind and does not fuse with the action thought action of others as readily as some. Sometimes [N. R.] Sometimes a spirit will fuse because of a certain loss ... certain certain loss of that independent action ... independent action through [written 'though' and so read] throo ... [read] tho \* \* [scrawls] though [so written and read, pencil tapped till correct.] a great and overwhelming desire to get a spe... special thing down on the paper.

[Pencil fell and hand refused to take it again. Pause.]

[*Subliminal.*]

What is all this disturbance?

(The communicator did not get exactly what he was trying to give. He gave something else, which, though it was relevant, was not what both he and we are after.)

Well, don't blame him, will you. (No.) Don't blame him.

(No.)

Do you know anything about his going away to a country place in summer time?

(Mrs. R.: No, I do not.)

Well, I see a place that looks like a country place with a place to fish. Don't you know what it is? It is not like the ocean. It looks like a river, with meadows around it, something like meadows. You understand.

(Mrs. R.: No.) Not you. (I don't know what you refer to.)

You understand the word meadows?

(Yes.)

I don't expect you to understand the rest until I get it. I think it was a long time ago. I see him walking around just like a man going fishing on a fishing trip. I don't know anything about fishing and hunting, but I see him carefully picking his way where he was hunting

something. It is a pretty country and the picture gives reflections in the water. It is a beautiful country. Somebody stoops to pick up something. All I know about it is that somebody alone knows about it. It is a man too.<sup>93</sup>

I feel bad and discouraged, don't you? (No.) You wouldn't feel discouraged. [Pause and hand put on article.] That same little parcel. [It was not the same.] [Pause.]

I wanted to tell you about a ring he had and . . . [Pause.] Did he know Pierpont Morgan?

(Mrs. R.: I don't know.)

Well, I can see him right here just as if he knew him. [Long pause.] Gone. Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

[Long pause.] [Sitter left. Mrs. C. opened eyes, closed them again.] My God, can't a man get through what he wants to? Thinking about an oyster and it turns into a balloon. [Awakened knowing nothing of what was said.]<sup>94</sup>

#### Chapter IX, Series V, Nov. 17, 18, 19, 1913

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mr. Junot. November 17th, 1913. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Cough, pause. Sitter admitted. Long pause. Slight groan of distress. Long pause. Rolling and twitching of hand. Pause.] Hm. Hm. [Long pause.] Oh. [Distress rather marked for a moment. Long pause.] It's better. [Pause.] It's better. [Sigh, pause, slight groan, pause and reached for pencil, pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[Hand rolled over as if losing control. Pause.]<sup>95</sup>

\* \* [scrawl in effort to begin.] E [N. R. purposely.] [P. F. R. Pause.] E [F. R.] E [pause] arth seems [N. R.] [pause] far off [P. F. R.]

<sup>93</sup> The sitter writes in regard to the incident of fishing: "Mr. R. (the communicator and the sitter's father-in-law) went off to the country once or twice during the summer to fish."

<sup>94</sup> The allusion to a ring is not intelligible and it is not known that he knew anything about Pierpont Morgan, who had died a short time before this sitting, a fact probably known to Mrs. Chenoweth.

<sup>95</sup> These signs of distress were a little more than usual and the sequel shows why. Every time that there has been any effort to get messages for Mr. Junot, whether he was present or not, there have been indications that the final illness of Mrs. Junot, who sought to communicate, affected the results. I shall have occasion to remark the fact again.

(Stick to it.)

and wonderful [so read and not corrected.] to us as we come back to you but we are [P. F. R., as hand was carried to other side of pad.] together and seek to help you. [Writing now suddenly gets heavier and apparently more easy and certainly less slow.]

I am trying to get the clear [read 'dear' at time and not corrected.] message through to you.

(All right. We understand.)

yes I hear you and am trying hard.

(We shall be patient.)

you are not afraid of my effort.

(No, not at all. It will be all right.)

[Pause.] I am so glad to make an approach to you but I do not know where to begin or what to say first. I have so many things I have trid [tried] to do and so [Indian and cough.] much to recall that [Pause and P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] Lady [pause] I am and [P. F. R. twice.] my name is [pause.] J [ended with a scrawl and not read.] \* \* [scrawl and struggle to control.] S [mentally read 'J' at time, but not aloud, and when next letter was written saw it might be attempt at 'S'] S a ['a' not read purposely.]

(That letter again.)

\* \* [possibly attempt at 'a' but thought to be effort at 'r' at time.] a [so read at time though it resembled 'd' in form and read 'a' because it is often written for 'a'] [Struggle to keep control.]

S a [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Indian.] S a r a h (Go ahead.) and I want to come to my boy. [P. F. R. twice. Pause.] not my son but my little boy who was a little boy when I came over here. [P. F. R.] It is so hard to write I think I will not try. [P. F. R. twice.]<sup>96</sup>

---

<sup>96</sup> Sarah is the name of Mrs. Junot's mother, who was dead. She had been mentioned in communications at earlier sittings. But Mrs. Chenoweth had never heard of her or Mr. Junot and had never seen or heard of Mr. Junot. She has not even seen him at any of the sittings. Of the passage Mr. Junot writes:

"Sarah is the name of my wife's mother, and I supposed that it was the mother who was trying to write, as once or twice before. She has never been clear. Her youngest son was a man grown when she died, but she always seemed to treat him as a child. Her other children were long grown up and gone out into the world. She was very deeply attached to this youngest son. I thought she was trying to speak of him, but that was not clear, and indeed nothing is clear until a little later, when it was stated: 'Father is writing now.' I understood it was my father and that he was trying to help Mrs. Junot and her mother."

[Probable Change of Control.]

[Pause.] m y dear one. [Indian. Pencil rejected and new one given and pause.] <sup>97</sup>

[Change of Control.]

Good morning to you and a greeting I bring from a group of your friends who are most interested in the effort.

(Yes, our greetings to you. Go ahead.)

It is not because the had ['head' and so read] or the heart [pause: possibly because I had noticed without saying so that 'head' was written 'had'] is not clear but because the right condition is not at once established and so that makes some hesitancy and seeming weakness.

(I understand.)

The weakness is not what it seems the power is here. It is more like geting [getting] the trolley disconnected and then there are many sparks and flashes and onward [read 'normal' hesitatingly] onward movement. Father is writing now

(All right.)

and will help all he can. you know that I am clear. you know what I mean.

(Go ahead.)

and there are so many things I have tried to do before but have not succeeded in that. I feel like making added [read 'ordered'] effort ... added... this morning. I am not alone but have a friend with me most dear. [P. F. R.] I do not think I can tell you much about my death. I did not know much about it at the time but have learned some things since [written 'snce'] and am satisfied that it i [pause] is all right Was all right.

(I understand.)

I am sometimes surprised at the lack of desire on the part of those alive to connect with is [so read but intended for 'us'] us. Do [pause between letters] you know D yes D D over here. D a v i d.

(Not recognized yet.) [Sitter shook head.]

D a v i d D a v i s yes Davis, that is right Davis.

(Davis is not recognized at all.) [Sitter shook head.]

---

It is possible that, in this mêlée of communicators, the reference to "my boy" might have been an unconscious intrusion of Mr. Junot's father referring to his own "boy," Mr. Junot, who was present. But there is no evidence of this. I mention it only as one of those possibilities which have clearly been facts in some instances.

<sup>97</sup>This is probably an attempt by Mrs. Junot to communicate, but she was wholly unsuccessful, as she had been in previous attempts. Reference more than once was made to her weakness.

ought to be [new pencil given.] and I think will be, a friend of mine last name Davis.

(Not recognized at all.) [Sitter still shook head.]

[Pencil fell and pause with relaxed hand, and then pencil taken.] I am not going to drop the pen just because memory is poor.

(That's right. Stick to it.)<sup>98</sup>

I have some independence led [read 'left' after delay and not corrected] of my own [Pause.] Let me try once more to tell of some one else who is here.

(All right.)

Lady [N. R.] who seeks to come. Lady who seeks to come and who has so little strength that I am helping just now.

(Good. I understand.)

Lady is glad and with her is another who also has great desire to write. I do not mean the older lady [N. R.] lady but a younger one who should have lived longer to [pause and taps] keep the home and love and happiness complete and who now seeks to come and make the completeness of the spirit life real to you. [Struggle to control.]<sup>99</sup>

[Probable Change of Control.]

G [so read, but probably effort at 'D'] e A ... Dear dear I want to come myself.

(All right.)

to you and tell you how true [N. R.] it ... true [read 'tried' tho it is clear enough, but I had to tear off sheet.] true true it is the life here the actual life.

(Yes, we understand.)

you know I love you. [P. F., pause and P. R.]

(Mr. J.: Can I ask a question?) (Yes.) (Mr. J.: Who writes?)

I your own W not B.

(Yes, go ahead.) (Mr. J.: Yes, dear heart.)

not B but I and I am so glad and have so much to say. If I could tell you all that has come to me of strength by your constant thought of me and if I could but assure you of the help I can often be ...

---

<sup>98</sup> Mr. Junot kept his counsel at the sitting, evidently because the name "Davis" came, which was wrong, David having been correct. Of the passage he writes later:

"He had a brother David, but I never knew him. He (David) died before I was born. It was clear that his reference a little later to the lady with 'so little strength' was to Mrs. Junot's mother and that 'the younger one' was Mrs. Junot. What followed confirmed this."

<sup>99</sup> The reference to the lady and to "the younger one" is what Mr. Junot had in mind when writing the above note. The identification is based upon experience in the interpretation of such records.

[pause] because you make it possible by your faith in me I am sure you would be glad that we found the light together.

(Mr. J.: Yes, dear heart, I understand.)

It makes all the difference in the world to me. I am glad and happy to have the boy and you have been comforted many times by the thought that we are together.

(Mr. J.: Surely, surely.)

but that is not enough for either of us for we want Papa and the rest to be a part of our new life and so when hours and seasons bring you in thought to us we are made happy. It is good so good to have you here and em . . . embrace [N. R.] you . . . embrace.

(Mr. J.: Yes, dear heart, don't forget us.)

Oh I am so happy and excited and B is jumping about with joy and if you could see you would be the happiest man in the world.

(Yes indeed.)<sup>100</sup>

you have been brave so brave and so many times have risen above the despondency by the power of your faith Your knowledge I mean (Good.) and that helps us in the home. By and by some chiyes [read 'things' as sheet was torn off.] changes must come but nothing can separate us.

(Yes, dear heart.)

Nothing nothing nothing ever for we are daily growing nearer and I am so much stronger than at any time when I have seen you before. I hope to get some good evidence to you but today my hart [heart] cries out just to tak [talk] to you of my affection and my happiness in knowing that you do not forget me any more than I forget you.

(Never, never.)

It is true that it is a wonderful ilfe [so written, but read 'life' as I saw the intention.] here and sometimes I can hardly wait for your coming but I know you must stay to guide ours our our children.

(Mr. J.: Yes, dear heart, they send their love to you.)

children no longer in the old sense but always our babies that we love and cherish wished for and welcomed and are glad so glad to have growing up to [struggle] the life of truth which saved you and me from [struggle] that awful doubt when Benny left us.<sup>101a</sup>

---

<sup>100</sup> The control in this instance is more clearly Mrs. Junot, and Mr. Junot says of the passage:

"She says its is 'I your own W (wife) not B' (Bennie), and all she says is clear, well understood, entirely accurate and sharply characteristic of her." Mr. Junot was called Papa by her in the family.

<sup>101a</sup> It is noticeable that the name Bennie came this time. No special significance can be attached to this, because Mr. Junot had mentioned his name at an earlier sitting. But in addition to the fact that Mr. Junot had never been seen by

(Mr. J.: Yes, dear heart.)

I have often talked with those who helped us in that sad hour (Mr. J.: God bless them.) and I can never forget [P. F. R.] their patience and kindness and I am proud to be associated with them over here not the least among them is R. H.

(Good.) (Mr. J.: Give my love to R. H.)

who has as vivid and clear recollection of you and your impetuous way which was so softened he says by the communications. Oh it is all so wonderful. I am so happy dear and know that you realize that I try to help [help] the children \* \* \* \* [scrawls, but possibly attempt to write name, and lost control, pencil falling and reinserted twice.] Adieu. [Looks more like 'Kate,' her signature, to G. O. T.]

(Mr. J.: *Auf Wiedersehen. Auf Wiedersehen.* Come tomorrow.)<sup>101b</sup>

[Change of Control.]

Papa I am here [N. R.] here.

I'll take care of her for you.

(Yes, dear heart. I know you will.)

She [read 'the'] love to . . . She loves to go home and see [see] you.

(Yes, we understand.)

(Bennie, write the lines about Columbus.)

yes I will. [P. F. R.] sea [read 'see'] S e a sailed the sea [P. F. R.] Sailed the sea lo . . . [read 'to'] [P. F. R.] ago \* \* [letters

Mrs. Chenoweth at either earlier or the present sittings, and the fact that Bennie's name had not been mentioned by him or the communicator as yet in this sitting, there is the one that his name is spelled "Benny" here, which one familiar with the Piper records would not do. Mrs. Chenoweth, of course, had not seen the Piper records on the case. Consequently the spontaneous mention of the name, the deceased son of the communicator and of the sitter, under the circumstances explained will have some value, tho allowance must be made for the credulity of the sceptic who would brush all these facts aside.

<sup>101b</sup> Not the less interesting is the reference to "R. H." Dr. Hodgson, who was well known to the communicator before her death, the Junots having had sittings under his supervision with Mrs. Piper, all this not being known of the sitter by Mrs. Chenoweth, tho it be conceded that she had seen the Piper records. She would have had to know who was present in order to utilize them.

The reference to the influence of the communications, evidently Piper case, and Dr. Hodgson's knowledge of them is very pertinent and it represents what was true of the sitter.

"Adieu" is not often used for a parting word in these records. The subliminal always uses "Goodbye." Occasionally Jennie P. may use "Adieu," but it is rare, if ever, that other communicators than Piper sitters use it. The word was frequently used in the Piper case and "Auf Wiedersehn" by G. P. and the Junots there. Evidently the "Adieu" suggested it to Mr. Junot here.

resemble 'avail.' Pencil fell and hand reached for mine, insisting on taking mine.] <sup>102</sup>

[*Subliminal.*]

\* \* (What?) [Sigh, pause and Indian, and pause again.] Hm. [pause] tomorrow.

(Yes.)

Tomorrow. [Pause and sigh.] Who is M, do you know?

(Mr. J.: I don't know.)

[Mrs. C.'s finger makes 'M' on pad without pencil.] alive. It sounds more like Margery, a young person. Do you know? <sup>103</sup>

(Mr. J.: No, I don't.)

[Pause.] I heard it any way. Perhaps it is for something else. I am sorry to go. I am sorry to go.

(I understand.)

Does he understand?

(Mr. J.: Yes.)

I could stay a whole month. [Pause, sigh, and began rubbing eyes. Sitter left room. Few moments' pause and Mrs. C. awakened.]

When sitter's wife came writing was very heavy and there was much difficulty in keeping control, and words were made in as large a size as Jennie P.'s, though the writing did not resemble hers in style.

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mr. Junot. November 18th, 1913. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Cough, Indian and pause. Sitter admitted. Pause for some time. Cough and Indian, followed by another pause.] Hm. [Hand trembled and long pause.]

I'm not afraid to go.

[Long pause, reached for pencil and paused again.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

We are here with your dear ones and are glad of this time to say

---

<sup>102</sup> There is nothing evidential in this effort of Bennie to communicate, though Mr. Junot says of it: "The little he says is clear and characteristic of him."

At an earlier sitting Mr. Junot had asked for certain verses which his wife and Bennie knew and he referred to Columbus here to help suggest them by way of association, as the verses were associated with the name Columbus. I think it was a mistake to do so, as we have to suppose that the medium might know the verses and that the subliminal being equipped with the suggestion might recall them.

<sup>103</sup> Mr. Junot makes no further comment on this reference to "M" which was elaborated into "Margery." There was a friend of the communicator whose initial was "M" and who was mentioned at earlier sittings as "M. A. H." Later inquiry shows that M and Margery are not recognizable.



something to you [Indian] ["Hm. Hm." in half groan.] across the country where the influence of the home life is more definite and concrete. She whom you still love [groans and distress.] as wife and mother of your children is a constant and active associate in all your plans for the future and sometimes we are allowed to enter into that companionship in a degree. It is years [read 'yours' and hand paused till corrected.] since I have greeted you and since I [cough and Indian.] made effort to give the comfort of this same kind to you. I have seldom retraced my work among men but have been a conscious adviser of some other workers from this side. I use the term conscious adviser because often we are unconscious of an attitude of mind which resolves itself into a kind of suggestive advice.

I do not like to take a moment of the time [cough and Indian.] which your darlings should have but I am urged to do so because of an assurance which I wish to make concerning the children in the earthly home.

(Mr. J.: Who writes?)

I am Rector.

(Good, I thought so.) (Mr. J.: Thanks, Rector, thanks.)

and it is with the purpose of recalling in a measure the past and giving as I said the word of confidence for the future of those to whom you are father and mother as well. [Cough and struggle.] It is such a joy to see the relationship established long ago kept intact. Imperator still feels that consideration for you and yours which was manifest in the earlier days. Your wife has much earnest desire to give the evidential incidents which have been suggested to her from you and I feel that when the time is just fit she will drop it to you whether you are here or elsewhere.

(Good. I understand.)

for she is a frequent visitor here for just that purpose and is not the least discouraged when she is obliged to wait. The very serious condition arising from her illness and anxiety is no longer present and she much more readily takes the pencil and keeps [keeps] her thought.<sup>104</sup>

I could go on and give you messages from the group who have always considered you a part of their work and from R. H. and G. P. and yet I must pass lightly over ther [read 'this' and then 'her'] their thought to express a message from W. J. He has a word for you.

<sup>104</sup> It was another very pertinent thing for Rector to appear. He has very rarely put in his appearance at this light. The allusion to his not having had an opportunity for years to communicate with the sitter in this way is true: for it had been some eight or ten years since Mr. Junot had sittings with Mrs. Piper where Rector had been the control in the communications of the sitter's son Bennie. The whole passage is characteristic in its knowledge and representation of the facts.

(Thank you.)

And is as active and energetic about it as he ever was about the life work of his Problems problems problems he repeats over and over and the word is so suggestive of what he has discovered a . . . [erased] that I leave it as a message in itself. He has found some light on a few points which were quite irreconcilable to some of his own ideas.

(What were those points?)

The point of identity deteriorating [N. R.] in expression . . . deteriorating in expression. If they come at all why so [pause.] small in mind and feeble in power was his question oft repeated (That is correct.) and it has been given him as light and understanding. He will tell you about it another day for both he and I feel as if we should not usurp this golden hour reserved for the friend with even a fruitful revelation.

(Good. I understand.)

but in W. J.'s effort to give greeting the matter of confidence and continuance came up for our friend.<sup>105</sup>

(Yes.)

It is good to hear the voice of his wife over here. She has much to make her life lovely and happy for her own strong spirit and her natural tendencies [read 'tenderness' and hand pointed till corrected.] give her opportunity to find much that we all know exists [read 'casts' doubtfully] exists over here.

Was there a trip or voyage a visit to another part of the country which was taken by you with her before the passing a rather [read 'water'] eventful . . . rather eventful trip to which she often refers where there were friends and acquaintances who greeted you.

(Mr. J.: Not recognized.)

O I mean a long trip some time ago. [Pause.]

(Please to make it a little more definite.)

---

<sup>105</sup> The allusion to R. H. and G. P. is very characteristic for Rector, and W. J. perhaps as pertinent. R. H., of course, refers to Dr. Hodgson, who had the management of Mrs. Piper at the time of Mr. Junot's sittings there, and G. P. refers to George Pelham, who was one of the chief communicators at the time of Rector's control there. W. J. refers to William James, whose difficulties are described here with perfect correctness, but Rector's knowledge of that would most naturally be posthumous, that is, acquired after the death of Professor James, though it is not inconceivable that he knew before that from his connection with the Piper case and sittings there. However, Mrs. Chenoweth had seen Professor James's Report on the Piper records and we have only to assume that his initials might suggest to her mind possible recollections of what she got from skimming that Report. But she would have had to read it carefully to get so characteristic a summary of his difficulties. It was the chief perplexity in his reflections on the spiritistic theory, and that fact may have been prominent enough in the Report to have attracted attention, though not without a minute and critical reading of his own remarks.

I will try and do so. I hear her frequently speak of it. When we came back as if it were a trip of some consequence but it seems a long distance away.<sup>106</sup>

[Pause.] Perhaps I had best let her write for herself. I know the [cough, Indian, and pause.] gentleman pretty well and know that what he wants he wants at once and without any fuss.

(Good.) [Sitter smiled.]

and I know that sometimes his mind [read 'small'] mind so set is a hindrance but it is entirely temperamental. Nothing [N. R.] to do . . . nothing to do with his real regard for the work.

(I understand.) [Pause and P. F.] (Mr. J.: Thanks, Rector, thanks.)

[Change of Control.]

[Indian and new pencil. Pause and 'Hm' as if a sort of distressful feeling was present, and another pause.]

H [pause] ere here.

(Yes, you are welcome.)

and I love you and thank [Indian] you. I think [pause] the [pause] best I can do is not as good as Rector's worst. I want to write about something you and I alone know if I can.

(Mr. J.: Yes, dear heart.)

I want the test of it for you.

(Yes, we understand.)

I have in mind a prayer. [Pause.]

(Mr. J.: Yes, dear heart, go on.)

a prayer we said and now you say. [Pencil gripped and catalepsy followed after breaking pencil point. I rubbed arm a few minutes.] alone [read 'home'] alone [struggle for control] for our little ones. \* \* [scrawl.] Do you recall a dress a soft not silk but warm [Cough.]

---

<sup>106</sup> The statement: "It is good to hear the voice of his wife over here," would most naturally be referred by readers to Mrs James, who is still living when these notes are made. But they will note that the allusion, toward the end of the remarks about Professor James, to "the golden hour reserved for the friend" and that the passage about Professor James, are directed to me (J. H. Hyslop), they will see that the reference to the "wife" is to Mrs. Junot. Then all becomes clear and especially pertinent as coming from Rector.

The allusion, however, to a long trip is not intelligible to Mr. Junot. But it is interesting to observe its possible relation to a similar incident in the sittings which I held for Mrs. Junot some years before and published in the *Proceedings* (Vol. VI, pp. 400, 406, 457-486), which were identified by Mr. Gregg as relevant to himself and his boy. Whether this is a subliminal association and memory of what came in connection with John Gregg at those earlier sittings and confused with Bennie, or a memory of the control who did not know the confusion, cannot be determined.

garment which was for comfort one I did not wear. [Pause and struggle to control.] I am so slow.

I still wear something you gave me. I wear it always [Indian and struggle to keep control] gave me I always wear it.

(What was it?)

round my hand. [Pause and P. F. R.]

(Mr. J.: Yes, I understand, sweetheart.)

and it was mine in death often kissed by you. [Catalepsy again and pencil point broken. Some moments restoring hand to proper condition.]<sup>107</sup>

I am not hurting the light.

(No, I understand.)

[Pause.] I love the \* \* [scrawl] flowers [pause] up town down town. [Struggle for control and pause.] You know about sitting [read 'selling'] sitting up one night and [pause] Bennie one \* \* [evidently intended for 'night,' but read 'with'] night before Bennie died one night late the [or 'one'] night late late [groan and pause.] no hope no hope [P. F. R. and pause.]

(Mr. J.: I was not there.)

no hope G G G G. [P. F. R. twice.]

(Mr. J.: Yes, G was there.)

[Long pause. P. F. R.] G [pause] you know the place high where we look off and see the city. you know the way home high [P. F. R. and pause.]

P P P [Long pause.] The count . . . [pencil ran off pad.] Country. [Struggle to keep control.] C e m e t e r y high \* \* [Struggle to keep control.] F F l . . . F l o r [read 'F-i-l-o-r'] W l o r [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

F l o r e . . . F l o r e n c e.

(Mr. J.: Not understood.)

F l o r e n c e.

(Is that the name of a place or a person?)

Place. [Pause, cough, Indian, and pencil fell, and hand refused to take it again, reaching for mine, which was given.]

---

<sup>107</sup> Mr. Junot makes no note on the allusion to a little prayer said by both before her death and by him alone since that event. But in regard to the "warm garment" he writes as follows:

"She refers to a very warm Jäger flannel gown which I bought for her two or three days before her death and which was given to her nurse after her death, and also to her wedding ring, which by direction was left on her finger. But both of these matters had been brought out by her in former sittings."

[*Subliminal.*]

[Indian.] Do you know anything about Indiana?

(Yes, he does.)

Well, that's the place.

(Mr. J.: Yes.)

Don't these people who come back know anything about Indiana?

(Mr. J.: Oh, yes.)

You know the place in Indiana. \* \* \* \* [sentence missed.]

(Mr. J.: What place in Indiana?)

I don't know. I will get it if I can.<sup>108</sup> [Pause.] Well, do you like him?

(Yes.) Honest? (Yes, can't help it.) Why? (He is interested in the work.)

[Sitter left room.] Where is he going? [Pause and no reply by me.] Well, it won't go on just the same as if he stayed.

(No.)

Well, Indiana is where the lady lives. (Yes.) And where she is buried too. (Yes.) Isn't that a pretty good thing to get through. I was just going to ask questions when he went out. Do you know if he is a lawyer?

(Yes.)

She showed me a lot of papers and a desk and a lot of things, just like a law business. I guess he is mad.

(No, he is not.) What did he go for? (He thought the sitting was over and that he should let you come back.)

Well, he made a mistake. She would have got more things if he had stayed. [Pause.] Well, [pause] Hm. [Pause.] A lot of people here. I guess I'll go. I think Bennie was named for somebody, do you know?

(I don't know.)

You ask if it is some one in the spirit he is named for. Do you know if he is connected with Harvard College in any way?

(I don't know, but will find out.)

Has he got anybody there connected with him? (I don't know.)

---

<sup>108</sup> Note that the name "Bennie" is given correctly this time when the control is better. After writing the note just quoted in reference to his wife, Mr. Junot adds:

"Then her mind turns away to Bennie's sudden death far from home, with no one present to help or console, save our friend G—. Then to the cemetery where we laid Bennie, and she loses control. In life she never recovered from these events and it is easy for me to understand why she could not go on. The place was not in Florence nor in Indiana."

Indiana was mentioned in the subliminal and there is no reason in the context for supposing that it was intended as in any way connected with the place of the cemetery.

All right. Goodbye. (Goodbye.) [Pause.] He ought to know who that Florence is. [Pause, sigh and awakened.]<sup>109</sup>

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mr. Junot. November 19th, 1913. 9 A. M.  
[Subliminal.]

[Sitter admitted. Long pause. Slight distress.] You would think I would be seeing some beautiful things in the air, wouldn't you.

(Yes.)

Well I don't. I am seeing something that would make you laugh. I just see some hands and grass and a piece of land, and some one walking around picking up bags and grass. Isn't that funny. [smile] Do you know this boy that comes here?

(Yes.)

Well, I don't mean your boy. (I know.) There seems to be a little picture in connection with him as if it were a bit of past experience, but I only get a glimpse of the foreground. He is a dear boy. He is winsome, not too smart. You understand what I mean.

(Yes.)

He is bright. I mean that he is kind always. He is not one that knows too much and thinks it smart to say funny things. He is not like that. He is a handsome boy. There's a ... [pause] Wait just a minute. [Pause.] Do you know if anything was the matter with his head? When he went away? In spirit?

(Mr. J.: Yes.)

I find his head throbbing and aching and so hot.

(Mr. J.: Yes.)

And you know there were moments of consciousness and unconsciousness. Oh it is not consciousness. I have a strange pressure clear down to the throat. He belongs to the man because he don't move from the place I first saw him, but he had a little coat or jacket, more like a school coat, something like a Norfolk jacket rather loosely on him. He takes something out of his pocket. If I can see what it is. It is something his father gave him and it is rather long somewhat like

<sup>109</sup> Mr. Junot's old home was in Indiana and it was used as a summer place often. Reference to the place had been made before. Mr. Junot is a lawyer, but is not connected with Harvard College. Mrs. Chenoweth knew nothing of the fact.

At the close of a sitting with Mrs. L. M. Chamberlaine, Nov. 6, 1924, I being the sitter, asked, *à propos* the present volume, then in proof sheets:

(Who was Bennie named for?)

[Spoke:] Back further. Back further. Back further. Oh, [reached for pencil which I gave, she automatically wrote:] great grandfather's brother. [Note: L. M. C. had not said this, but only written it, my first experience with her of any such manifestation. I read the words aloud.] Back, back, way back. (I see.) [No present means of verification. Not named for his father, we know.—G. O. T.]

a whistle by the way he puts it in his mouth. I would have thought it was a knife, but it was in an upper pocket, more like a whistle.

(Mr. J.: What did he do with it?)

He takes it out and it is suggestive of a whistle by the way he puts it in his mouth.<sup>110</sup>

(Mr. J.: What music did he make with it? Can you hear what tune he plays?)

He laughs as you ask that. It is a boyish laugh and he just wants to hug you. Wait just a moment until I can hear that. I don't hear very well. [Pause.] Yes [pause] I am afraid I can't answer you.

(Mr. J.: Did he play it for Dad?)

Yes, it seems as if it were especially for you. First it seemed as if the picture was for you and he called for you. I see you appear and he laughs. He can do it \* \* [note illegible]. He is quite active. The boy is full of life. I want to get something but \* \* \* \* \* [notes illegible.]

(Mr. J.: Do you hear what he says?)

Not very well. He is anxious to do it. I see him walk over in his \* \* [word illegible]. Are you bald headed?

(Mr. J.: Yes.)

Well, then I do see you. [Had never seen sitter normally.] I saw him walk over to this man. He is not tremendously bald, but has some hair on. He has got very pretty fingers. They are almost like a girl's hands. He laughs and says 'When they are clean.'

(Mr. J.: What did he say?)

When they are clean. He laughed when I said they were pretty. I guess you missed him all right. But you know his ... Hm. Do you know any one named Fred that he knew?

(Mr. J.: No.)

It sounds like Fred. Possibly it is Ned or Ted. It has the "ed" sound at the end. Don't you know?

(Mr. J.: No.)

Well, I think that is funny. [Pause.] There is a man with him.

(Mr. J.: Who is it?)

[Pause.] It is his grandfather.

(Mr. J.: Which grandfather?)

[Pause.] I'll see. [Pause.] If I tell what he looks like will that help?

(Yes.)

---

<sup>110</sup> The reference here to a whistle is evidently to the mouth organ which was mentioned in the communications through Mrs. Piper and was a favorite instrument of Bennie, the boy here indicated.

Well, he is not as big as you are. I think he is a little darker man, medium height, a little gray, but not very. He must have had rather dark brown hair. His shoulders stooped a little, but kind looking, very alert and bright in his way, but the man . . . Oh just a minute. The man must have gone out awful quick. Do you know anything about that?

(Mr. J.: No.)<sup>111</sup>

Perhaps I had better go along. (All right.) I will give you a cramp won't I? [Pause.] Was that a harmonica he had?<sup>112</sup>

(Mr. J.: Yes. Ask him what tune he played for Dad.)

[Smile and pause.] I have asked him. He heard you and I am trying to hear. [Pause.] Hm. [Pause.]

(Mr. J.: Ask him to sing it and then you can hear it better.)

Do you think I would know it if I heard it?

(Mr. J.: Oh, yes.)

[Pause.] It isn't Yankee Doodle, is it?

(You tell.)

It sounds quick \* \* [word missed] It sounds like that to me. [Pause.] You know that boy could get lots of things through if I could stay. (Yes.) but I . . . [Pause.] Goodbye. (Goodbye.) Goodbye Mr. Indiana.

(Mr. J.: Goodbye, come again.)

I thought you were mad with me when you went off yesterday.

(Mr. J.: Oh, no, I thought you were through.)

I am not afraid any more. [Pause.]

(Mr. J.: Do you see the boy still?)

Yes, but he is fading away a little.

(Mr. J.: What is the color of his hair?)

[Pause and reached for pencil and wrote:] Reddish brown.<sup>113</sup>

[Pencil fell and pause when hand again reached for pencil.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

Dear Dad I am here with it.

(Mr. J.: Yes, sweet heart. Go on.)

<sup>111</sup> Mr. Junot was not able to identify, as the text shows, any of the names and relationships mentioned here. There is no reason to consider Ned or Fred mistakes for the real names of the grandfathers.

<sup>112</sup> "Harmonica" is the correct name of the instrument referred to above as a "whistle." It came here spontaneously and not from suggestion.

<sup>113</sup> Indiana had been the birthplace of the sitter and Mrs. Chenoweth obtained this without any hint or suggestion from the sitter and the present subliminal allusion to it represents a spontaneous one.

In regard to the statement that the boy's hair was "reddish brown," Mr. Junot says: "It was yellow, but of such shade that 'reddish brown' is about right."



and tried to do what you asked. I have so much to tell you from Mamma and all the others. They are all ready to do just what I do when I get a chance. I am glad I am not kept away. I will go with you and help you yes we always help you when you need us. I have more to tell you about the past and a whole lot of things I want to tell you about. \* \* how well we [?] over here. I was glad when she came but I was sorry for you. It seems funny that we cannot all be in one place together but she is glad we can see you and hear you and so have a life that is partly with you. I know who plays now for you not what I played but a bigger thing.

(Mr. J.: Yes, Bennie, you are right.)

and I am there sometimes and glad you have some one to do things for you for you are always doing something for some of us.

I [pause] want to tell about something else not hens but something alive animal.

(All right.)

small animal. [cough and struggle.] Col [N. R., but evidently intended for 'cat'] [Struggle.] cat cat Cat [read 'col' and 'cal'] not kittie. [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause and P. F. R.] you know what I had a [Pause and pencil fell and picked up.] pet pet. Dad a pet [pause] a cat \* \* cattle. [Indian and pause.] I have not written what I want to write but I will get it I thing—[think.] [Pencil thrown and fingers began clutching about in the air, showing that Jennie P. was coming.]

[Change of Control.]

(Mr. J.: Bennie . . . .) (Jennie P. is coming.) [Three pencils rejected.]

Good morning I want to say just a word for the dear little lad who is trying to reach [N. R.] his . . . reach . . . father with some specific [read 'special'] specific evidence. He has been talking with his mother about various things they would do to make good evidence for him but I tell you the matter that is on their minds the most is their deep and unchanged [read 'undying'] unchanged love and a desire to be a part of the household where they belong. I se [see] the boy often and his sports and studies for he moves on much as if he had stayed with you. There is always a desire on his part to do everything just as *you* [underscored] do it. It was quite [N. R.] marked . . . quite marked before he left you that desire to be just like you. He is indeed your own little son. I say little in the sense of an endearing term [N. R.] for . . . term for he has grown since coming here.

Your wife [N. R.] wife is as happy as you can [read 'are' and not corrected.] imagine [N. R.] over ... [?] imagine.

I am writing in a fearful rush to keep the influence from lagging [N. R.] lagging as I have two or three things which I am commissioned [N. R.] commissioned [N. R.] Com m i s s i o n e d to say. One is a word about the living daughter. She is all right and under [N. R.] the personal care ... under ... of her mother. It was sad to leave her just when she needed the directive [delay in reading.] influence ... di ... [read] of a mother perhaps as never before but still her sensitive and mediumistic [delay in reading] medium ... [read] make up [read 'nature'] make up helped the mother to use a directive influence from this side and that is in a measure true about the rest of you but especially the girl.

Do you know anything about kites [N. R.] kites yes kites flying kites.

(Mr. J.: No.)

Was the little boy interested in kites.

(Mr. J.: No.)

He shows me a picture of something like a box which has cloth [read 'dark'] or cloth [N. R.] cloth or paper sides over the frame and the light shows through. It looks like a box kite or a thing that could have a light put into it for some purpose. It is half a toy [N. R.] toy and half for a boy's business [N. R.] of some sort ... business of some sort. Do you not know what it is.

(Mr. J.: No.)

Think again for he is quite persistent about it. Did he have anything to do with photographs.

(Mr. J.: Yes, he used to photograph.)

Did he have a thing arranged [N. R.] thing arranged for a light [N. R.] light. It is possible that is [it] [pause when read] is a an arrangement for light in developing. Do you know anything about that.<sup>114</sup>

(Mr. J.: No.)

Find out then for this is something of his own manufacture. He had a way of making a thing when he could not get it at hand [N. R.] hand. I mean he [read 'the'] often ... he [tapped when I did not read.] he often improvised things and ways and means to accomplish what he wanted to do.

---

<sup>114</sup> The reference to taking pictures explains itself and as no comment is made by Mr. Junot to explain why it is pertinent, no further comments can be made by myself.

I am also here to see if I can fix that matter of a trip which was spoken of by the wife yesterday.

(All right.)

but I find her so . . . her so anxious to get the pencil I shall have to give up I think. Was there a pet cat—in the family.

(Mr. J.: No, not remembered.)<sup>115</sup>

I think it was some time ago. Here is this lady. Here is this lady—I go but I assure you I will do all I can now and always to help these two dear ones of a good man to return to him. You see I make a distinction [N. R.] and call him . . . distinction and call him a good *man* [underscored twice.] but I am in the presence of his own defenders and would really like to tell him exactly [N. R.] the way . . . exactly the way I look at him. [P. F. R.] J. P.

(Mr. J.: Thanks, thanks.)

[Change of Control.]

Darling if I can come to you on the increased power of the preceding one I am sure to do so. Although I have not done half that I planned to do still I am most happy to get this intimate touch with you and I feel that I am doing beter [better] than ever before.

(Mr. J.: Yes, sweet heart, go on.)

It is a great relief to be able to come without the old tangled feeling as if I were all in a tangle I mean, and while I thought I should be able to tell you about the song the lullaby that you asked for I find that my strong desire desire keeps [keeps] me from it. I cannot tell you how wonderful it all seems as wonderful as when we first got an idea of the life over here but it is far more real than I ever had an idea of and when I first came the change was not dreadful at all. It was a disappointment to leave so much for you to do alone but still I do not think you have been alone. I like to give some semblance of unity [N. R.] to . . . unity to my work or I would now and then drop in a word that might mean something but I would rather [rather] wait [wait] until I can make it all clear.

Do you remember a game a game I played with the children.

(Mr. J.: No.)

Something [superposed] Something we played together if I could only tell you not a romping game but a house game.

(Can you . . . .) [Writing went on.]

cards not cards not whist but cards of another kind. [Indian and struggle.] yes cards with names and letters.

<sup>115</sup> Of the reference to a pet cat, Mr. Junot says: "We had lots of cats during the childhood of our children, but Bennie took no interest in them."

(See if you can give the name at all hazards.)

\* \* [probably meant for 'S'] S p e l l i o [or attempt at 'ed']  
[P. F. O.] \* \* ['N' or part of 'M'] It is just here I lose when I  
try to think. It is so exasperating.

(Just spell the name a letter at a time.)

P [read 'S'] P [effort to erase first one] P is right. P [Oh  
dear! Oh dear! uttered] P [Oh dear! uttered] P P [pause and P.  
F. R. and long pause again.]

L [pause] i e d L i e b m e i n [read 'man'] m e i n. [Pause.] J a  
[pause] c [N. R.] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

J a c [N. R.] J a c o \* \* [scrawl probably for 'b'] J a c o b.  
(Now tell who the Jacob is.)<sup>116</sup>

[Pause.] J a c o b. [Long pause.]<sup>117</sup> \* \* [scrawl.] [P. F. R.]  
Talk to me. Call me your sweetheart again.

(Yes, Kate, you always were my sweetheart and always will be.)  
[Cf. 'Adieu' or 'Kate,' Nov. 17.—G. O. T.]

It helps me I cannot live without your love any better now than  
before. It is the one joy always dearest. You could have done nothing  
more to keep me. I will be \* \* [Pencil fell and hand relaxed, refus-  
ing to take it again. Pause.]

(*Auf Wiedersehen*, not goodbye, but *Auf Wiedersehen*.)

[*Subliminal*.]

---

<sup>116</sup> The name Jacob has no significance for Mr. Junot. He says that there is no Jacob in any of "our families or among any of our friends." I would only add to his statement that I can quite understand how the mistake occurred, as Mr. Junot's real name has a very clear and easy association with Jacob, though it has no phonetic resemblance to it. I have no specific proof of the view which explains it easily, but my experience with this subject and the devices for getting names would suggest the possibility that the attempt to give the name resulted in this associated Jacob.

The incident about the cards is an excellent one, the meaning of which did not come to Mr. Junot at the time. But he explains the fact in the following letter and note:

"At the sitting I was stupid and did not recall or understand. The game which she played with the children with cards was called 'Anagrams.' She played it a very great deal with our children when they were confined to the house. I had forgotten about it, but remembered it fully after the sitting. That is, I remembered the frequent playing of the game and not its name. That came instantly from Noble when he saw the records. The game was played with cards upon which letters were printed and these were used to make up words, etc."

<sup>117</sup> To me it is apparent that the name Jacob is an attempt to get the real name of Mr. Junot, though there is no similarity between Jacob and his real name except in the "J" and its associations with one that I shall not here mention for fear of revealing its identity. [The "anagram" game is suggestive though not exactly pertinent in this association.—G. O. T.]

Goodbye. [Reached hand for sitter and shook it goodbye.] Is it the State Capitol?

(What do you mean?)

Does he go to the State Capitol?

(Mr. J.: Not now.)

By and bye, yes, by and bye.

(Mr. J.: No.)

Yes, by and bye.<sup>118</sup> Goodbye. (Goodbye.) Sorry I can't stay any longer. Goodbye, Mr. Indiana.

(Mr. J.: Goodbye.)

I hope you will be happy.

(Mr. J.: Thanks, and you too.)

Well, yes I am. [Began rubbing her eyes and sitter left and Mrs. C. awakened in a few moments.]

# Chapter X, Series VI, Nov. 24, 25, 26, 1913

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

November 24th, 1913. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sigh and cough. Long pause.] Hm. [uttered in half distress. Pause. Hand rolled a little and pencil given. Long pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

\* \* [scrawl.] My lonely [N. R.] \* \* [scrawls.]

("My" what?)

My lonely household waits in vain [read 'turn']

For my returning feet . . . vain . . .

And yet my ears [read 'cars'] ears [read 'cars'] Ears still catch the strain

Of laughter low and sweet.

The days and hours of other years

Like odors from afar

Illume the mists [read 'nests'] mists of falling tears.

Give to Death's night a star.

The past still lives in memory. [Pause.]

<sup>118</sup> Mr. Junot has been at the State Capitol, but I think the allusion here is to his son, who was at this time a member of the Legislature and had frequently to be at the State Capitol. Mr. Junot evidently misunderstood the expression "By and bye," when he answered "No" to it. [Sitter now deceased, and reference cannot be verified.—G. O. T.]

It weaves a mystic shroud  
 And wraps the soul in ecstasy  
 As hides [read 'heeds'] the . . hides the sun [read 'sin,' not noting  
     that 'u' was made as usually.] in . .  
 As hides the sun in cloud.

No naked dazzling brilliant orb  
 Of perfect senn [pause] sun of day  
 The soul of man but half revealed  
 Wh... [?] By shadowy memories play

Still seek I those who knew [read 'know'] knew me well  
 Who caught the [pause] whilom gleam  
 Of . . . [Hand pulled down as it threatened to superpose writing.]  
 Of soul [N. R.] soul that chanced awhile to dwell [N. R.] dwell  
 [Long pause]

In earth's uncertain dream  
 [Struggle to retain control and P. F. R. twice.] I . . .  
 (Stick to it.)

[Pause and struggle with scrawls.] I ha \* \* \* \* \*

(Stick to it. I want to know what that is.) [I had seen two letters  
 of the name I wanted, as I saw no meaning in the poetry and wanted to  
 get the name to know if the person was communicating that I wanted.  
 The sequel showed that the two letters were of 'have.']\*<sup>119</sup>

I have tried to write and it is so difficult but I am still here my  
 friend.

(I understand and I shall help all I can and it will be exceedingly  
 important to have you make clear just who you are. I must know this  
 at all hazards, but you can take your time at that.)

[Pause.] I he... [read 'hear'] you and will strive. [P. F. R.  
 and pause.] I am [pause] C \* \* [straight line] C C \* \* [both  
 'C' and scrawl make a capital 'N,' but not so intended.] d C \* \*  
 [scrawl] S C E d [Pause.] E C S [started to make 'D' and  
 quickly turned it into 'S'] E C S E [P. F. R.] E C S. [P. F. R.]

<sup>119</sup> The sequel showed that the originator of this poetry was Edmund Clarence Stedman, who had died some months before this time. I had met him once and he was slightly interested in this subject, but, like most literary men of that kind, could not understand the triviality of the messages. Mrs. Chenoweth, of course, had heard of the man and knew of his death, but had not read his poetry. Examination of his published poems showed that there was none in them from which this could have been reproduced. I did not decipher his name until I came to copy the record, so that the note at the end represents my ignorance, at the time, of the identity of the communicator. It will be seen how far off the mark for Mrs. Chenoweth as well as myself was the conjecture of its source at the time.

(I do not know what E. C. S. means.)

[Pause.] X an unknown quantity.

(Well, I came wishing that a certain person should appear today and I wish to know if that person is here.)

I am here.

(Well, I need to have some sign that it is this person.)

I am not the one you seek. E. C. S. those letters belong to me and the rhyme belongs to me and as you repeated the letters E. C. S. it sounded like X and [Indian and distress] that gave rise to X and unknown quantity for I am unknown to you and only came as guest who might sometime send a message and here I am about as befogged as a London morning. I am not a London resident however but am American [pause] American [pause] to the last degree. I am sorry if I have hindered your morning effort. I did not intend to do so but got to [too] near in a dreamy sort of style before I knew it.

(I understand and if you can make clear who you are it will make no difference.)

[Pause.] man man man [Groan, P. F. R. twice and Indian.]

[Pause.] S. S. S of New York. [Indian and pause.] New York

(I do not know what the S can possibly be for.)

for me my name.

(Yes, I suppose that, but that means nothing.)

You are coldly [N. R.] coldly [coldly] and brutally frank but I suppose it is true that you are obliged to be so. Edmund C [distress and struggle.]

(Stick to it. Don't stop.)

[New pencil given. Pause and P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

C E [N. R. and pencil tapped.] E C S \* \* [probably or possibly 'ta']

[Hand stretched out for help and I found it cataleptic. I rubbed it until it relaxed and there was a long pause when hand reached for pencil and I gave it.]

W. D. H. knew me and Kate Kate [N. R.] Kate brought me.<sup>120</sup>

<sup>120</sup> From the above note it is apparent that "E. C. S." are the initials of Mr. Stedman, and probably the word "man" repeated twice was intended for the last part of the name, as the passage about the man from London probably shows a reference to *Stead*, which, in sound, is the first part of "Stedman's" name, as can be seen. The supposition that I was expecting Stead is wrong, as that is implied in the contents of the message. But it may explain what went on in the subconsciousness of Mrs. Chenoweth and why she recalled Miss Stead after recovering normal consciousness. Phonetically there was everything in the syllable "Sted" to recall him to the subconscious and that may have been the reason for the difficulty of getting it easily and correctly at once.

[Pencil fell and Mrs. C. moaned 'Oh my! Oh my!' Long pause and pencil reached for and given.]

[Change of Control.]

It is all right will tell you more another time.

(All right.)

One of those things that happened without planning but the friend you want I think will come tomorrow.

(By all means.)

Yes this friend was brought by Kate Field who has long wished to have him come. She is quite an ardent missionary and enthuses many whom she believes may help [help] the work to recognition.

(I understand.)

It is the journalistic instinct strong in heaven she says since there is no death and the old adage cannot properly be used. [Pencil fell. Hand relaxed and head fell forward. Long pause.]

[Subliminal.]

Oh dear. Oh dear. [Pause, cough and reached for my hand and pause again.]

Do you know any one named Henry? <sup>121</sup>

(Henry who?)

I don't know. Were you expecting to hear from any one named Henry?

(No, not that I know of. It depends on whom you mean.)

[Pause.] Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

[Pause and awakened.]

I had placed a hat band on the table that had belonged to a former communicator so that I might have him come and was very anxious that he should. Telepathy should have brought him at once. The whole of the present sitting has no meaning to me, and hence immediately after it I asked Mrs. Chenoweth if she knew any one with initials "E. C. S." connected with Kate Field, whose connection with Miss Whiting Mrs. Chenoweth well knew, and she replied that she did not know any such person, tho she suggested Miss Stead. But she also added that Miss Stead's middle initial was "W," and this cuts out a

---

"W. D. H." are the initials of Mr. Howells, who was a friend of Stedman's, a fact not known by Mrs. Chenoweth, as also the fact that Mr. Stedman was a friend of Kate Field, who is said to have brought him here. She knew that Kate Field was a journalist.

<sup>121</sup> The name Henry is not intelligible in this connection.



possible reference to her, tho Miss Whiting had been staying in the same hotel with Miss Stead in New York. She returned to Boston last night and I was told the fact by Mrs. Chenoweth, so that both of us agree that, on any theory, this might have caused the diversion of the day.

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

November 25th, 1913. 10 A. M.

[*Borderland.*]

Mrs. C. closed her eyes and opened them to tell me that she saw, as soon as she had closed them, an oak door with a gray opaque glass in it and that it was like an office down-town, and had a name painted on it. She could not read it. She seemed to be inside and saw the name written backward.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Article placed on table. Long pause, hand rolled a little, Indian and pause for some time when hand reached for pencil.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

\* \* [Pause and P. F. R.] \* \* [Indian.] Wil ... [Purposely not read, as it was not name of person wanted.] I am h... [pause] trying [read by following pencil, as it was superposing.] to get hold

(Yes, go on, I shall help.)

and come to you for help.

(Thank you, I shall give all I can.)

So little you can do.

(Perhaps I can lend you energy, if you can take it from me.) [I placed my hand on medium's arm.]

[Pause.] I see. [Indian.] I am so anxious to do what I am expected to do.

(What are you expected to do?)

Report here and give what I can of another time and [pause] form [N. R.] form of communication.

(Good, stick to it.)

[Indian. Mrs. C. placed her own hand against her throat a moment.] and the memories must be clear and unevasive [N. R.]

(What?)

unevasive. [P. F. R.] (Good.) all the crux of the experiment is in that word unevasive.

(All right. Go ahead.)

[Pause.] I have been back to the old place and [P. F. R.] Dying Dying [written with difficulty.]

(Let me see if I can be told who is present communicating.)

[Indian and pause.] I am J [N. R. and pause.] J \* \* [scrawl and pause.] \* \* [scrawl.] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.) [P. F. R.] (Stick to it.)

[Long pause.] \* \* [pencil broke and new one given.] \* \* [part of 'W' made] F F F F [P. F. R. Indian.] F r [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

F Fr W F is what I want to write first.

(Do you mean that F is a letter in your own name?)

No not that.

(All right. Go ahead.)

It is another whom I have with me here. My letter is different. J H [pause] \* \* [resembles 'C,' but probably not intended for this.]

(Who was it I wanted to come here today? Can you tell from my mind?)

not me. Let me see a mo ... [erased.] man I am thinking of whom you wanted.

(Yes, tell me who it is when you can.)

yes and he could not come [Pause.]

(Why was that?)

[Pause.] yesterday because another got in ahead of him. [Pause.] I am he whom you expected yesterday. You know who it is.

(I know whom I am thinking of but need more on paper to be sure.)

Same old story more and more and I know why for I have an appreciation of the effort and am as eager as you to do the thing expected. There is something about a past that is giving me some [groan.] who spoke.

(The light groaned a little.)

[Pause.] the light is far away how could that be.

(Perhaps I should have said the body of the light.)

[Pause.] I must look that up later. Do you know anything about the letter W.

(It means nothing to me.)

but to me it does not my name but one with me and I want to write an A [P. F. R.] [Indian.] A for a living friend. If I could only write my own name it would help so much. S ...

(Yes, and if I had your name before I came to this sitting, I could have called for you by name and saved all this trouble, but I cannot tell where the message comes from unless I either know who you are or to whom you send it.)

I understand all that, (All right.) and it has no effect on me except perhaps to puzzle me a little about my pocedure [procedure]

\* \* [scrawl] I tell you I am a man that I have been before at another place that I have planned to come here that I have friends who are most anxious to have me return. That I was not ill very long but still [read 'I tell'] still long noug . . enough to understand that the end was near. I have a number of people who are most ready to her [so read doubtfully] to hear from me. Do you not know who I am.

(No, I do not have the slightest idea of who you are.)

Did you expect me.

(I can't tell unless I have some evidence of your identity.)

[Pause, P. F. R. and long pause.] J [P. F. R.] I [or 'J'] \* \* ('a-s-t'?)

J [Pencil fell and hand clutched in Jennie P.'s manner.] <sup>122</sup>

[Change of Control.]

[One pencil rejected.] I would like to help but this spirit is too independent for any of us to do anything. I don't want you to think that [N. R.] I am . . . that I am holding [N. R.] h olding back when I might add some power but this seems to be a case where I must let the poor man work out his own salvation. He is all right only he does not seem to realize that when he keeps still to think out what he wants to write the energy is being used with the same degree as if he were writing and the time passes and he is left without the word he wished to write.

(Now it is awfully important, after all that has been done this morning, that I should get some hint of who it was.)

Yes of course it is and if he had laid [N. R.] less . . . laid [N. R.] put less stress on geting [getting] his name it would probably have come through but he started out with the purpose of telling his own

<sup>122</sup> It had been my desire to get Mr. T., who had died on the Titanic, at the sitting the day before, when Mr. Stedman came, showing how little reading my mind had to do with the result. It is the same with the first communicator today. I did not have the least conception of who it was or could be until I saw what might be the letters "ast" and then the "J" became perfectly intelligible and would be correct for the person evidently intended by the controls. He, too, had died on the Titanic and his wife had had three sittings just at the close of the season in the previous spring. But his name did not come and nothing that would lead clearly to his identity, though his name came in the subliminal at the first sitting of this season as explained in Note 7. Much later he became a very good communicator. It is probable that the initials "W" and "A" belong together and if so they are especially pertinent as referring to a person mentioned again under these initials. He is living and figures in the episode which was of special interest to the sitter.

"Fr" are letters in his son's name and his own initials are "J. B.," not "J. H." But there is no evidence in either case that the persons I have mentioned are intended.

name never realizing that the message would reveal his identity in as [read 'it'] as definite a way as the written name but I will tell you a little if I may and he may return a little later if possible. Any way he will do better next time.

There is a lady alive who is of much interest to him and also a group of men I say group because it is a body of men who are interested in the same things which interest him and he has a vivid [read 'ward'] [Pause.] great desire to send to one of them his message from here. Do you know anything about a man whose name begins with R. who would be interested in him.

(No, I do not, but I wish he would say who the living lady is.)

I am not sure whether it is his wife or daughter but it is near and dear like a close relative. It is just possible that it is his mother although there is no evidence that she is an old lady. I should think she was a woman still in her youthful interests in everything which pertains to life and she is not very near here. Perhaps that might be inference from her absence but whichever it is I let it go as something I feel as I write.<sup>123</sup>

(Let him tell where she is.)

You mean across the water or a long distance by land.

(Tell which it is.)

Long distance by land I think for I hear [N. R.] hear the noise and rush of train and would [N. R.] hardly hear ... would hardly ... that if it were an [N. R.] an ocean voyage but whatever the distance ... *the* [underscored] distance that he easily bridges with his thought and returns as easily as if it were down stairs. He had no right to pass away just when he did. I am talking of his dying now.

(Yes, tell how he came to his death and I shall know who it is.)

Very suddenly and unexpected and a sort of a tragedy in connection with it and one that always calls [N. R.] for ... calls ... comment [N. R.] comment like How dreadful or something of that sort. It was not so much of a shock to him as to those left because it was all over so soon but the shock was in the awakening when he found his plans [read 'pains' and pencil tapped and I still read 'pains' tho this was a guess.] and ... plans were broken and his hopes mutilated. I use [delay in reading] use that word mutilated for the first time in connection with hopes but it is the most expressive word I know of in connection with his spirit.

(Tell where he died.)

---

<sup>123</sup> Jennie P. tried to give some account of the communicator and while the conjecture regarding his daughter or mother is wrong, the statements fit his wife, who is a young woman. The initial R seems to have no meaning for the absent sitter.

Don't you see I am not taking [so read] talking with him. I am *inferring* [underscored] so much from his attitude and presence and anxiety. I wanted to clear the way a little for him to tell the things himself. For that seems to be his determination. You know very well Hurricane that I will always do just the best I can but there are still some things involved in the communications which I cannot overcome with all my independence and if I with [N. R.] all my ... with ... practice and fearlessness [N. R.] fearlessness have to call you down for asking to [too] many questions what about a spirit who at best [N. R.] at best is learning to write and think at the same time but I am sure with his very strong magnetic power and his great love for her [read 'the' and pencil tapped till corrected.] he will get some things through the next time.<sup>124</sup>

Do you know anything about a P— in connection with him.

(No, I don't.)

I think it is the name ... I ... a ... [evidently substituted for 'the' above.] name connected closely with him and it sounds so much like Pete or Peter as if it were half a joke and half serious [serious].

I will leave it for another time. There is also a suggestion of a struggle in the death a short quick struggle and all over. I [hand pulled down to prevent superposing.] I must go now and I feel that he will do better tomorrow.

It is dreadful to keep you waiting for so long a time for the things you want to get.

Just now I see a great fire and the sky is filled with smoke and I see flames flames [Not read either time: first time looked like 'fanes' and second time 'fames'] flames mounting high. It is a dreadful conflagration. Do you know anything about that.

(Do you mean it was connected with his death?)

I do not know but just as I was about to throw down the pencil I saw this picture [read 'mixture'] of ... picture of a great fire and I saw him in the midst of it but whether that was the cause of his death or whether experience I cannot now tell. I will try and find [N. R.] out ... find out when I talk with him after I leave the body—.

---

<sup>124</sup> The person whom I wanted is not clearly hinted at here. His wife, who is living, was not at a distance across the land, but at a distance across the water, so that Jennie P. was wrong. The wife of the previous communicator was at a distance across the land, and there may still be confusion here in Jennie P.'s mind as to who the communicator is or should be. What causes this confusion we cannot yet conjecture, but later statements rather indicate that a communicator leaves some sort of conditions which his successor has difficulty with in attempting to communicate. Cf. Note 106.

The allusion to his death as causing a great shock would fit both persons.

You know me all right but still I sign my name Whirlwind. [Pencil fell and long pause.] <sup>125</sup>

[*Subliminal.*]

I just saw a picture of Jesus. [Pause.] It was like a mural decoration, you know. [Pause.] It was just like his arms were spread out in blessing and [pause] Hm. [pause.] I get two passages mixed up. One is "Suffer little children" and the other is "The Lord is my shepherd." That must be what they said at the the funeral. <sup>126</sup>  
[Pause.] Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

[Hand reached for mine and I took it.] What makes your hand so cold?

(I don't know.)

I'm hot. I guess you must have been giving up energy.

(Yes.)

Hm. [Pause, cough, pause again and awakened.]

Before the sitting Mrs. C. told me she had seen a psychic yesterday and this psychic asked her if she did not have a sitting with me that day. On an affirmative reply the psychic asked her if I did not tell her about the sitting. Mrs. C. replied in the negative, which was true only in an equivocal sense, and the psychic repeated the question in surprise, when Mrs. C. evaded it by saying that I never told her about the sittings. The psychic then thought it strange because she said she got that I had told her about it and then Mrs. C. admitted that I had said

<sup>125</sup> The letter "P" is the initial of the city in which Mr. T., whom I wanted, had his office, and "Pete" or "Peter" might have been a poor mistake for a part of it, though we should not expect it from the usual phonetics of names. The short struggle at death would fit both.

The inquiry whether there was any meaning in the reference to a fire was not answered by the sitter. Evidently it recalled nothing. Nor is the initial P explained, unless it refer to the pet name of his living daughter, which it is, as the person is said to be "close to him." It is "Peggie," for which "Pete" or "Peter" may be an error.

<sup>126</sup> This reference to Jesus is not intelligible to me. But if it, with the allusion to the first line of the Twenty-third Psalm, is from my father, it is an attempt to do what I had suggested long ago, when I quoted this line to see if the psalm would be completed. But there is nothing in the passage to prove that there is any such intention, and I refer to it more for its possible subconscious liabilities than because it may be any such conjecturable interpretation. I have no evidence that it is such a subliminal attempt, any more than I have for its being my father. But from my familiarity with this work I should say that, whether subconscious or spiritistic, it has some meaning which is not determinable. There is no reason to connect it with the desired communicator, nor with the one who first came.

Mrs. T. had visited Mlle. Hélène Smith and seen some of her pictures of Christ, but there is no evidence that this is meant by the allusion in this instance.

something about it, but added that I had never done so before, which is correct. The psychic then went on to say that a man had wanted to communicate but that he was crowded out by another, and she said he was a young man. This was true compared with Stedman's age.

The automatic writing today, until Jennie P. came, was extraordinarily difficult and slow, and the communicator was utterly unable to make anything clear. There was no excuse for this from the point of telepathy, as it was all very clear in my mind as to whom I wanted and what I wanted to know.

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

November 26th, 1913. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Article put on table. Long pause.] Oh yes. [Struggle of hand rolled in fist to write. Pencil reached for and given. Broken, and new one given. Fell and old one sharpened and reinserted.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

I am [pause] coming.

(All right.)

[Pause.] I wish to tell her that I am all right all right and that the shock did not affect me as much as it did her. You know how it is. We always have some one who helps us over here and that makes it easier to collect oneself after death. She is brave and strong but shocks are not very easy to get over.

(What will help her?)

Messages from this side and the conviction that it was right that will be the hardest thing to do for she cannot think it right and when faith [N. R.] faith is gone and knowledge does not bring the conviction time is the only help. am I making you understand.

(Perfectly.)

It is so hard to watch one you love lose confidence and [pause] joy and keep the eternal question in mind until the capacity to rightly judge the event is gone. Death must not be torn [N. R.] torn from the context of life. It is and has been for so long that all semblance of its real meaning is lost and with it is lost the meaning and art of living. I am not trying to change the whole world in a moment but I have the subject brought home to me by her attitude and am of course much concerned to make a point. She [read 'The' and hand pointed till corrected.] is very impressionable and in the untrained state these impressions are like [pause] runaway [pause] ideas and hinder more than help

I have sometimes been able to get an impression to her and before I could get the complete and full thought the imaginative [read 'magnetic'] im . . . [read] impulse would set up and all that I tried to do would be scattered [read 'altered,' knowing it wrong] scattered and misconstrued.

I am not suffering. I say that with much reason. If a trained person with protective influences and carefully guarded outposts is hard for us to use what must an untrained and [pause] interested mind be for one to try to get a concrete plan of one's own state and desires impressed upon. [period inserted as a dash.]<sup>127</sup>

(I understand, and if I can do anything I shall be glad to do it and I ask here if you know the contents of this letter in my hand?) [Holding up the letter intended for him and still in envelope.]

In a way yes the spirit of it and the purpose a call for help and light [N. R.] for . . . light— and a yes more than that more than appeal a [pause] suspicion aroused in [read 'on'] you . . . in you I mean of the urgent [read 'regret'] urgent need of the experiment yes and I [underscoring three times] am asked to come and do some. . . .

[Hand showed signs of catalepsy and could not write or hold the pencil correctly. I removed pencil and rubbed hand some time and it began to reach for the pencil which I gave and it wrote with difficulty, the catalepsy tending to return.]

thing yes. [catalepsy again and hand rubbed.]

(Keep calm and you will get it.)

something about it [or 'a'] it [?] \* \* \* \* [writing very difficult and struggle to keep control.] (Wait a moment. Keep calm.) S She She cannot understand how it happened. [P. F. R.] [Pause.] G [pause] G Ge . . . [Indian.]

(Let me ask a question so that you can have time to get calm. You have given the spirit of the letter. Was there a special occasion to which it referred?)

Yes.

(Can you recall it?)

Yes I know and want to tell— \* \* Anvy [N. R.] Anniversary

<sup>127</sup> It was clear to me from the contents of the messages that I had gotten the right communicator this time. No name was given, as the reader will remark, either by myself or by the control. But the whole of the statement about his wife's condition of mind and her shock at his death was only too well revealed in her letters to me; and the medium, of course, knew nothing about them. The desperation of the wife's mind is clearly indicated and there were times when her language in her letters implied a great strain on her religious faith. Her mind wondered a great deal about the question of his happiness and whether he had any sufferings in the effort to communicate with her, as there is evidence that he was influencing her by raps and noises. I have a record of the same.



[read 'unnecessary' doubtfully] anniversary of death no not quite that but anniversary. She knows I could not forget it for we wi [read 'we'] will . . . we always remembered it together.

(Go ahead.)

and I was there with her when she wrote about it. [Indian, struggle to control and P. F. R.] I am not [read 'cannot'] am not gone. I am not gone yet

(I know. Keep calm and wait a moment.)

[Pause.] W . . . [long pause.] she asked me then [N. R.] then for this. you know her and will help I I'm . . . [?] <sup>128</sup>

(Yes, I shall help.)

[Pause.] \* \* [scrawl in waiting.] ask her about the [pause] picture and the [pause] fram[e]

(What picture?) [Allusion to Christ's picture of day before?]  
which she took up and brushed off something which seemed to be behind the glass. [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

I am sometimes grieved to see her \* \* [loneliness?] [Pencil fell.]

(What?) [Pause.] (Did you try to do anything on the date of the anniversary?)

[Pause.] I did and she knew it and wants to be made sure for she is afraid it was [N. R.] it was something else but I was there again later. [Struggle to keep control.] <sup>129</sup>

(Do you know where she is?)

[Pause.] What a fool question. Of course I do.

<sup>128</sup> Mrs. T. had sent me a separate note to him to be used at the sittings as a help, but not to be read to him. She was desirous of seeing if he would allude to the nature of the contents. It was for a sitting on November 9th, for which she had asked without explaining why. The letter was addressed to her deceased husband, but not taken out of the valise in which I had it. I mistook her purpose, which was not sufficiently explained in her letter to me, and read the letter. It was a despairing call for help, as indicated in this message and also alluded to the anniversary of their wedding and birthday. They did always keep it together. G and Ge. are letters for George, who was an intimate friend of the communicator and who died on the same occasion and in the same manner as the communicator. Nothing of this could possibly be known to Mrs. Chenoweth.

<sup>129</sup> This reference to the picture, etc., had no meaning to me, of course, and I did not know its pertinence until I heard from the lady, who was in Europe at the time. Had I known its pertinence I would not have had to press, as I did in a moment, for more definite evidence of the identity of the communicator. After receiving the record she wrote me as follows:

"What he says about the picture frame is splendid. I have ordered a very lovely silver frame in London for this latest photograph, a large one, and it arrived at the clinique on the 8th of November, so that I gave it to him for my anniversary present to him and remember perfectly holding it in my hands and trying to rub off two little black marks from over his face, but found they were *under the glass*, just

(Tell me so that I can be sure who you are and that you are referring to the right person.)

Yes I knew that would come next. across the country from here. [P. F. R.] miles away.

(That only confuses me and does not make matters clear at all.) [I had been told much the same the day before in distinguishing the place from "across the water." I wanted this cleared up without my saying it was erroneous. There is another person "across the country" that I would expect to hear from.]

[Writing begins very heavy and like Jennie P. Above answers suggested her.]

you should [sheet changed] should not have asked me when I could not hold on.

(I understand, but it was awfully important that I should have *some* evidence of who was here and to whom the message was directed. I only had in my mind who it was or might possibly be and there is danger that she herself would doubt the message. That is why I always ask and insist upon this; one or two things that will make it plain to any one who is present and who is meant by such a message.)<sup>130</sup>

[Indian.] I wish I had not tried \* \* \* \* [it at?] [Pencil fell and pause and when reached for again it was given.]

You \* \* Called [?] come [read 'came'] come with an express [written 'epess'] desire to hear from me and I show up [sheet changed] I show up and then I cant [N. R.] do . . . cannot do what I want to and so Im . . . I make it worse. It was bad [read 'all'] enough before. . . It was bad enough before.

(I understand. I think I am personally right in thinking who it is and in fact I feel quite certain about it and it was only to have the

---

as he says in his message, and I frowningly gave it up quite provoked that I couldn't do it and was going to take it apart."

I have since seen the glass myself and the spots are there. The anniversary referred to was on the 9th of November, so that readers will remark that it was two weeks and a day prior to this sitting, which was the first occasion after that date for his effort. Another psychic, a private person and sister of my secretary, got the name of his wife and a reference to Vango, with whom the lady and myself had a sitting in London in the fall while I was in England. Neither my secretary nor her sister knew what it meant, except that my secretary knew the meaning of the allusion to Vango and did not explain it to her sister when she got it, not being present when the references came. This happened on November 9th, the date of the anniversary, when Mrs. T. hoped that I could have a sitting for her. But this had been impossible.

<sup>130</sup> The confusion about the abiding place of the wife to whom his message was directed was not cleared up. The reader can see this for himself. I wanted it said that she was across the water. He still refers to its being "across the country from here," when it was across the water. There is not much mind reading in this!

kind of help which is so necessary to give the conviction which both you and I believe she must have to get the help she needs.)

[Indian.] Is this the only a [pause] chance I am to have.

(No, I mean that you shall have other chances later.)

[Pencil fell and pause.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh my. Oh. [Pause.] Did you say anything about New York?

(No.) [Long pause.] (Get who it was that was here, if you can.)

What do you mean? (. . . .) You mean the name? (Yes.)

Hm. [Pause.] I saw him go out. [Pause.] Do you know about dreams in connection with him?

(No.)<sup>131</sup>

[Pause.] Hh. [Pause.] I see Dr. Hodgson. [Pause.]

(Hodgson, get his name at all hazards.)

[Pause.] Do you want him to give it to me? (Yes.) Well, if he can I'll take it for you. [Long pause.] I suppose you know it do you? (Yes.) [Pause.]

Oh my goodness. [Pause and reached for pencil which was given.] I don't know as I can do it. [Pause.] It isn't the man himself, you know.

(I know.)

[Pause.]

[*Writing and Speaking.*]

E [?]

[Oral.] Go on, you can do it just as easy as anything if you try.

[Pause.] R [Purposely not read.] [Long pause.]

[Oral.] It isn't Charles is it?

(No.)

Is it anything like that? (No.) Do you know Charles? (No.)  
I \* \* \* \* [A sentence missed.] It has nothing to do with what is going on there.

(I understand.)

[Writing.] J [Oral.] put down J [J written.] [P. F. R.]

(Go ahead.)

J [Oral.] What is the reason you let them write when you know I am talking?

<sup>131</sup> The question to ascertain if I knew "about dreams in connection with him" has great interest. The same letter which conveyed the information about the picture frame makes the following statements:

"At the time the messages were sent to you I was quite unhappy and low in spirits from dreams I had that he didn't seem to love or care for me any more and I would wake up crying from them and cry for a long time. Sometimes I do get all at sea and wonder why it happened and whether he can keep on caring for me."

(Go ahead.)

J o . . . J J J J a . . . J a n [read 'm'] e

(J-a-m-e ?)

J a c J a c [Indian.] J a c J a c o . . .

[Oral.] It isn't right. (Go ahead.)

[Written.] J a c o k ['k' quickly superposed on 'o,' erasing it.] Jack J

[Oral.] I don't think I did it right.

[Written.] Jaco [pause before 'o' was written.]

(I think Jack is right and perhaps you can get some of the last name.)

Jack. [Pause.]

[Oral.] I didn't think it was right. Wasn't that funny. I guess they don't tell me, do they?

(No.) [Pause.] [Oral.] I don't care.

[Written.] Jack [Long pause.] Jack M [N. R.] m M M M [Long pause and P. F. R.] Jack M

(What is the 'M' for?)

other [finishing 'Mother'] here Jack [Pencil fell and refused to take it again.] (Finish that.) [Long pause and sigh.]

[*Subliminal.*]

I can't stay any longer. (All right.) [Reached for my hand.] I'm dead. [Pause.] What will my wife do now?

(I hope we can together help her.)

We must. We must. I cry eternally we must. My darling.<sup>132</sup> [Pause and smile.] Hello, Dr. Hyslop. [Starlight.] I had to take him out.

(All right. Do you know what his name is?)

[Pause, sigh and no reply.]

### Chapter XI, Series VII, Dec. 1, 2, 3, 1913

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mr. Hunt. December 1st, 1913. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Cough and long pause. Sitter admitted. Long pause.] Oh. [As if in slight distress. Pause and some sort of exclamation like 'Yah']

<sup>132</sup> The name Jack was wholly wrong for this person, Mr. T., though his name was John. He was never called Jack by any of his family. The "Jacob," which is also wrong, is the second name of the communicator who had intruded at first the day before. His mother is dead, but the mother of Mr. T. is not dead. The intruder Jacob was also called Jack in life.

I see a man I don't know. [Pause.] He is tall and thin and dark hair and dark beard. [Pause.] Oh my! [Pause.] His name is William. Do you know . . . You got an Uncle William? That is who he is. There is something the matter with his head. He is so nervous. There is something the matter with his head. [Long pause and hand reached for pencil. Pause.] <sup>133</sup>

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[Struggle to keep control. P. F. R. Pause.] \* \* [fine lines like effort to write 'm's'] [P. F. R., pause and struggle to keep control and pencil broken. New one given and fist doubled up with difficulty in holding pencil.]

(Wait a moment till you get hold.) [Hand showed difficulty in holding pencil.]

\* \* [scrawls in effort to write and pencil broken in effort to write. New one inserted again.]

E E [Pause and P. F. R.] E \* \* [possibly attempt at 'E'] May [read 'Mary'] I come.<sup>134</sup>

(You are welcome. We shall be patient.)

May [read 'Mary' but clearly 'May'] [P. F. R.] H

(Stick to it.)

May May I come.

(Yes, certainly. You are welcome.)

you are a help or helper. (Yes.) So glad to be here. I am glad to be here. (Yes, we are glad to have you here and when you have learned to hold on well, you can get your message through easily.)

I want to say so much I get so [pause.]

(Excited?) [I had seen this word in similar situations.]

excited but I am not dead (I understand.) not dead at all.

(No, but very much alive.)

Yes not dead but they think I am not all but some of them think I am somewhere around and I am. I was so tired [pause.] at last . [Pause.] you do not see me do you.

(No, I do not see you. All that I get is writing on some paper which must be the evidence that you are present.)

Then it makes a difference what I write.

---

<sup>133</sup> The sitter writes that he has no Uncle William. There is no statement or implication in the record that he has, but the fact should be remarked. As the question is asked of me I must make the same report.

<sup>134</sup> The sitter has made no comment on the capital letter E. There is no indication in the record that it has any significance, but it might be intended for an initial of the communicator or some one helping him. It probably refers to the Aunt Mary mentioned later.

(Yes, it does.)

That scares me for I may write something silly. I feel so bewildered as if my thoughts were flying away with me.

(It makes no difference what comes unless it be little memories of your past life, and if they are trivial they will prove who you are.)<sup>135</sup>

eyes were tired and ached [ached and so read] and could not see at last. [P. F. R. Pause.] F a t h e r.

(All right. Go ahead.)

Father.

(Yes, he wishes to hear from his father.) [I knew this possibility.]

I will try for I am more eager to give him some [P. F. R. and Indian.] thing than he is to have me do so.

(Well, you must . . . .) yes (be eager indeed.)

I have found it so different far [read 'for'] far far different and I would give all to have known before I came here what I know now.

(Yes, can you tell what you thought it would be before you got there?)

yes a glorified state of living not like this. It is glorified too but I did not expect the same sort of activities but I had a sort of comprehension of things here but not so clearly defined.

(Just what exact idea did you have of it before you saw it?)

It did not occur to me to make it a world of pursuit but rather a world of finality. Does that sound vague.

(Yes, a little, as we wish to know just what . . .) [Writing began.] heaven heaven. (Yes, what kind of heaven?) Saints and angels and the [distress] days of righteous [P. F. R. and Indian.] judgment. [P. F. R.]

(Go ahead.)

and so much that has proved at least to be another state if it ever comes. I was not a Catholic but if I had been I should have thought I had reached Purgatory with its purgatorial blisses and pains but even that idea would have been quickly banished by the definiteness and orderliness of the people and pursuits. Not all are troubling themselves about return for they have family groups reunited and are at

<sup>135</sup> I made the admission so promptly because of a guess that the sitter's father would account for the reference, tho Mrs. Chenoweth had not seen him and did not know even that a sitter was present, as I never inform her of this. The interesting feature of the message is his ignorance of the nature of the communicating. Mrs. Chenoweth knows normally well enough that it is writing on a pad, and hence it is quite natural for a spirit who probably does not even know that he is using a living body to indicate a little surprise at the discovery. The situation and statements also indicate that the communicator is aware of liabilities not under the control of his will, which is an interesting confirmation of the hypothesis that many messages come involuntarily.

work in definite ways on pure purposeful pursuits. It is the pursuit that hants [haunts] me you see for I did not expect it and it is the word [read 'work' and pencil pointed till corrected] \* \* [th] ... that visualizes the life here. [P. F. R. and Indian.] <sup>136</sup>

My son my boy [N. R.] my boy. We are so glad and happy to be here taking [read 'talking'] about these things that are of so much moment to you.

(That's good.)

I have the same love and desire for the best to come to you and I am often with you in your work. [Struggle for control and P. F. R. Indian.]

I see so many things that I want to take hold of and make some expression on and yet I have to wait many times. I still love to read [not clearly written] read and study. [Indian and hand flew to catch mine. I held it a moment.]

Who did that.

(I certainly do not know, but I think it was some of the guides helping to give energy.)

guides yes yes I was told all about it before I came but I did not understand just how it would be. I have some one with me who is also eager to get to you and it is because I am stronger that I got here first. Don't trouble your head about the looks of the writing.

(No, I'll not.)

I thought I was going [read 'strong'] to write ... no go ... [read] just like myself but I think there is a slight difference.

(Yes, likely.)

slight is a rather mystifying word so I will say it looks nothing at all like mine. [P. F. R.]

(I understand.)

Now about the lady with me. (Yes, good.) I want to say a few things about her and a great many about myself. Let me see.

Do you know anything about a long tailed [N. R.] coat ... tailed [delay in reading] t a ... I used to wear.

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.]

on Sundays particularly.

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.]

and how that coat seemed to carry all sombre ideas with it. Sunday was a day of different aspect in my family. [P. F. R. and Indian.]

<sup>136</sup> It is correct that the sitter's father was not a Catholic, and it is interesting to note the comparison of his earthly beliefs and ideas with the actual conditions as he claims to have found them. The implication as to what his terrestrial ideas were is clear and correct, whatever may be said about the unverifiable statements regarding what he would call the conditions, if he had been a Catholic.

all different now you boy[s] are different and I know it even if I am out of sight. He knows what I mean.<sup>137</sup>

(Yes, he nods his head.)

He has grown with the years and I was old fashioned but I too have added to my understanding of [pause] the needs of growing boys. How I always insisted on the truth. It was a kind of dom . . . [erased] dim ['divine' but read 'dim'] passion [read 'person'] with me. I . . . divine passion [read 'person' without looking clearly] no passion with me to have the exact truth told me by everybody I hated [read 'held'] a liar . . . hated a liar above [read 'about' and 'alive'] above everything else, and I suppose I did not make it any too easy for people [people] to tell me the truth. I have not changed my feeling however and I insist that there is nothing so important in life as exact statements.<sup>138</sup> I want to speak about something else.

(Yes, all right.)

[Pause.] a drawer \* \* [scrawls.] a drawer where some things of mine were kept a [P. F. R. and Indian.] place where things were in order and where no one was allowed to put a meddlesome finger.

(Yes.)

not even your mother my .. [P. F. R. and struggle to keep control.]<sup>139</sup>

(Keep calm.) [Holding hand.]

<sup>137</sup> The sitter states that the reference to the long-tailed coat is correct regarding his father. The reference to "the lady with me" confirms the conjecture as to the presence of some one indicated by E.

In regard to the special use of the "long tailed coat," the sitter writes in response to further inquiry:—

"I can distinctly recollect the 'long tailed coat,' or frock coat, which my father wore on special occasions. That it was worn on Sundays is probable, but I cannot give any special reason why he should have so associated it. The reference to reading is very characteristic of my father. He read a great deal, frequently late into the night."

<sup>138</sup> The sitter writes: "The statement as to his insistence on the truth is correct as to my father and very characteristic."

As evidence of the statement made by the communicator about his love of the truth and the extent of its being characteristic, the sitter writes me later, in response to specific incidents illustrating it:—

"As my father died when I was 12 years old, I can cite no concrete incidents as to an abstract passion for truth. In all his dealings with myself and the other children of the family, he invariably drilled into us that there was nothing worse than falsehood. He repeatedly said it was the one thing for which he would punish us by whipping, and the only instances of such punishment in the family which I can recall were for lapses from the truth."

<sup>139</sup> In regard to the incident of the drawer the sitter writes: "I cannot recall a drawer such as is mentioned. My father was a physician and during my early boyhood he lived in a small western town. He also did some dental and surgical work, and had a case in which instruments for such work were kept. The statement may refer to this case."



I am [pause and struggle to keep control. I held hand.] troubling you.

(No, not at all.)

[P. F. R.] I want to write about a place we used to go away from home.

(All right.)

[Indian.] a place where we went to see [see] some friends who lived a little distance.

[Hand stretched out to me and I saw it had catalepsy and rubbed it some time when it reached strainingly for the pencil which was given.]

\* \* [scrawls and difficult writing.] B B. [calmed down.] I must have been too emphatic. The lady where we went is over here in this life now. You know whom I mean.

(Not certain yet. Make it clear.) [Sitter shook head doubtfully.]

I will make it clear. Aunt Aunt. E [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

m \* \* \* \* [four letters or attempts at them and one seems like 'o']

( 'E' ? )

[Pause.] L [pause]

(Finish that if it is not too much trouble.)

I must not stop now I have so many things to say and I have said so little. I wonder if you remember a stick a cane— a cane to walk with rather large and dark and handle to it.

(Yes, go ahead.) [Sitter nodded head.]

and one I used. I I used one I used.

(Yes, it is recalled.) [Sitter nodded head.]

Still in family put away not used now and again I want to recall the place we went when you were a little fellow.

(Good, all right.)

a home where we were welcome and [read 'not' and 'but'] where you ... And where you had cakes [delay in reading] cakes [read 'cases'] ca... cook... [read 'cookies,' seeing meaning of first instances.] little cakes.

[Sitter shook head.] (Not recalled, but I know that it is likely that they would be there and that they would not be recalled. You said it was the home of an Aunt. If you can say more about her it will ...)

[Writing began.]

M [P. F. R.]

(Mr. H.: Correct start.)

M A ... [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause. Sigh, pause, groan, pause and groan.] <sup>140</sup>

[*Subliminal.*]

Where is that river?

(What river?)

The river I see.

(I don't know. You will have to tell.)

You know the last writer? (Yes.) Well, do you know anything about a pond or river connected with that one?

(Mr. H.: Yes.)

It is so pretty. It looks not as one of those narrow high banked rivers, but it looks so pretty. If it is a pond it has banks sloping down to the water. It is a pretty country all around. Did you ever live near that?

(Mr. H.: Yes.)

Did you skate on it?

(Mr. H.: Yes, often.)

I see some skates, boots and ice and [pause.] Somebody was always afraid, not that last writer, but somebody in the house was scared, and goes off to the door and looks out every little while when it makes no difference. That water was always a menace and they could not keep you off anyhow. Do you understand?

(Yes.)

---

<sup>140</sup> The sitter has made no comment on the capital letter B. But of the reference to the Aunt, the cakes and the cane he writes as follows:

"Concerning the statements about going to the home of an Aunt where I had cakes, I would say, we frequently visited at the home of an Aunt Mary who lived in the same town, but I have no distinct recollection of any little cakes, although my brother states that he remembers them perfectly. This Aunt Mary died about eighteen months prior to the sittings.

"Father always carried, during his later years, a gold-headed cane of black wood, and my recollections of him are definitely associated with it. It was broken by a very unusual accident, which immediately came into my mind. The head and a portion of the cane were in the possession of some one of the family after I had grown up, as I have a very distinct recollection of seeing them, without being able to say where."

It will be remarked that the communicator failed to complete the name desired, tho he got two of the four letters correctly. It should also be remarked that the first reference to her in this passage repeated the capital E that appeared much earlier and it explains just what I had conjectured as possible; namely, that some one with E in the name was present and possibly helping. The "lady with me," as indicated by the communicator earlier, was evidence of the same interpretation, though there was no indication that it referred to E. That is clear now.

The initial B has no meaning for the sitter. It does not represent any known relation to the Aunt E. mentioned. The "Aunt E" probably refers to the Aunt Elizabeth mentioned later, and the "L" may be the initial of "Lizzie," the nickname for that Aunt.

That worry is over. I mean the lady.

(Was the water in sight of the house?)

No, not much. I see away up and down and not much in sight. Is that what you mean?

(Mr. H.: Yes.)

When you look you see some and then not some of it. You know I see some coming up.

(Mr. H.: Who are the ones you refer to?)

The lady?

(Mr. H.: No, those coming home.) The boys? (Mr. H.: How many are there?)

I can't tell you yet. You know a boy with something about his neck like a muffler or scarf. I think it is a scarf. I see a girl. Had you a sister?

(Mr. H.: Yes.)

She used to go there too.

(Mr. H.: I think probably.)

You could do all sorts of things at that place. You could not go back to that place the same way now.

(Mr. H.: No.)

Things and everybody are all scattered. They all remember it. There is something like a flower. I see a green and level place near the water. You slip down it if it were squashy land but it is watery and swampy, like a meadow. Near is a little flower. I can't see what it is. It is not a flower that I know. It is brilliant.

(Color?)

Either red or orange. It is a little brilliant thing. It sticks right up there. It comes in the spring time. Is there such a thing as Ad-der's tongue?

(Mr. H.: Yes, there is such a flower.)

Does that grow there? (Mr. H.: I don't know.) It is a brilliant little flower. [Hand reached for mine.] <sup>141</sup>

I got to go. [Pause.] I must tell you about a big stone post. It is almost like a driveway. I don't know that it is near that house. It

<sup>141</sup> This long subliminal passage contains a number of most interesting hits in regard to which the sitter writes:

"From the time I was about six years old until I was twelve (at which time my father died), we lived at Sioux City, Iowa, on the bank of the Missouri River. Two small streams which flowed into this river were located east and west of the town. I and two brothers frequently went skating on all of these streams, and the general description fairly fits the situation. I have a sister, older than myself, who is still living. We boys wore mufflers or scarfs in the winter. The family has been scattered many years. I do not remember the swampy place nor the flower described."

seems farther away. There are two big stone posts as you go to the house. Do you know?

(Mr. H.: I don't know myself. I can find out by inquiry.)

I will tell more about it tomorrow. They are big things, the posts near the road.

(Mr. H.: I think it is right, but it is a little vague in my memory.)

It is a pretty place. My but things have been crowded in your life since then. Things came thick and fast. Good, try to send some one more tomorrow. Want them?<sup>142</sup>

(Yes.)

You don't feel discouraged, do you?

(No.)

[Pause and began rubbing eyes, when sitter left.]

As soon as she recovered normal consciousness Mrs. C. asked me if I knew any one named Adam or Adams. I replied in the negative.

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mr. Hunt. December 2nd, 1913. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitter admitted. Long pause.] There is something right before me. I can't get rid of it. [Brushing at it as if to make it go away.]

[Pause, sigh and pause.] It doesn't go. [Pause.] Do you know anything about a big tree cut down? It looks big. I don't see the tree. I only see its stump cut down. I know it must be a big tree.<sup>143</sup> A minute. [Pause and cleared her throat, pause, rolled hand and reached for pencil. Pencil given and long pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

W [Not read at time, as a part of it resembled 'h' so clearly that I waited for its spontaneous clearing. Later in the sitting it was so evident that the same form was meant for 'W' that I so interpret it here.]

[Pause and fumbling of pencil with difficulty in keeping control.

---

<sup>142</sup> Of the allusions to "stone posts" and a "crowded life" the sitter writes me: "The two stone posts do not recall anything. My life of 54 years has been very full of varied experiences. For 34 years in the naval service, and in Civil Engineering work, I have been over a large part of the world by sea and land."

<sup>143</sup> Of the reference to a "big tree cut down" the sitter says: "The statement concerning the big tree and stump is not specially significant. I have a country home in one of the redwood districts of California. There are many large stumps on the place, one of which is directly in front of the house."

Long pause] [I held my hand near arm to supply energy and then as I removed it the pencil began to write.]

Can do it soon.

(All right.)

H [pause] e is trying to help me [pause] write

(All right. I understand.)

to you for he is stronger than I. I feel that I must hurry and yet I cannot do it. I wish I could have stayed longer with you with you. [Pause.]

(Can you tell us just who you are, some word that will help us to understand?)

Yes I am a lady not his father who wrote yesterday but I am nearer than that. I am with father. I came over after he did some little time after and from another place [pause] another house. [P. F. R. Pause.]

M M [letter not quite completed and P. F. R. with signs of distress.] M [pause] I am not so sad. I find it easier to tell what I feel and think than to tell the least thing about myself.

(I understand, but perhaps you can name the relationship.)

W [written heavily and not read at time purposely and it may not be intended for 'W,' but that is the most apparent interpretation.] he belongs to me. *He* [underscored three times.] does not you.

(What do you mean by saying that he belongs to you?) [Expression has usually meant wife and the 'W' confirmed this interpretation. I knew the sitter was not married.]

I belong to him.

(What does that mean?)

relationship established by love not blood.

(You will have to explain that.)

mother. (You mean that you are his mother?) yes.

(Well, that is a blood relation, is it not?)

but he could not belong to me just because of blood.

(I understand, the . . . .) [Writing went on.]

more than blood unites [N. R.] us . . . united us.

(I understand and the reason I pressed the matter was that often that expression was used by others to imply that the communicator was a wife.)

You thought I might be his wife but I am not. I will let her [pause, writing of word heavy. P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

write for herself. [Pause.] mother will help all the way.<sup>144</sup>

<sup>144</sup> The W mentioned at the beginning of the automatic writing probably refers

(You say that you are the mother of the friend present. Is that what you mean?)

why do you ask that. There are two of us trying to write or at least trying to think strength [read 'through,' tho thinking it 'strength'] str ... [read] to a third [N. R.] third one. 4 of us

(I understand and ...) [Writing went on.]

3 are women 1 man more are present but 4 are near. two [apparent attempt to erase] 2 mothers 1 not mother 1 father.

(All right. Go ahead. Make it clear.)

1 not mother is younger and more nervous and makes us trouble by talking all the time to him and to us telling us what to do. [Pause.] You do not know how hard it is to hear her talk and try to keep your own mind on the writing. She was always rather a lively [read 'lady,' pencil pointed, read 'lovely'] lively yes full of life and go ahead and yet she is almost afraid to take the hand for far ['fear' and so read] she will make some mistake. I think it is not as hard as it seems after ['after' and so read] you get started.

(Yes, can you name the relationship of the one who is younger and more nervous?)

Yes I know who she is of course and so does he. (Yes.) and it is one of the beautiful [beautiful and read 'faithful'] thi... beautiful thys [things] that should comfort him that she is with us and is trying to be content in her new life with out [read 'with one,' hand paused

---

to the same things as the W after M. It is probably the beginning of "Wife," as I conjectured from frequent occurrence of this in similar connections. But it was apparently spontaneously corrected to M, which is the initial for "Mother" quite often. The sitter was not married, but his mother had long since been dead.

Further inquiries about the statement, "I came over after he did some little time," brought the following statement:—

"My maternal grandmother died before my mother, and I think the same is true regarding my paternal grandmother."

This would represent the passage as true on the hypothesis that "M" is for "Mother," a mistake for grandmother, as it often is. But I think the real meaning is something wholly different and is involved in the confusion which immediately follows between the sitter's mother and stepmother. The following conjecture will make it clear and also throw light on the subsequent confusion.

The sitter's mother died before his father and the father married a young girl for a second wife. It is not possible to confirm the implication that this second wife is dead, but it is quite probable considering the long time that the father has been dead, he having died soon after this second wife left him, and she was quite young then. On the supposition that she was present, it is quite probable that she died after him. Then the "W" would probably be for "Wife," not of the sitter, but of the sitter's father. This would explain the allusion to "mother" in the same connection, being for "stepmother," which it might well be, especially as indicated by the allusion to "relationship established by love not blood," probably or possibly an intrusion of the control. Then comes the confusion which the sitter explained by conjecturing that this stepmother was present.

and read 'without'] the fulfillment of her plans with him by learning and experimenting with the power of the spirit which gives her daily contact with him.

God bless my boy. I wish I could have spared [read 'shared' and hand pointed till corrected.] you the sorrow but all sorrow is turned to joy when the truth is known. The loneliness is no longer loneliness when you are sure you are attended by the same love and devotion [read 'avocation' purposely, but doubtfully] devotion that you have known. She is not as unhappy as you might think she could be because she is able to get a satisfaction though [through] her constant knowledge of you. She was quite dependent on you although a very independent person. You know what I mean by that.

(Well you have not indicated the relationship.)

Please don't hurry me.

(All right.) [Sitter had signified by nod of head that he recognized her.]

I know perfectly well just where I have failed but I did it with purpose.

(All right.)

She will write herself before we get through and I do not want to do all the test part of it but just prepare the way for her to get to him with definiteness. She was always very sensitive and rather high [pause] strung. I mean when anything was the matter she was rather [read 'either'] at a ... rather at a tension [N. R.] tension but this separation was so hard for she did not want to come here. She would have lived [N. R.] lived and had much to live for many many things that needed her. [P. F. R. and Indian.] <sup>145</sup>

<sup>145</sup> This long passage cannot be unravelled by any one but the sitter and the following are his statements about it:

"This apparently involves a complicated and confused situation, the possible significance of which did not occur to me until about the time I nodded my head as indicated near the end of the passage, as indicated in the square brackets. My mother died about six years prior to my father's death, and at the statement, 'I came over after he (father) did,' etc., there was a strong dissent in my mind, as I assumed that my mother was trying to communicate. Subsequently when the communicator stated the relationship 'mother,' the same dissent existed in my mind. Concerning the reference to 'wife,' I had never been married, nor has there been any incident in my life by which I can explain the third woman referred to as '1 not mother is younger and more nervous,' etc.

"Then as to the group of communicators who are apparently working jointly, '3 are women 1 man' and '2 mothers 1 not mother 1 father,' shortly after this statement was made, I recalled the fact that less than a year prior to father's death, he married a second time. This woman was very young, probably not more than two years older than my sister. She left my father before his death, under what circumstances I do not know, and passed entirely out of the knowledge of the family. I have been unable to ascertain if she is living or dead at the present time.

F [pause] Do you know an F who is still living who was connected with her. Flo . . . Florence.

(Mr. H.: I can't be certain.)

and do you know [pause] A [P. F. R.] [Pause.] A n . . . \* \* [scrawls.] [P. F. R. twice.]<sup>146</sup>

(Stick to it.)

[Change of Control.]

[P. F. R., and hand clawed at the paper as if trying to get the pencil or to write and yet would not take the pencil for some time.]

\* \* [most probably 'A'] \* \* [scrawls and great struggle to control: 'Dear, Dear' uttered. Pause.]

W [only partly made and not read.] W. W [P. F. R.] [Pause and distress] \* \* [scrawl and pause.] Darling I have come.

(All right. Take your time. Keep calm.) [Writing heavy and struggling.]

back to you. Dear I have come back to you. ['Oh my head' uttered.] I have come I have come. [Hand stretched out and pencil dropped.]

(Yes, I will help.)

[Cataplexy in arm and I rubbed it some time. New pencil given.]

The pain is gone. My h [pause] h . . . ['h' not read either time purposely] I have been at home with you and I knew you were after me and I am glad you came for I am glad to tell you that I was met [read 'not' purposely, tho thinking it 'met'] met by my [pause] own as well as your mother. [Indian and P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

I am trying to recall about the picture the small one

(Picture . . .) [Writing went on.]

of myself I mean. He knows what I mean. [writing very dim.] \* \* \* \* \* [mere lines like short hand.] and G. you know G. [I looked at sitter. He remained still.]

(Now neither the picture nor the G has been made clear. Indeed I do not have the slightest idea of who you are.)

no you would not have but he ought to have.

(Well, that does not prove anything because he can only guess who it is, and merely having it in his mind is not evidence.)

If she is dead, it would offer a possible explanation of the two mothers in the group of communicators and the statement that 'I came over after he did,' which has been referred to above."

<sup>146</sup> The sitter writes of the name Florence: "This is the name of the wife of a brother with whom I am living, and who is still alive." The A and "An" had no significance to the sitter, except that it is the first syllable of his own and his father's first name.



I can't understand why he does not know me. I came away from him to here yes [to hesitating reading of 'here']

(Well, he might think he knew who it was but it would have to be expressed here on paper before we should have any right to say who it was.)

I'll go back. I thought you wanted me.

(We wanted any one that could prove his or her identity.)

[P. F. R. twice and long pause.] G r a . . . [Pencil fell, new one given. Long pause, groan, pause and distress and pause again.] <sup>147</sup>

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh dear. [Reached for my hand and put it on her own forehead. Long pause and put hand down.]

Do you know any one who would be a sister to you in spirit land?

(Mr. H.: No.) Sure? (Mr. H.: Sure.) Or sister-in-law? (Mr. H.: No.)

I see this name. It is either Sis or Sister. It sounds like Sis or Sister. Was there any one you called Sis?

(Mr. H.: No.)

It sounds like Sis or Sister. [Pause.] What has happened? <sup>148</sup>

(You did not get what we wanted.)

Hm. [Pause.] Does that bother you? (No.) It ought to. Do you know why it is? (No.) [Pause.] I think it is a little over-anxiety on the part of the spirit. [Pause and sigh.] I can't see clearly myself, but I see a woman with dark eyes and dark hair and not very full face but awfully thin and she must have gone out rather quick to the spirit. It don't seem unexpected but it is rather quick. Do you understand? Is she one you want to hear from?

(I don't know. You will have to tell.) Why? (Because, we don't know.)

\* \* \* \* [Not caught.]

(Mr. H.: Perhaps the description answers the person I wanted.)

She is pretty, not so pretty, but a strong face.

(Mr. H.: Is there anything peculiar about the arrangement of her hair?)

I think so. (Mr. H.: What is it?) Just a minute when I can see it clearer. [Long pause.] Have you got a little picture of her?

<sup>147</sup> Of this passage beginning with the change of control and terminating just before the Subliminal, the sitter writes that it has no significance to him. My own suspicion is that it refers to his grandmother. The letters "G r a . . ." indicate this, in accordance with similar efforts in other cases.

<sup>148</sup> Of the reference to a sister the sitter writes: "This has no significance unless it be to a sister of the sister-inlaw referred to above and who died a few years ago."

(Mr. H.: Not one myself, but there is one in the family.)

A small one? (Mr. H.: Yes.) It isn't a good one.

(Mr. H.: She died so young I could hardly express it.)

It doesn't seem a good one. I feel a satisfaction over it. You would say it was not a good one and it would be partly the picture and partly old-fashioned. [Pause.] Hm. [Pause.] She is with his father. You know what I mean.

(Yes.)

And she should not have died. Everybody would say that, humanly speaking, you understand.<sup>149</sup>

(Yes.)

It is not a question of how long she has been gone, but the old feeling can't leave you \* \* \* \* [did want?] to get back, you know.<sup>150</sup>

(Yes.)

Well, then after that some one in a measure takes her place to him.

(Mr. H.: Yes.)

Good lady. There are two ladies both \* \* \* \* [one should grieve?]. Two, one older, also gone, one his grandmother.

(Mr. H.: No.)

[Pause.] Isn't your grandmother over there? (Mr. H.: Yes.) Wasn't she alive after your mother died?

(Mr. H.: No.)

I thought so. I guess she will come tomorrow. She got kind of mixed up. Don't be discouraged.

(Mr. H.: Not in any sense.)

He is a good boy, isn't he? Goodbye.

(Goodbye.) [Sitter left.]

[Pause.] I rather think it would have been better if his father had stuck to the job.

(Yes.)

<sup>149</sup> Of the passage which apparently refers to sitter's mother he writes: "This apparently purports to describe my mother, but is too vague to be evidential. There is an old daguerreotype of mother in the family. She died of childbirth."

In response to further inquiries, the sitter says that this daguerreotype was a group picture of the grandmother, three sons, and a daughter. One of the sons in the group picture was named George. This probably explains the initial G mentioned and the G confirms the identification of the picture. But it also shows how fragmentary messages are, since the apparent effort, on that supposition, was to name those in the picture.

In regard to the description of the lady mentioned the sitter says: "The description in no way fits my stepmother. It probably fits my grandmother, but I can speak only from a very indistinct recollection."

<sup>150</sup> This passage is evidently from the sitter's mother. He says of it: "Mother died when the oldest child was about seventeen years old, the youngest just born, and myself six years old."

You know this other lady close to him, the younger one I told you about?

(Yes.) [Answer to latter part of question.]

It is such a temptation to come back and take the child, you know. I think he was more like his father than his mother. Do you know?

(No.) [Awakened.]

Oh my head! [I held my hand on her head a few moments and headache left.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mr. Hunt. December 3rd, 1913. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitter admitted. Long pause. Indian, reached for pencil, which fell almost as soon as given and reinserted. Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

Oh my son my son my little boy the years have only [pause and struggle.] [My hand placed a moment on hers and removed.] given me a diviner love a mightier purpose to bring to you a mother's care and protection. Swift though the years may run the recollections . . . [read 'any were' doubtfully, and hand paused, when I read 'my own' and hand paused again some time.] Swift though the years may run the many recollections of a too short motherhood crowd in upon my mind as I try to come and I am overwhelmed with emotions [written 'emotion' and so read when 's' was added.] \* \* [scrawl as hand showed difficulty in keeping control, and pencil fell and hand stretched toward me showing catalepsy. I rubbed it some time, when catalepsy left hand and body shivered as if having a chill and hand jerked, as if some one was trying to get control. Pencil was then given.]

[Change of Control.]

\* \* [read 'never' doubtfully.] [Pause.]

Gone but near.

(All right.)

[Pause and P. F. R., and pause.] Mary is here too.<sup>151</sup>

(What Mary?) [Thinking of my wife.]

for him. (All right.) He knows (Mr. H.: Yes.) And it is a

<sup>151</sup> Mary is the name of the sitter's Aunt to whom reference was made earlier, but the name did not get through completely. The relationship was given and the two letters "M A." She died about eighteen months prior to the time of the sitting and was an intimate of the sitter's mother. ["M. A." pronounced *sounds* like "Emma."—G. O. T.]

happy party here although we are quite conscious of the little we write compared to what we think.

(I understand.)

The father is about as clear and calm as any one in the group.

(I understand.)

It is a temperamental affair largely isn't it.

(Yes, it is.)

I thought so but could not be sure until I asked you. There are some things we learn from you such as the effect on you and the immediate results of our efforts.

(Yes, we always have to judge the results by what you can say to prove your identity.)

Yes and when we are so interested in something else we lose the point sometimes and then again I sometimes forget things. Perhaps others may remember better than I but I seldom think of my own name for instance in connection with my identity. We do not use names over here as you do for you use them to call attention to the person addressed and our intent [N. R.] intent thought towards them arrests their attention without any spoken name and it is the same with all communication between one another. the writing of letters does not exist as it does with you. The *form* [underscoring three times.] of communication is so different that it is the going back to alphabet blocks on the floor with the baby to spell his name or our own by picking out the right blocks and often in writing a name it is just as clumsy a method as that would be by which we pull over the alphabet blocks and write one letter at a time.

That is an explanation which he has needed to help him. There are many cases where the name means more like a name that has been well known or a mark of distinction and then it comes through more readily. I fancy [read 'bring'] think that the reason why so many well known personalities find it easier to give the name to the controlling influence. Is this plain to you.

(Yes, I understand.)

I have heard that discussion [discussion] about giving them until I am weary and I thought it about time some one said something about it.

(Who says this?) [I suspected G. P. present from writing.]

I am his friend and have seen his doubts [N. R.] doubts and questions and wonderings and so I came along with this answer and you are quite welcome to my wisdom.

(Thanks, thanks.)

I am not as sarcastic [read 'sure as' with pause for correction.]

as sarcastic as it sounds when you read it but in real earnest and good faith [read 'give back'] good faith.

[I had mentally taken the allusion to "wisdom" as irony.]

I am not Mary nor the father but a man and relative and a [groan] near relative at that—

(All right. Go ahead.)

B [pause] will stand for me . B [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

B r ... [Long pause.] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

B B r o [Indian and P. F. R.] .

(You'll get it.)

B r o t ... [Pause.] Broth ... [Not read purposely.]

(All right. Go ahead.)

B r o t h e r at last.

(Just stick to it.)

and mighty glad I am to come [Writing very heavy.]

(You are welcome.)

Cannot tell you how glad we all are to be here in a family group. You know [distress and groaning.] the C yes C— for a name C. [pencil tapped.] Ch a r l e s .

(Mr. H.: There are two, which one?)

yes I know them both one younger than the other but I mean the older one.

(Mr. H.: Relationship?)<sup>152</sup>

U U Un ... [struggle] Unc ... Uncle Uncle Charles.

(Mr. H.: Yes.)

that is good is it not. (Fine, fine.)<sup>153</sup> I am trying to keep very cool for I have a keen appreciation of the need of this evidential work. I may as well admit [N. R.] admit that it is a much keener appreciation now than before I left you and I wish to write J— for a name also [pause and cough.] J o h n [pause] J o h n alive in your world. You know to whom I refer.

(Not recognized. Tell more.) [Sitter shook head.]

a business relationship of some time ago— but quite near F [struggle] Father is the same man the same sort and all that we knew and he

<sup>152</sup> Of the reference to a brother the sitter says: "The only brother who is dead died in infancy." It is possible that the message is fragmentary here and that if completed it would have been "brother of father" or "brother of mother." For an Uncle Charles is mentioned immediately.

<sup>153</sup> The sitter writes of this reference: "I have an Uncle Charles and a cousin Charles, both dead, belonging to the two sides of the family. The Uncle Charles was the older of the two."

makes everybody prove their case to him in much the same way that he used to argue out the points of difference of opinions. You know what I mean I am sure.

(Mr. H.: Probably.)

[Pause.] H [long pause.] H [pause]

(Stick to that and don't fail.)

[Pause and tapping of pencil.] [Indian.] H e n ... [Hand relaxed and pencil came near falling.] [struggle to keep control.]

(Be calm.)

H e r [Pause, P. F. R. Indian.] 6 [?] H H H [made quickly]  
H He [pause] H a [erased.]

(All right, stick to it.)

H e [erased.]

(I understand. Stick to it.)

H is right. (All right. Go ahead.) [Pause.] H e i [N. R.]  
My my H H e n r y. Henry Henry.

(All right. Go ahead.)

Henry is what I first wanted to write. (Good.) there is more I want to write to follow it and then he will know just whom I refer to—

(All right. You do it. I will wait.)

\* \* [read 'h-i-m,' but no reply.] and do you know S— over here  
S— S a ... S a ... [P. F. R.] <sup>154</sup>

(Stick to it.)

Losing power but wish I could write more. I am alive all right and thank you for helping me F r ... [pause] You know what F r stands for.

(No, make that clear.) [Sitter shook head.]

Don't you know [pause] F r [Pause and P. F. R.] Father  
moher [mother] broher [brother] [pause] Grandmother S— and  
Aunt E. [pause] Kow the E [written like 'C' and so read] E  
don't you.

(Not recognized yet. Make it clear.) [Sitter shook head.]

(Mr. H.: Was it any relative?)

yes aunt not always called by the E— but that was the name

[Change of Control.]

[Hand brushed about wildly and face showed anger, head shook and much Indian gibberish, and spoke instead of writing.]

Don't go. Don't go yet.

<sup>154</sup> Of the further names the sitter writes: "John may be pertinent, but it is not detailed enough to be certain. Henry is the name of the brother who died in infancy. The S is not identifiable."

(No, we won't.)

[Pause and left hand put over to mine, as I held the right, and I then held both hands in my right and my left hand on her forehead for some time. Saw smile on her face at end.]

Hello. (Hello, Starlight.)

I had to come to put him out. He gets so anxious. [Pause.]

[Change of Control and Automatic Writing.]

I did not mean to get in so far but I have done no harm I think and I am glad to have got so much of my idea down to him for all this is so important to him and there is much more to come. I must go now but we [read 'tell'] all . . . But all are as glad to have the open door as I am. I was trying to write Elizabeth before but could not get it out. A very old lady whom we all know but she died long ago— Sometimes generally I believe called Aunt Lizzie— [P. F. R.] Do you remember now [read 'no'] now.

(No, not recalled.) [Sitter shook head.]

He will know whom I mean later for she is here.

(Mr. H.: On which side of the house?)

Great aunt. [Pencil fell.] <sup>155</sup>

[*Subliminal.*]

Have you got a mother-in-law in spirit land?

(Mr. H.: No, what is meant by mother-in-law?)

I didn't know but that there was only one meaning to mother-in-law. Does he think I made a mistake and meant stepmother? Is that what he thought?

(Probably.)

I didn't, but it may be stepmother, but I meant it for mother-in-law. But I got some woman who is like a mother but isn't a mother, but I could only think of mother-in-law, but may be it is stepmother. Has he a stepmother and is she on the other side?

(Mr. H.: Yes, but I don't know whether she is there or not.)

She is an old lady. Do you know what she looks like?

(I have a very vague recollection.)

---

<sup>155</sup> Of the names in this passage the sitter says: "Fr is not recognizable. I do not recollect any such person as 'Aunt E.,' 'Aunt Lizzie,' and 'Great Aunt,' but my sister, who is about five years older than myself, in reply to inquiry, writes as follows:

"As to question about Aunt Elizabeth, I have heard of her, and that is all. She must have been an Aunt of our mother's."

"I would say that in making inquiry of my sister, I gave her no clew as to my reason for asking the question."

It is evident from this that the "E" mentioned near the beginning of the first sitting refers to this Aunt Lizzie. Cf. Notes 134 and 137.

She is not a very big woman, medium, ordinary size, but she wears spectacles and must have been an old lady when she went over there. She is in the family group, but apart. She is good enough. That's praise that damns, isn't it? [Pause.] <sup>156</sup>

[Hand reached for mine.] I got to go. I don't seem to have any strength left. I have been over a minute. [Pause.]

Oh I see such lovely country. Ask him if he knows about New York? (Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.]

Does he? (Yes.) I seem to be looking up the Hudson River. I seem to be going up the Hudson River. I think I never saw it. It is beautiful all the way. I can see mountains in the distance. Can you do that?

(Yes.)

I can see that. Wait a minute. [Pause.] I see a big letter T, just a capital T, as if it were the name of a place or person. Do you know what it means?

(Make it clear.)

You don't know whether there is a Thomas, do you?

(Mr. H.: On which side?)

This side. (Mr. H.: I think not.) I think it is the earthly side. It is written by some one on the spirit side.

(Mr. H.: Do you mean some one alive?)

Yes. He thought some one on the other side.

(Mr. H.: No.) I mean some one alive. (Mr. H.: Yes, I do.) <sup>157</sup>

I don't see your name at all. I don't know what it is.

(Tell about that Adams mentioned the other day after you came to normal consciousness.)

I didn't know I said it. When did I say it?

(After you came out... came back.)

Might as well ask you what you dreamed about last week. I suppose it just dropped through. Did it mean anything to you?

(Yes.)

Take it for what it is worth. I can't pick up that. I am sorry. [Pause.] I see a funny thing. It's a [pause] rather a mixed picture. [Pause.]

[Shook her hand loose from mine, but seized it lightly again.] You

<sup>156</sup> The sitter writes me that the references to "mother-in-law" and "step-mother" are prompted by the facts recited in Note 145. They do not take the form of evidence, because the question by the sitter tended to set the subliminal to guessing at the correction. In his note he says nothing about the descriptive features of the passage, which might have settled the case against guessing.

<sup>157</sup> The sitter says: "My sister's husband, who is living, is named Thomas."



are holding me so tight you stop the circulation. Or am I holding yours?

(Both.)

All right. I am trying to hang on till I see the rest of the things. [Pause.] I see two men walking out in a rather countrified, country-like place. It is pretty but very quiet and very serious talk seems to be going on. I think this man is one of them. The man with him talks as if he were talking over something like business affairs. It is nothing at all ethical or spiritual. It is just business and it is a little while before the other went to spirit land. He goes quickly, with not much warning. Funny. Has he got anybody who went to spirit land quickly? A business associate.

(Mr. H.: Yes.)

That one is importunate to pick up those things again, as if some things only he could talk about and make clear. Some were mixed at the time of his going. He is often by you and he often tried to help you with them.

(Mr. H.: Can you tell whether he has been on the other side long?)

Well, a little while, so long these things have been taken care of, sort as if he had left just a little time. He still retains his earnest desire to help you. It was hard on you when he left. There were some complications. Some of them look like past history. You know?

(Mr. H.: Yes.)

He desires to make that right. You have to write fast to get that.<sup>158</sup>

(Yes.)

[Pause.] Goodbye. [Pause.] You know I can see his mother put her hands on his head and say, 'God bless my little boy,' just as pretty. [Pause.] And the spirits are good to those they leave behind, better than those behind who go on as if relationship ceased. They will soon

---

<sup>158</sup> Readers, by referring to note at end of first sitting in the record, will see that the sitter did not recognize the name Adams. After we had gone away from the house he recalled its possibilities and hence I asked the question about him. The sitter's note on it is as follows:

"After the first sitting, when Adams was mentioned after the trance, Dr. Hyslop asked me if I knew any one named Adam or Adams. At first I said, No, but in a short while I remembered that a friend by the name of Adams had died rather suddenly about two months prior to the sittings. This man was a Civil Engineer, and had been associated with me in several professional engagements. At the time of his death he was a member of a committee, of which I was chairman, having had the preparation of the technical program of a series of important engineering meetings. I depended largely on him for assistance in certain lines, and his death threw this work back on me. The last time I saw him we discussed the work in hand as we walked down the street, but not under the countrified circumstances mentioned."

stop that when the two worlds are linked together as they ought to be. What foolish system ever cut them apart?

[Sitter rose to leave and before he left the following was uttered and Mrs. C. came to consciousness in a few seconds afterward.]

I hear somebody say, 'Goodbye Bill.'<sup>159</sup>

## Chapter XII, Series VIII, Dec. 22, 23, 24, 1913

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

December 22nd, 1913.

[The first part of the sitting was taken up with Emma Abbott finishing what she wanted to do the previous week. As soon as she left the hand reached for mine to come back and I pushed it back upon the pad, waiting, and it soon reached for the pencil, and Dr. Hodgson came as I requested last week, but without any oral suggestion from me.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

R. H.

(Thanks, R. H.)

You will see the wisdom of the plan I know.

(Yes, I certainly do, and am very glad of it.)

all was just right for the effort. (Yes.) We were concerned about the crusade [N. R.] crusade against the workers [N. R.] workers by the newspapers and while we know it is best to weed [read 'wait'] weed out the faker I always felt that way. Still I wish there could be some protection for your work by not having the door open for strangers here.

(Yes, so do I.)

It is most dangerous and alarms me for reporters and sifters know nothing of the work and are never careful nor truthful investigators.

(All I need is the endowment to fix all that. Now a question. Last spring a prediction was made that I was to get all the money I wanted 'right off quick.' It came in the subliminal recovery. Do you know who made that prophecy?)

Not at this moment but I can find out.

(All right. Do that.)

It is on my mind all the time. The light is absolutely [N. R.] absolute . . . [read] without fear. It is the spirit of self conscious honesty but that has nothing to do with our case.

(I understand.)

for the honesty has little to do with it and I know that several attempts have been made by some one you would not wish to come here.

---

<sup>159</sup> The "Goodbye Bill" has no significance to the sitter.

(Good. I understand.)

I wish protection for the future.

(All right. I shall see that it is given.)

I am still as interested in the experimental work as when I first saw the importance of removing the incentive to work for larger patronage from the Piper light. This is different but I think it can be managed.<sup>160</sup>

(Yes I think it can. Now another question. You remember Dr. Weston D. Bayley?

Yes.

(He wants me to ask you if you have seen a mutual friend who came over recently?)

yes and will tell more about it to-morrow. The energy is gone.

(You remember I wanted that Jack . . .) [Writing began.]

Jack yes and I will take but a moment to-morrow.

(All right.)

[Pencil fell and long pause.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Indian and long pause. Sigh.]

Who is the woman?

(You tell.)

Some one with Doctor Hodgson. [Pause.]

[Hand reached for mine which was given and long pause. Sigh, shook her head, groaned and suddenly awakened.]

In her normal state and before any signs of the subliminal came, Mrs. C. told me that for the past few weeks she had the same odor in the house that she always noticed when she was conscious of the presence of Mr. Jones. She did not understand why it was, but remarked that she thought it might be that he was with some one else. The maid and Mr. C. had also noticed the same odor.

<sup>160</sup> All this is very characteristic of Dr. Hodgson. He was a relentless opponent of fraud. That fact was well enough known by Mrs. Chenoweth from the general public reputation of Dr. Hodgson. He was also always anxious to have Mrs. Piper protected against the surreptitious and other attacks on Mrs. Piper's mediumship by people who knew nothing about the subject. That was the primary reason for taking charge of her as he did and sitters could not get sittings except through himself. Mrs. Chenoweth knew nothing of this. There have occasionally been persons trying to get sittings with her who had a selfish object in having them and who were possibly desirous of proving fraud or otherwise conducting sittings that would injure the work I was doing. Hence the subject was brought up here. The only interest in the incidents is that they are put into the mouth of Dr. Hodgson, who was well acquainted with the problem in this respect and Mrs. Chenoweth was not aware of the fact. She is fearless on the matter, more so than is prudent, having perfect confidence in her guides to protect her against such things.

The most intimate friend of Mr. Jones died a few weeks ago and Mrs. C. knows nothing about the fact.

Mrs. C.    J. H. H.

December 23rd, 1913.    10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Cough, a long pause. Sigh, pause, moved hand, slight groan, pause, and then finger held as if to take the pencil but refused to clasp it. Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

E [?] [Indian.] [Long pause.] [P. F. R.] my dearest [not read at time.]

(What?)

[Pause.] I am so glad to try again [Indian] to send a letter to her. I have tried [Indian] to act [read 'get'] as ... act ... I said I would when she was here I find no difference in my feeling but get impatient with myself because of my [pause] poor and incomplete records. I wonder why

(Let me .... ) [Writing continued.]

it is that some men die and then for the first time face the seriousness of the situation.

(I understand and shall be glad to help you in the right direction. I assume this is the person who gave the name Jack before. Am I right?)<sup>161</sup>

Yes and I feel your sympathy and am grateful for your help. It is as hard for me as it is for her because I suffer when I see her suffer. She does not seem to recover from the ch... [erased] shock of my death

( I ... ) [Writing continued and then pause.] (Go on.)

but thinks she would like to come here too at times.<sup>162</sup>

(Why did she not come home at the time she planned earlier?) [Asked in order to draw out evidence of identity.]

you mean from a long distance. (Yes.) there were two reasons either of which would have been sufficient to keep her there one was health and one was from association

<sup>161</sup> I had not yet known that the person I called for was never called Jack, though his name was John.

<sup>162</sup> All this is very true about the living wife of the person for whom I had asked. Her letters to me showed that the shock still rankled in her mind unreasonably, though it was quite natural from the circumstances that it should. She did often wish to die, as intimated here, and was not always overscrupulous about the manner of it.

(What association was that?) [Intended to draw out evidence.]

with others who helped her there. I was there too and would be glad to tell some of the things I saw done. There was great effort made to help her and to give her new interests. Perhaps you do not know about this but I think you do. Do you know about another language and people where she has been.

(Yes, I know another language is there, but I did not know it had anything to do with her. I know about her health and was anxious to know the condition of it. Go on.)

the language and people have nothing to do perhaps but it helps to identify [N. R.] where ... identify where I have seen her. that was why I mentioned it.

(I understand, and can you tell what language that is?) [For identity.]<sup>183</sup>

I think so as soon as I get away from the train of thought your questions start. I want to tell you first about her. She will not come to me yet I think although both she and I would prefer to have it so. I cannot find it possible to even declare [N. R.] a ... declare a right straight out wish that she shall come. I have the old fancy that it is wrong to wish for another to die but I know that she has never recovered [read 'received' and finger pointed till corrected.] from my death. It was such a shock. one does not recover from these things and she particularly is not likely to soon gain perfect equilibrium.

(I understand and would ask you just what will help her in the right direction.)

if I can tell you I will. A restoration [N. R.] restoration of faith yes faith in God that it is still [N. R.] still His world. I know this sounds very commonplace but I know that after the sittings when there was evidence that I made an effort to speak of love and constant care there were exclamations of despair and a cry for the personal life which had been wrecked from her and a sort of poison [N. R.] was ... poison ... left that it was all wrong.

I cannot say too much about its being all right without seeming to care less for her than she does for me but still it is just that faith

---

<sup>183</sup> The lady was in Europe solely for her health and was under special treatment at the time. She had some friends there and especially it was for the care of the physician who had previously helped her that she was there rather than getting this treatment at home. Her letters to me showed that there had been efforts to awaken new interests in her mind. It was in Switzerland that she was staying and though a foreign language would be suggested by any country across the water we must remember that this fact had not yet been indicated. On the contrary, the subconscious of the psychic had supposed, if it supposed anything, that the lady was in this country. The allusion here, then, points to the correct person.

which I in a measure possess which will eventually [N. R.] eventually give her poise [read 'peace'] poise. It is not a lost happiness nor yet a broken happiness but a postponed expression and while waiting for the hour of union in the old familiar way we may fill the interim with such dreams and passions as make us brave to meet the daily demands [N. R.] demands and if these dreams are of high and spiritual purpose and of the same [pause and struggle for control.] spirit we shall inevitably be in each other's presence though [so read and pencil pointed till read 'through', the 'r' being omitted in the writing.] our mutual [N. R.] mutual desires

(I understand and have thought a long time that what she needs is love and faith without grief, and then half the trouble would be gone, and you have expressed it all well, in the daily demands of this life that may bring her spirit even with those who have gone before.)

I have sought the answer for my own poise, for my life was more shattered in some ways than hers for I am the one who is transferred and the very things that made up my life are no more. It was such a shock to me and all the philosophy and attention of my friends here made little impression on me at first. I sought and I give her the only solution I can find.<sup>164</sup>

I am as deeply in love with her as fond and devoted as I could ever be. I cannot quite accustom myself to the black and the constant grief for she was the sunniest and sweetest of women and this bowed [N. R.] and . . . bowed and broken lily with sombre shadows about her is still quite unreal [read 'unusual' doubtfully] unreal to me. She has such regrets as if she might have saved the day by some other plan. Has she ever told you this.

(No, she did not, but I can believe it.)

It has been a sort of nightmare to her and I have known it but if men and women knew every step of the way the lives they live would always be different than they are and because an accident occurs on one path there should be no feeling that another path might have held no danger. The other might still have been just as fatal.<sup>165</sup>

---

<sup>164</sup> Nothing could be more pointed than this long passage. We have only to recur to the statement about her own dreams to see how pertinent it all is. The dreams had represented her as fearing that she would lose his love and I, of course, knew nothing about these things till her reply to the receipt of the record came. Her letters to me reflected many a struggle with her faith and several times she had used to me the very expression: "It was all wrong." It is impossible to convey to the reader the aptness of the whole passage, which, as evidence, is perhaps as remarkable as any one could wish, as it represents facts hidden within the sanctuary of the lady's own mind and heart, except as she had revealed it to a very few friends.

<sup>165</sup> The lady did have thoughts that she could have saved the day if she had taken a different course at the time of the accident.

(I understand.)

I am to say more to \* \* [scrawl for attempt at 'morrow']

(Yes, I understand. You have tomorrow.)

J a \* \* [scrawl. 'Jack' evidently intended.] E [pause.]

(Stick to it.)

E [pause] \* \* [scrawl and pencil fell.]<sup>166</sup>

[*Subliminal.*]

[Pause, cough and distress. Hand reached for mine. I refused to take it.]

(Are you going to write any more?) [Thinking of Hodgson.]

[Hand pulled back from mine. Pause and sigh, and then hand reached for mine again and I took it.]

What is the matter with that man? What is the matter with his head, do you know?

(Yes, tell me.)

I was going to ask you if it was smashed. Do you know?

(I think so.)

I know too. Wasn't that out-of-doors?

(Yes. Where?)

I don't know what it means. I just know it is out-of-doors. It was an accident.

(Look at the scene.)

Oh it makes me sick. Oh it was terrible. [Long pause and awakened.]<sup>167</sup>

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

December 24th, 1913. 9 A. M.

Before the sitting Mrs. C. and I talked over the situation with Miss W—— each of us knowing what it was, and as Mrs. C. went into the trance she alluded to it there and asked me to tell her about it when she came out as she would forget it.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Indian, pause for a long time and reached for pencil and long pause again]

<sup>166</sup> "Jack," as already explained, is not his name. The "E" is not intelligible here.

<sup>167</sup> The reference to a smashed head is quite correct. It refers to what was indicated at a sitting a year before when the lady was present. Though he lost his life on the "Titanic," the evidence is quite conclusive that it was not by drowning, but by being struck on the head with a falling smoke stack. This circumstance explains clearly enough the allusions of the record.

*[Automatic Writing.]*

\* \* [slight scrawl. P. F. R.] I will try once more to write a message to my darling wife. at first when I tried the effect to my nervous system gave me some trouble and I found difficulty in keeping directly to a direct [direct] line of thinking. The shock was not so much the result of the accident as the breaking of ties and the effect on you dearest which I could plainly see and those days when you lay between the [pause] Earth and spirit hovering between life and death I was very near and more concerned for you than for myself. I have never had the slightest difficulty in being able to see you and I have had no particular instructions on the matter either. I just open my eyes and there you are.

I have many friends here but I am not any more sure of them and their direct contact with me than I am of you. I wish I could make you understand this and then you could be more at rest. I know it is hard to take up life in the old way. Perhaps you can never do it in just the way we had planned and I with the rest felt that travel and change of scene and surroundings might bring you something like forgetfulness of the horrible [read 'trouble] horrible thing which happened but I see it has not done it. Nothing outside will do it. It is not easy for a mind like yours to forget anything and the vividness of the personal loss is only intensified as you see other happy people together but I want to see you well enough to come home again and be among the friends we each knew and love and it will give me more strength to come to you as a husband and helper and less like a nurse or physician.

I talk as [read 'like' and 'seek' doubtfully, and 'or'] I talk as if it were easy and yet I know how hard it is and am only forced to speak out this way because I see it is the only way for us to get hold together again. Of course you would rather die and come to me but that does not seem to be the way it will come about. You are only a shadow of yourself but still death does not come. I instead [N. R.] ... instead of death will come to you——

I do not care to rehearse the details of the tragedy nor will I do so for it only excites me and would do you no good. You must know that if I have consciousness anywhere I am seeking you for it was all for you I lived ever after I knew you and I have not changed in the least degree.<sup>168</sup>

<sup>168</sup> All this is very characteristic and no amount of notes would make it clear without reproducing the manner and details of the life of the communicator and his wife together. There is perfectly distinct knowledge all the way through of what the wife was doing at the time and of their former life together. From what is said



(Did you try to communicate on the anniversary of your wedding?)

Yes I did and was successful in a measure but it is one of those things that one cannot always tell how successful the experiment has been until some time later when the result is seen. (Can you recall any word you got through?) I think so for I felt quite sure I was getting through something about the occasion and something about the relationship and about a past trial— yes and there was an effort to get a name which at last came through and it seemed the only thing that was really convincing [N. R.] convincing [read ‘concerning’] convincing. yes [to reading]

(What name was that?) [Thinking of *Vango*.]

a name I have used before here.

(Do you remember communicating with her across . . . . )

yes across the water you mean [pause.] yes at a place where there was a lady you mean. [Pause.] Are you referring to the same place I am. She has been to two places where I tried to come. at one place a man was present and I tried to do something.

(Do you know who that man was who was present?)

yes and I think you do also.

(All right. You tell.)

You were there yourself.

(Yes that is right.)

and I was there and saw you and was helped by you [r] presence [N. R.] your presence and although I could not do all I had hoped I felt it was not a failure by any means.

(No it was not a failure. It was good and if you can give the name of the medium, it will tell a big story.) [Thinking of *Vango*.]

Yes I know and I have a desire to do it and have thought I could but just now I must wait.

W W [pause and Indian.] near other people not quite as quiet and retired as this place. More going on and such interest in the experiment for that was what it was called [read ‘about’] called. Yes and there was less what shall I say less trance. is that the right word.<sup>169</sup>

---

in the reference to the “tragedy” it is clear that the allusion is to the accident which caused his death.

<sup>169</sup> I had taken the lady to *Vango* in London for an experiment and we got some of the same incidents that we got in her first sittings with Mrs. Chenoweth. I had arranged with him under a false name to take a friend and it was not possible to recognize her. The statements that it was a man and that I was present were correct, and tho Mrs. Chenoweth knew I had been in England in September and October, I had given no hint of my being with her. It might have been guessed subconsciously. But the statement that the trance was less than here is perfectly

(Yes, that is right.)

for there seemed to be more normal state and more active brain while I was working but it was a trained condition of mind for the work and I found a number of helpful spirit people who made it easy for me. It was the difference in method which at first confused me but I soon recovered especially when I heard you speak. I got something about a D—— though [so read] though [so written, but read 'through' seeing the intention] too. It was not exactly [read 'readily'] a ... exactly [N. R.] ex... [read] a name but something like a name and I have an idea I ought to write an R right here now in connection with that.

(I shall look over my record which I have and if you can repeat some incident you got through there it will clinch the matter.)

Yes I tried to recall somethings [some things] before the last days something about the earlier times when we were happier and before the shadow fell and I tried to ignore the sad part for I wanted her to be happy because of the occasion and I referred to some one I had met over here and it seems to me that I recalled a pet a pet word [N. R.] word for her.

(Do that here, if you can.)

yes So hard but I will try. [Pause.] M [Pause and P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] \* \* [scrawl.] you recall that I said it there.

(No I do not, but possibly you tried it on the anniversary and if it could be given here, I can find out in the record.)<sup>170</sup>

[Pause.] \* \* [scrawl like 'J', but most probably not intended for that.] [Indian.] V V [not read at time and may not be intended for this interpretation. I give it because the letter comes later and the form of the first is distinctly 'V'] my [pause] M H [?] \* \* [scrawls.] E E E E E d [or 'l', probably 'l'] E E E t no E t no not t ['t' crossed.] E E m ... [pause] W my wife my little bride.

correct and would not so easily be guessed when I had given no hint as to who the medium was. It was clear in the man's work that his own mind was very active in the work. The capital "W" is not intelligible here. If it were a mistake for "V" it would have meaning as the initial of the man's name. But I have no evidence that it is any such mistake.

<sup>170</sup> No allusion to his pet name for her came at that sitting with Vango, and it is not indicated that it was so given. But there evidently was an effort to give his pet name for her through my secretary's sister, as he not only got her name Marian, but kept making efforts at the pet name which the lady recognized and I did not, because I did not know it myself. It was in this country. Now M is the initial of both the real and the pet name of the lady, so that there is a good hit here, though it is not as complete as is desirable.

(Stick to it.)

M y [pause] B R I D E.

(Yes, stick to it.)

[Pause.] J a c k. I \* \* [probably 'w'] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

I want to write her name.

(Yes, do it at all hazards.)

[Pause.] E [P. F. R.] J R [neither letter certain] J R  
[struggle to keep control. Indian and P. F. R.] V [erased.]

(Finish that.) [Thinking of Vango.]

V e V e . . . \* \* [possibly 'V'] V i . . . you know the V is . . .

(I need more of it to be sure.)

V e r r a . . . [P. F. R.] V V \* \* [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

n V V n [not read and 'n' uncertain] \* \* [scrawls]

(Don't give up.)

V e . . . [pause] V \* \* [w or scrawl.] V e n [pause] u s. Tell  
[written and read 'Sall'] Tell my V . . . [P. F. R.] Mrs. Mrs.  
[period inserted both times.] M \* \* [scrawls.] Mrs. Oliver Lodge  
and Mrs. V e . . .

(Go ahead.) [Thinking of Mrs. Verrall.]

It is the one I saw in E. Do you mean England. [P. F. R. and  
distress.]

(I understand, and shall look it up and try to ascertain the facts.)

My tall Venus de Milo. She is that. [Pencil fell.] <sup>171</sup>

---

<sup>171</sup> When the capital V came I suspected that it was the intention to give the name of Vango, but the sequel showed that, whatever the intention was, it was not successful in that direction. The confusion and half error involved makes it less certain than is desirable as to what the intention was. The diversion into the mention of Sir Oliver Lodge and Mrs. Verrall, who is evidently meant by the "Mrs. Ve," having been nearly completed just before, is not intelligible to either myself or the lady, but it indicates the extent of the confusion, as they have no relation to the incident as completed; except that it might have some relation to a cross correspondence there of which I know nothing. But if this was an association of the incident we should have to attribute it to the influence of the Hodgson group in the use of analogies to get through what they knew the communicator was trying to do, and it resulted in the clear reference to Venus de Milo. The lady is tall and the comparison is not inapt. In fact, it is quite apt. Mrs. Chenoweth in her normal state has never seen the lady and knows nothing about her, and no hint was given in the sittings as to who was wanted or who wanted him. In regard to the incident, the lady writes me:

"In the first place my husband never used to pay me compliments and wanted to keep me simple and unspoiled, and I never remember him calling me that, although I found once that he often used to think things like that, but you know he always treated me in such things as one treats a child."

The incident, coming in connection with the allusion to pet names, if it had been

[Personal matters for a sitter in the weeks of January 5th and 12th were omitted by J. H. H. in his annotations, as they were of a very private nature. The evidence was excellent, but annotations difficult to get from sitter, who went abroad after the series. Such notes as were got were corroborative in the main. G. O. T.]

### Chapter XIII, Series IX, Jan. 19, 20, 21, 1914

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

January 19th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Normal.*]

[Just before starting into the subliminal stage of the trance, Mrs. C. closed her eyes and then opening them said:]

When I closed my eyes I saw page after page of clearly written manuscript of such fine writing. [Pause.]

[I had received a long letter just before starting to the sitting and read it on the way. It was not fine writing.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Long pause. Groans, pause and hand reached for pencil but fell back.]

Oh I feel so sick.

[Pause, reached for pencil which, after a pause, fell and had to be reinserted again when the fingers clutched it hard and then paused and after this relaxed hold and took pencil in natural way.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

I am all right and thank you for this time to write to her.

(All right. I am very glad to give you the chance.)

[Pause and article placed on table, consisting of piece of hatband.]

I find it hard to get hold when I think of myself at all but [written like 'out'] I must overcome the feeling of distress for if her reason is to be saved it will be by this means. I am talking of [distress] my little wife. Jack.

(I understand.)

---

true in the sense implied, would be a most excellent piece of evidence of identity and indeed would have settled it in a way beyond scepticism. But not being true as implied, it loses its force and only approximates that interest from the amount of truth in it as a thought of the communicator at times.

The E and J. R. are not intelligible here, tho J is the initial of the communicator's name.

Jack is not the name by which he was called, though his name was John. "Little wife" also is not characteristic of her. It is quite applicable to the wife of the Jack that is possibly meant here.

It is about as hard to have an abnormal state of mind through grief and melancholia as to have it through any other physical state and it is just as difficult a problem to deal with as if it were a more advanced state of insanity. Do not misunderstand me.

(No, I do not. I understand perfectly.)

I see a loss of will power which is as hard to manage as an intensified will. I really do not wish her to die and come to me now for I know it would bring her no joy as she thinks it would. I have been here long enough [apparently written 'eiviy'] to understand a little of the pilosophy [philosophy] and I know that the real salvation is to understand what really exists.

We could not have run [read 'been'] run away to a desert island and been happy except for a time with the consciousness always that we were to return to our normal lives and it would be adding tragedy to tragedy to have her die now. I say this to you because I want you to help me to help her.<sup>172</sup>

(I shall most gladly do so and am already doing all I can.)

I know it and know that you have helped more than everything else that has been done but I cannot bear to see her just submitting to life and getting nothing out of it. [Period inserted.] I wish above everything else for her to understand that she has not lost me All [read 'at'] all her [N. R.] her difficulties will vanish with time— [dash inserted] No one seems to understand her. That is one trouble. I did and that is why the loss of that [mentally read 'child' doubtfully and paused] that human companionship means so much to her. [Pause.] Do you know about the illness physical. [Period inserted.]

(Yes, tell me about it and it will be evidence. I have just learned the fact.)<sup>173</sup>

I will do it. That too is a question of time and when it is over it will bring joy to her and to me. I have a desire to impress on her that I share the responsibility yes [to reading] share it with her as I would have done had I stayed. you know I think what I refer to.

<sup>172</sup> I had promised Mrs. T., wife of the person to whom the hat-band belonged, that the three dates beginning with this one should be for communications from her deceased husband. The interval of two weeks had been given to a lady whose records are too personal to be printed in their entirety. Hence it would appear here as if Mr. T.'s communications followed immediately upon the last from him, but, as explained, this is not the fact. All that is said here is very characteristic and true. The implications in the allusions to her wanting to die are true enough and, of course, as unknown to Mrs. Chenoweth as the two persons involved.

<sup>173</sup> It was for the correction of certain physical difficulties that the lady had gone to a physician in Europe and I had just learned in a letter something about their nature. But there is evidently a gradual change of subject at this point to another which would naturally be connected with it and whose meaning was not apparent until later sittings when she was present.

(I am not sure and can only guess and that might be wrong.)

Yes there is a responsibility which has fallen on her since I died and I have an earnest desire to have her know of my knowledge of it and of [read 'if'] my ... of my desire to be a sharer in it both [written 'bih' and read 'with' and hand pointed till corrected.] the joy and the pain and the [read 'will be'] and the responsibility. [Struggle.] I mean a coming event One ... [struggle to keep control and long pause.] [P. F. R.]

Still here.

(Yes, take your time.)

[Pause and struggle to keep control.] Father [Indian.] father \* \* [scrawl.] \* \* [scrawl or attempt at 'A' or 'O'] [P. F. R.]<sup>174</sup>  
(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] I am still here hanging on like a barnacle but I wish I could explain the difficulty when I try to tell things with which I am perfectly familiar. I seem to get a sudden panic yes [to delayed reading] but I am not the least panicky about anything.

You know there is a group of relatives who are watching [read 'really' doubtfully] watching her every move and they are not confined to her side of the family alone for some of my folks [read 'father's' doubtfully] are ... folks are at the same time watching out for the future [N. R.] future for her. I do not mean business altogether but that is in a measure a part of the care of course, but there is something which [read 'when'] which she is troubled about aside from that and it is of great moment to her but it will come out all right.

(Just what is it,—for evidence.)

I don't understand what you said.

(You said there was something aside ....) [Writing began.]

health bodily condition which *time* [underscored three times.] makes right. [Period inserted.]

(I understand more perfectly and I just learned the facts this morning and it will help me much to give my help, that I know exactly what the matter is.)

The mind will be beter [better] when the body is relieved.<sup>175</sup>

---

<sup>174</sup> The reference to the "responsibility" that had fallen on her since his death is correct and all that is said is so pertinent that it is unfortunate that its personal character is such that it cannot be explained without too elaborate a story which is too personal to tell. The struggle associated with it suggests that it came involuntarily. The reference to "father" here has an intelligible meaning in this connection. But the connection of it all with the allusion to her physical illness, especially as that follows immediately, is very relevant, but cannot be explained in detail.

<sup>175</sup> All this about the relatives on both sides and the further allusion to health

(Exactly.)

and it is not to be wondered at that there has been this mental strain for many women in normal conditions have unusual and strange fears and forebodings and mental disturbances and she poor child has had such agonies of sorrow to weigh her down but I am glad of this glad glad [not read last two times.] glad glad joy joy glad glad. [Indian and P. F. R.] heaven will be hers and mine just as if I had stay[ed].

(I understand.) [Signs of struggle to keep control.]

I love her adore [read 'love'] her ... adore her hear [?] [P. F. R. Indian.] 1 ... little one [P. F. R.] mine. [Pencil fell, hand relaxed and long pause.] <sup>176</sup>

[*Subliminal.*]

[Distress, pause, Indian, distress.] Oh. [Sigh and heavy breathing, and long pause.]

Yes [pause] Oh. [sigh and distress, and long pause.] What did you go for if you wanted to say so much more? Why didn't you stay? [Pause.] He got out before he was ready, didn't he? [Rubbed eyes and awakened.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

January 20th, 1914. 10 A. M.

Before starting into the trance Mrs. C. told me that, last night, when I was talking to a friend of hers whom I was invited to see, the President of the National Association of Spiritualists, she saw a blue light appear on my forehead and quiver a little while and then vanish, but she would not mention it at the time for fear it would convey a wrong idea to the friends present.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Article placed on table. Pause. Slight distress and a little heavy breathing. Pause and sigh.]

I just heard some people talking. [Pause.] It is—hard to turn—the mind—from—the—great—world wide—problems—and interests—to the —specific—instances—of [pause] I don't get that word. [Pause.] Oh personal

and need of its restoration is not only perfectly accurate, but it pertains to the events just mentioned previously and is intimately connected with them.

<sup>176</sup> All about the lady is perfectly accurate. Then the message gets into confusion probably because of the complicated situation which the matter involves. The allusion to "little one" is not what readers would most naturally infer, though it is related to facts well known to the lady and which are made clearer at a later sitting.

(Eh?) [Not heard.]

Personal—identity—but—in the—specific instances—the—whole—  
—structure rests— [Pause.] How patient—the wise—spirits—are.  
They wait—and wait—and wait—and even—when the—doors are  
open—they—rush not in—but—hold—them—ajar, that—even—the  
—weakest—may have—an opportunity—to breathe—his love—to his  
—mourning—heart [Pause.] left—alone—on—earth. [Pause.]<sup>177</sup>

Whose hand is that in mine?

(I suppose it is the regular communicator.)

[Pause, cough, and long pause again when hand reached for pencil which was given and another pause ensued.]

[The content is partly pertinent to conversation held last night with two men present, and partly pertinent to the coming communicator.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

I am so glad to try once more.

(You are most welcome.)

I am sure of that and have the desire to help you because I already feel so much better. It means a great deal to have a cable office established over here. I do not fear quite so much as if I were stranded in an [pause] out of the way place.

I must try and do some work which will help my wife to be prepared for the new burdens which are to fall on her.

(What are they?)

Sweet burdens which would be no burden if I were in her home to receive the great joy.

(Specify the nature of the burden, if you please.)

I am trying to get it down into words.

(All right.)

It is in my mind and I think in yours but I have no help from these people because of its private and secret nature. Do you understand my position.

(Yes, perfectly.)

for I am able to see some good pictures of the future for her and it but I know the shock of my death and all the incidents of horror and pain and sorrow and sleepless nights are not the conditions best for

<sup>177</sup> The dashes between words indicate that the subliminal paused between words or phrases. It was probably intended either for discipline of the subconsciousness in such situations for giving messages slowly enough for me to get every word easily, instead of with the rush and difficulty that I had, or for illustrating to the communicator how he might succeed better by controlling his thought and communicating slowly.



assurance in such a case. I have seen the many gifts [read in whisper because mucous in throat prevented clear speech] gifts. Is that plain to you.

(Yes, perfectly.)

Gifts that are meant to draw the mind from the past to a coming event. [Struggle to keep control begins.] <sup>178</sup>

[Possible Change of Control.]

It makes me decidedly upset to write of offspring [delay in reading] offspring. [P. F. R. and struggle to keep control.]

(Keep calm.)

to come un . . . [read 'in'] unfathered [N. R.] un [read 'on'] unfathered [P. F. R.] to the widowed mother.

(Now tell me just who this is?) [Suspected Mr. Astor.]

[P. F. R. and struggle to keep control.] You [N. R.] You [N. R.] know . . . you . . . You know me.

(I am not certain.)

J J a . . . J a c k.

(Yes, but I have two Jacks in mind.)

[Pause.] [P. F. R. and pause.] M [pause] y w i f e is a lonely [N. R.] lonely little widow who has been here with you last year for I tried to come to her then.

(Yes, but I have two widows in mind and must be certain which one you . . .)

I was killed very suddenly. You asked for me and I came.

(Yes, but there was a question raised as to which Jack it was and it must be cleared up to make me sure.)

how can I help you. I know who I am but do not know how to tell you. We have not got mixed have we.

(It looks that way and if you can start with the first letter of your last name, it will help.)

[Pause.] I see what you mean. [Period inserted.] Is there not a case [pause] on which depends some peace of mind for my little girl who is away. Do . . .

(Yes, that would be true of both widows, except that one cannot very well be called a little girl.)

One tall but young. (Yes.) mine.

(What was she called. I think I got the special name once before.)

yes. Theis [This] mistaken identity business makes me nervous.

---

<sup>178</sup> All this relates pertinently to what had been mentioned before and the allusion to "a coming event," though not explained here, is to what was made clearer later and is perhaps too personal to explain fully.

(I understand. Keep cool.)

I am trying to do so.

(I know it.)

M [distress. Struggle to keep control and half crying, and brushing face.]

I don't like it. [Spoken.]

[Possible Change of Control.]

[Pause.] Jack still here and I was here yesterday and tried to write. [Pause.] I am trying to send a message to her. She is away and not well [N. R.] well [read 'wall' doubtfully] well. [Pencil fell and reinserted twice. Indian and pencil thrown down and finger clutched a few times like Jennie P., and then calmed, taking the new pencil easily and without excitement.] <sup>179</sup>

[Change of Control.]

Good morning. I am G. P. and since I brought the Jack whom I presumed you wished for perhaps [perhaps] I had best come and help matters out.

(Yes, by all means.)

I thought you wished for Jack whose wife is in another country.

(Yes, I did.)

That is the one I brought. [Period inserted.] He was taken out of your life very suddenly and has been greatly helped by the communications established between him and her. [Period inserted.]

<sup>179</sup> There was the sudden intrusion of another communicator immediately after the reference to a "coming event" and the first one evidently lost control. This new communicator was sometimes called Jack and was connected in certain ways with Mr. T. during the lives of both of them, a fact intimated by Mrs. T. to me. They died on the same occasion. I had by this time been informed that "Jack" was not a relevant name for Mr. T. Hence my pressure for the identity of the communicator. I had a clear idea of who he might be. What was said was a clear indication of my conjecture as to who it was, for the phrase "offspring to come unfathered" clearly pointed to the fact of the birth of a child after his death and "Jack" was what some called him, while it might have come for the second part of his name, partly confused. M. was also the initial of his wife's name, though it was also the initial of Mrs. T.'s name. "Tall and young" applies to the wife and widow of the person I had in mind exactly, and not exactly to Mrs. T., though "tall and not old" would apply to Mrs. T. Both men died very suddenly. Mr. T. was killed, as explained, by the fall of the smoke stack, and not drowned. Stories came to me that the other had also been killed. It was perfectly accurate to call the latter's wife "my little girl." It was not accurate to apply it to Mrs. T. I learned later that the widow of the person I had in mind was away for health. I did not know it at this time. But so was Mrs. T.

The question raised in this passage, which was an intrusion upon the communications of Mr. T., is whether the common facts, assuming that the person I had in mind was present, did not arise from interfusion of the two minds. All the facts fit the persons I had in mind, but they do not all fit Mrs. T.

(Yes, George. I called him Jack because he gave that name and as he had never given his real and full name I did not wish to give myself away and I learned from the wife that Jack might apply to another person who lost his life at the same time, and I wanted that cleared up for the sake of this record.)

I understand perfectly and hoped he would hold on and not get too much excited but the name recalled so many memories of the fatality that he was bewildered. I fancy [N. R.] that . . . fancy . . . the name first came as automatism. It was probably a name on his lips at the time of the [read 'her' and finger pointed till corrected] cessation [read 'association'] cessation of normal expression if it might be termed that way and it probably away ['always' and so read] brings in its wake many [pause] suggestive thoughts for like lightning the thoughts play about a spirit after [after] such an explosion of force—[dash inserted.] Now I see the difficulty as plainly as you do but would prefer to have him settle his own identity. It is always best to throw a spirit back on his own resources as far as possible. They learn that way just as students [N. R.] students in college but the answers to questions may be more or less confusing for a little while but there is no doubt about the experience being of use in the future work—[dash inserted.] I find very few parallel cases to this one because of the tragedy and of the consequent intensity of feeling and the great need of the wife for assurance. The husband the one whose wife is in Europe you know . . .

(Perfectly.)

is quite interested in a situation which intimately concerns the wife in question, and he also gets more or less concerned when he seeks to communicate about that and it is because of that perturbation that some seeming mistakes crept in but it is not so far wrong when this explanation of mine is given.

(Do you know exactly what that is about which he is concerned?)

No I do not. (All right.) I might easily find out, but his [two words superposed] his desire was to keep it a secret that he might have he might have no contending influence in the writing but I think he feels pretty humble just this minute and is ready to take us all into his confidence. even Whirlwind whom he fears most of all for she swithes [read 'writes'] s witches her information into any place she can find and lets results take care of themselves.

(I understand.)

I am only trying to right the condition a little.

(Yes, I understand.)

I know it will eventually come out. Everything does if we only wait and have patience but I felt that the situation might demand a present and instantaneous adjustment. [Period inserted.]

We do not have so many opportunities to work out our problems as we used to have and so we try to do them as we move along. Dress and eat and even sleep while on the march.

(Yes.)

I must say right here that R. H. and the group are well pleased with some things that got through in order last year.

(So am I.)

You have been looking some of those facts in the face and have been convinced of their value all over again.

(Yes.)

and it has pleased the group for it was all done with as much care and precision as possible.

R. H. has something he wants to say sometime but will not take the time now.

(Yes, I want to give him a chance as soon as I get a few cases out of the way.)

We all understand and you need have no apologetic tone to us for we know the constant work and indeed we are all pleased to have the cases as you call them. They make good stock. (Yes.) and that is what will draw trade. Yes I do not mean that in the commercial way that it sounded as you read it but there [pencil laid down and new one given.] are certain groups of [pencil laid down and new one inserted.] influential people that must be reached before the work is assured for the ages and that is what we work toward. It will come Hyslop Never fear. It is not a lost Cause.

(That's right.)

It is the Cause of Truth and Salvation for our race and that is why God is on our side or better still why we are on God's side. The money is one of the incidentals. It would be useless without you or the cases or the light but the combination is the working force and while it seems sometimes that one of the ingredients is lacking in the formula we work with what we have and set influences to work to obtain what we have not and in the end we have the complete equipment— [dash inserted.]

I know whereof I speak and I assure you of the victory. Just as in N. Y. we were sure of victory we still cry out Victory victory—and that is my word of cheer to you today.

(Thanks.)

G. P. [Pencil fell, hand seized mine, and Indian.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Tomorrow I shall come and write. (All right.) Tomorrow I shall come and write to her.

(All right.)

[Pause.] Tomorrow morning to write to you. Who is C? Do you know any C and W?

(Well, I shall have to get more to understand.)

I think it is Walter.

(I know a Walter, but need more.) [Thinking of a cousin.]

Yes, of course, I understand, but would the Walter be in connection with any thing here?

(I don't know.)<sup>181</sup>

I think so. I can't see very well. Am I losing my power?

(No, I think not.)

[Pause.] What makes it so dizzy, so wiggly?

(I think because there was some hard work done today.)

Did they fail?

(Not in certain things.)

Hm. [distress.] [Pause.] Do you know anything about a little baby?

(Yes, if you can hint whose it is. Otherwise not sure.) [Thinking of Astor.]

Well, I don't know, but I just see a little baby, just a tiny little

<sup>180</sup> It is quite possible that G. P. did not know who the communicator really was. He may have thought that Mr. T. was communicating when, in fact, another was doing it. This confusion had occurred once before in a remarkable way. A lady was taking a sitting, when all at once a group of messages came from some one wholly irrelevant to her and they were of a nature that required me to keep still. They apparently came from a lover and, as I knew her husband was living, I remained silent until after the sitting. When the message was signed I saw who it probably was and wrote to his widow and the incidents were correct about him. But neither name nor incidents had any relevance to the sitter. The next week Jennie P., the control, was surprised to learn that this person had been communicating and had thought it was the father of the sitter! This means that the communications are a matter of rapport with the thoughts of the communicator and not necessarily and always under the control of the would-be communicator. The present instance may be one of these.

<sup>181</sup> The C and W are not intelligible to me at this time. Nor is there evidence that the Walter I had in mind has any relevance to me or to the other persons concerned in the sitting. I could name a friend who had sittings last year whose name is Walter, but I do not know whether the C has any pertinence for him.

Inquiry of Mrs. T. brings the information that "C" might refer to a friend of Mr. T., a very intimate friend, though there is no evidence of this beyond the initial itself. Walter is the name of a brother living and of a friend deceased.

baby right here. (Whose? Make them tell.) It is not in spirit land. (No.) Could they show a little baby that hadn't come yet?<sup>182</sup>

(It hadn't come at the time of the father's death.)

But has come since.

(Yes.)

Hm. You know how he wants it.

(Who wants it?) [Thinking of Astor.]

The father.

(Yes, but I . . . .) [Mrs. C. goes on.]

He does not want it here. He wants to be a part of its life.

(Yes, but I must be sure that I have the right father in mind.)

Oh yes, you don't know who it is, then.

(No.)

Well, I'll try and find out and tell you. Is that all right?

(Yes.)

I don't know now. I am too mixed up. Do you see?

(Yes.)

Goodbye. (Goodbye.) [Pause and sigh.]

Did you think I was selfishly fighting to help Spiritualism independently of the churches?

(No.) [Mrs. C. defended Spiritualism last night against the churches absorbing it without the name.]

You said you didn't care what the name was and I said I didn't want to be swallowed. I would rather be the whale myself. It wasn't because I am particular about a certain group being recognized, but because the church always puts forward so many unimportant truths and hates this wonderful and most important fact and doesn't emphasize it, and it ought to. That is all I fight for. [Pause and awakened.]

Last night Mrs. C. defended the independence of Spiritualism and resented my prediction that the churches would take up the subject and that Spiritualism would be merged in them.

There was some talk also about Mrs. Piper in which I revealed nothing new to her, tho saying that the Emperor group had abandoned her.

I also admitted on inquiry of the gentleman present that I had received \$75,000 addition to the endowment, he thinking it was \$60,000.

---

<sup>182</sup> The reference to a baby may be the child referred to in the case of the "un-fathered offspring." Later incidents make this clear.

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

January 21st, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Article on table. Pause, groan, distress in face, and long pause.]

Hm. [Pause.] What did we hit? [Whispered]

(What?) Yes. (What?) What did we hit? [Pause.]

Do you know any one named Nan?

(Several.)

Do you? [Pause.] I don't mean Nancy, but I hear Nan or Nannie. [Pause.] It is funny what a mixed up condition is here. Ugh! [pause] It's ... Ugh! [Distress, groans.] Oh, Oh. I don't ... Oh. [Distress and groans with 'Oh' for some minutes and I held hand on forehead. Indian: 'cia bou.' Pause and twisting face.] Don't you know any better than that? Get away. [Said sharply.]

(Who was it?)

[No reply and long pause, and then reached for pencil and paused again.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

Please excuse [read 'ease'] me ... excuse.

(Certainly.)

I did not intend to do it.

(I understand.)

I only thought to do as I had before. I am almost free [pause] from the condition and try to forget the scene of the accident and try to do as I have been advised, that is, recall some of the happy incidents which may waken a [pause] line of memories. I am so earnest to reveal some of the things I know of the life too. I [sigh] am glad of the safe deliverance of the child. You do not know about that but I do. I was much [much] puzzled about the end when there had been so much excitement and pain and sorrow but I was near enough to do a great deal and when the anæsthetic [crowded writing and not read.] was ...

---

<sup>183</sup> There is nothing in the text to indicate for whom the Nan or Nannie is intended, and though I have two relatives by that name there is nothing to connect the names with them and nothing to explain why they might have been mentioned at this time.

The name "Nan" or "Nannie" has no meaning to Mrs. T. Coming in the subliminal it does not necessarily have relevance to her.

[But Lady Nancy Astor is the wife of the probable communicator's cousin living in England, from which country the communicator had sailed on the fatal journey homeward, on the S.S. Titanic. It may be presumed that the communicator was recollecting some matter in connection with his English relative. The connection was less likely to be familiar to the psychic's normal consciousness in 1913 than it would be now—1924.]—G. O. T.

anæsthetic ... applied I was able to increase my influence for good.  
[Period inserted.]<sup>184</sup>

I am also going to tell about the picture which was so closely scanned for a resemblance which was so much desired and I want to say [writing became heavy and difficult.] that I tried [read 'find'] so hard ... tried ... to show my face at the door which stood ajar. [Indian.] I [pause] am not far off nor will I ever be from you dear wife. [Struggle and difficulty in controlling began.] My darling [scrawly] M ... darling [scrawly.] \* \* [probably 'A' but read 'C'] H [possibly intended for 'J' with scrawl that turns it into 'H']. \* \* \* [Long pause.] C [pause] C [Doubtful reading in both cases, and P. F. R.] [Struggle and Indian.] S W i f ... [distress all the while] Oh I can't do it, [spoken.] S W ... S w i f ... [P. F. R. and Indian.] S w ... [P. F. R.]<sup>185</sup>

(Are you trying to give a name?)

Yes and trying to annihilate [N. R.] kill annihilate that self-consci... [Read 'selconsciousness'] s ... sub conscious ... trying to annihilate that subconsciousness. [Distress with exclamations of 'Oh, Oh.'] I want only myself. [Distress and exclamations of 'Oh, Oh.'] [Pencil fell.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh my, who shot me? Who shot me?

(Who are you? I have not the slightest idea.)<sup>186</sup>

Oh! [distress.] Oh! [signs of pain.] I want to go home. [Mrs. C. crying.] [Long pause and quiet for perhaps ten minutes. Then came twisting of face and mouth.] Hm. [pause] Hm. Madame.

(Do you mean Madame?) [Long pause.] (What Madame?) [Thinking of Madeline.]

[Pause.] Please send me back.

(I want a question answered which I was to ask the one I wanted to come. Another person, I do not know who, came.)

Yes.

(If George could come and write, I might find out.)

Where are you? (Me?) Yes. (I am here in the room.) What room? (Your room.) What room, please? (Séance room.) Oh.

[I tore off written sheet from pad.]<sup>187</sup>

<sup>184</sup> The reference to the birth of a child shows that the communicator is the same person who intruded his way into the work of Mr. T.

<sup>185</sup> Inquiry proved that the name Swift had no known relevance in connection with the supposed communicator.

<sup>186</sup> The reference to being shot had no meaning to me, but I learned that it has unusual pertinence which cannot be explained.

<sup>187</sup> The sitting, or automatic writing had been a total failure to get the person I



What's that noise?

(Tearing off paper.)

Please don't. [Pause.] Who is this man?

(Which man?) The man that is here. (I can't tell. I don't see him.)

Hm. I don't know him. [Pause.] \* \* (How?) Yes. (What is it?) [Long pause.] Oh [whispered.] Swift.

(Swift is not the person I wanted and I do not know anything about him. I want that Jack whose wife is in Europe, and I must have a question answered.)<sup>188</sup>

Is he a young man?

(Neither young nor old.)

[Pause.] Do you know what he looks like?

(Yes.)

If I should tell you about him would you know if it is he?

(Possibly.)

He is taller than you, not very stout, square shoulders and blue eyes and brown hair and very pleasant face His hair is parted and he has a mustache and he has got a little collar and his faced is browned and he is very quick in his movements, and he has got a letter M that he holds right up in his hand, as if that were for somebody he knows. Do you know that?

(Yes, finish that name.) That M? (Yes.)

Yes. I . . . Madge.

(I think that is not correct.)

Oh. [pause.] M a r g e r y. [Pause.] It's M a . . . [pause.] He is so nervous. Wait. It is not Maud is it?

(No.)

[Pause.] Wait a minute. [Pause.] Madeline. [Pause.] M [pause.]

(Spell it a letter at a time.)

Yes. [Long pause.] a r i o [pause and Indian.]

(What is the last letter?)

N. (Marion?) Yes.

(That's right.)

---

wanted, Mr. T. Hence I wanted the automatic writing again to have the confusion explained. But apparently the controls did not deem it advisable to go back to the deeper trance. Madame, the name of the chief control, evidently came to compose Mrs. Chenoweth, who had evidently been disturbed by the communicator.

<sup>188</sup> I knew that "Jack" was the wrong name to mention and that it had evidently been the source of the whole confusion, but I was determined not to give the right person away.

He put it through.<sup>189</sup>

(Can I ask him a question?) Yes, of course. (She wants to know if she shall come home right away.)

[Long pause.] Yes. (Yes.) No soon [spelled]

(Soon?) [pause] Yes. (For what reason?)

[Pause.] Can you wait till I find out?

(Yes.)

H A P P I E R here. [First word spelled out.]

(Has he tried to tell her anything on this point where she is?)

[Pause.] Oh yes, yes, yes. (Through?) Some one near her.

(Man or woman?)

I . . . wait, wait, please don't. [Distress and pause.] [I put my hand on Mrs. C.'s forehead.] Oh I am falling, please don't let me fall. I'll die. Oh I see a lady's hand. I see a lady's hand, reading, holding something, paper which she reads. [Pause.] Hm. [Pause.] [Sigh and distress.] Hm. M A N [spelled.] I wish Father John would let me come back. [Pause.]<sup>190</sup>

(Let me ask if any of the children here need this Marion's care?)

[Pause.] N O T E S P E C I A L L Y.

(All right.)

[Pause.] J U S T T O H A V E T H E F A M I L Y  
R E L A T I O N S R E - E S T A B L I S H E D A N D R E -  
S U M E H A P P I N E S S I N T H A T W A Y . I L O V E Y O U  
M Y T H . . . A R L I N G W I F E A N D W A N T Y O U  
T O H A V E T H E R E A L I Z A T I O N O F T H E  
C O M P A N I O N S H I P W H I C H I L O V E T O  
H A V E . J A C K . I S W W W W W W [Pause.] W W I s W  
what you want?

(I don't know that.)

W I L L I E . [Sigh. Reached for my hand.] Please. [Pause.]  
Give me pencil.

[*Automatic Writing.*]

G. P. wishes to say he knows of the experiment and will return later.  
(All right.) explain later. [Pencil fell. Pause.]

<sup>189</sup> The man I was thinking of did not have a mustache and I do not know whether he was correctly described in other respects. It may describe the intruder. I do not know myself, as I never saw him.

The M is the initial of the names of both widows and does not discriminate between them. Madge is not correct for either of them and is probably for Madeline, which came a little later and is the name of the wife of the intruder. Then Marion came, which is the name of the wife of the one I wanted.

<sup>190</sup> There is no evidence that Mrs. T. got any message through a man, as indicated here, at time stated. This is perhaps an echo of the sitting with Vango.

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh I'd like to know who smashed my head. [Pause.] Marion dear I love you.<sup>191</sup>

Chapter XIV, Series X, Jan. 26, 27, 28, 1914

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Dr. Brown. January 26th, 1914. 10 A. M.

Before the trance Mrs. C. remarked to me that she had learned from Miss Whiting that Mrs. Piper's automatic writing had come back to her.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitter was called, but sent back to bring his hat and coat upstairs, and then he entered. Long pause.] [Slight groan and sigh. Long pause, distress, Indian, and reached for pencil and pause.]<sup>192</sup>

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[P. F. R. Indian and pause.] Glad you have [pause] come.

(We are just as glad to have you here.)

You [P. F. R., and pause.] are [pause] kind to [sigh and groan] say it. I said I had [written 'what' and so read when hand paused and I read 'had'] so much to tell my son that I wished for him to come again. [P. F. R.] Father

(Yes, he understands.)

and I come not alone for I have Mother with me today [Indian.]

(Glad to know that.)

[Indian: 'Eboulia'] [Pause.] We know the involved life you live and how earnestly you seek to know the truth for it is that which makes you free. God is in His holy temple. let all men worship Him in spirit and in truth. I am in a state of peace and yet as the old scenes and memories of them return I feel somewhat excited and want to crowd my messages with evidence and still keep the vital and important fact in

<sup>191</sup> The name Willie seems not to be recognizable here. Marion, however, is the name of the communicator's wife. ["TH," are the first two letters of their surname.—G. O. T.]

<sup>192</sup> The sitter had sittings two years prior to this time with the "Starlight" trance and his name came through after them when he was absent. Some time afterward I had to ask Mrs. Chenoweth what she knew about him, as she lived not many squares from him, and then told her he had had sittings. She was interested enough to go and hear him preach once. But she had not been informed of his taking sittings this time and I concealed his identity as I did all other sitters', so that inquiry of her, after the sittings, showed that she had not known he had been present. [In "calling" sitters J. H. H. said only "You may come up," or the like.—G. O. T.]

view that it is God's law which we use in returning and no man made device. I do not want to lose God in [pause] in [Indian] this matter but find Him my boy [writing difficult] my boy find Him for it is so easy to lose him [erased] Him in such studies or rather to shelve Him for future reference but His is the spirit which is the Source of all life.

you do not need my philosophy but I cannot keep my self respect and fail to give a word of guidance. Many matters you have far surpassed me in and make my work seem primitive but beginnings are always primitive and pioneer work.

(I understand.)

So does he but with a son's true heart he would overestimate the simple work I did. I am more pleased and proud of his desire to be right even if conservatism plays its part than I could be at any honor the world might bestow.<sup>193</sup>

I have been over here some years and I have grown I hope to a larger and more liberal faith and I am often in congregations where men from your life more recently [pause] dead to you speak and plead for a more active assistance on our part to save the church from either one of two evils dissolution [read 'desolation' and hand pointed till corrected] or a return to old mysterious despotic power. I have about ten times as much to say as can be said but I leave you to form some plans from what I have said. You know [pencil changed, struggle to keep control and pause.] I always tried to have you think [read 'keep' and pencil broke when new one had to be given, followed by pause to keep control.] thing out things for yourself. It is best so. [Period inserted.]

It was no shock to me when I came here although it was different from my theological conceptions and I would not have dared to preach what I found even had I surmised it. [Period inserted.] I can preach a little. [P. F. R.]<sup>194</sup>

(Stick to it.)

[Groan.] I w [pause] ant your mother to have a chance.

(You are to have two more days, so you can use whatever plan you find best.)

---

<sup>193</sup> The sitter's father and mother are both dead, as implied at the opening of the automatic writing. As Mrs. Chenoweth did not see the person present the facts have as much value as we may choose to put upon them. His father was a clergyman, as intimated, and so was the sitter, as virtually intimated. The son had also become far more liberal and rationalistic than the father had been. The sitter remarks of this part that the "alleged communications are sufficiently in character."

<sup>194</sup> Of this paragraph the sitter writes: "My father in earlier life was a Baptist minister. In his later years he put away all that theology. I do not know what anticipations of a future life he then had, but I should guess they were very vague."

B B B B [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Indian.] a name I wish to write.

(Yes, do it by all means, if you can.)

[Pause.] You are the Professor who manages the [pause] séance.

(Yes, I do.)

I do not recall you in my former efforts.

(That is right.)

B [struggle to keep control and Indian.] br ... color.

(Go ahead.)

yes on [written backward as if intended for 'no' and not read.

Pause.] B r o w n [written backward 'n w o r B']

(Good, good.)

Yes I know and am so glad to greet you son. I have dreamed of a day like this when face to face and mind with mind [groan] we migh[t] meet and have communion and talk of the past and the future as if no change had come to me. It is almost overwhelming to be here and to take hold of this [pause] light in a way that connects us intelligently. I think so much faster than I can transmit though [so read] the hand [finder pointed to 'though' and I read 'through'] but that is normal just as one always does when writing but is it not a glorious truth that makes all life more wonderful even if more complex it seems at first. It is much more simple [struggle to keep control and read 'complex' without excuse, except that I had to manage hand.] simple to me ... to us over here than to you— [dash inserted]

I wish you could see how strong I am now how all the weakness of the old has passed into strength of the new. [Period inserted.] Never have any regrets that I had a less protected [N. R.] life ... protected [N. R.] life ... protected life than yours is. You have mental strain that never came to me. It was only some physical [pause, Indian and pause] physical exposure that I may have endured and you must keep your brain on the [pause] alert all the time lest some one find [N. R.] you ... find you less able than your confreres who may or may not speak carefully but do use their pulpits for discussion of problems that would not have been deemed fit for the cloth in my day.<sup>195</sup> [P. F. R.,

---

<sup>195</sup> Of the name the sitter remarks: "The medium certainly did not see me after my entrance to the house and I had not spoken up till this time. Possibly she might have seen me and recognized me as I was coming to the house, but this is unlikely."

On this last point I may remark that Mrs. Chenoweth always remains upstairs for the purpose of preventing herself from seeing expected sitters and so never admits or sees them admitted to the house, even when she is giving a sitting to some intimate friend who is accustomed to them. She even sits in a room upstairs

and struggle to keep control.] I [Indian and great struggle] \* \* \* \* [scrawls] S S with [read 'took' doubtfully] me. S with me S. [Pause.] Do you recall the West [pause] West farm. [P. F. R. and pause.] My Bible have you . . . [Pencil fell and hand reached at once for mine.]<sup>196</sup>

[*Subliminal.*]

[Distress in face and groan. Pause and distress again, followed by pause.]

Do you see that, a little baby?

(No, what baby?) [Thinking of baby mentioned last week.]

Oh, I don't know. [Pause.] A little boy baby. [Pause.] Do you know anything about a little boy baby buried away off from here a long time ago. [Pause.]

(No, he does not recall.) [Sitter dissented.]

[Pause.] Do you know any one by the name of Charles or Charley? (Yes.)

Way off, not right here. It seems in the family, more like it is a close connection. I can't get it very well. I am all dizzy. Do you know what makes me so dizzy?

(I think so.)<sup>197</sup>

Hm. [Pause.] All right. I'll try and see more tomorrow when I am coming back. You don't mind if I don't stay any longer.

(That's all right.)

[Pause.] Just one word they tell me. I see a little hand full of

where she cannot see the sitter coming to the house. She is herself afraid the mere sight of a person might give her information.

The writing of the name backward was interesting and probably shows that the control was concerned in it, as I think the control is concerned with all messages whatsoever. Here we may suppose that the control did not desire the subconscious to know who was present, knowing well enough that she had seen the man in one of his services. The use of the word confreres, a little later, is evidence of this. Jennie P. uses it and is the only control (except Professor James, and he is probably helped by her) that uses it.

<sup>196</sup> The sitter makes no comment on the capital letter S., but it is the initial of his mother's Christian name. The full name came later. Of the allusion to West Farm the sitter writes: "West Farm might be a confused reference to several things, but it is not clear enough for any definite identification."

I may add to this statement, that the sitter lives on, and is very fond of, a farm west of the city in which he lives during the winter. "Farm" is a part of the name of the place, but "West" is not. He has no knowledge of the Bible mentioned.

<sup>197</sup> Of this passage the sitter writes: "'The boy baby' could be best connected with a grandson of mine who bore my name. He died about five years ago and was buried some thirty or forty miles from Boston.

"Charles or Charley is the name of an Uncle of mine, my mother's youngest brother, still living."

buttons, small round buttons, as if they were buttons on my mother's dress and I don't know . . . It is a man here.

(Yes.) [Referring to sitter.]

I think this is his wife's, her own or her mother's dress. It is not important. It is a little paper of buttons and I can't seem to throw them away. Isn't it funny? (Yes.) You will find out will you? They have no value. It is just sentiment. I don't think they are all there, only a few. Perhaps you can find out, can you? (Yes.) I think there is an A in connection with it. Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

Are you going to have the same people here tomorrow? (Yes.) [Hand presses mine] You won't let go of me will you? (No.) [Pause.]

Isn't the Charles River lovely? (Yes.) [Pause.] The sitter thinks so too you know. [Pause.] He is not so serious as you might think. He has a lot of fun and ready wit, you know. People are not always serious when they appear to be, are they?

(No.)

Well, he is quick as a flash. [Pause.] Is he a doctor? (Yes.) [Delay in saying it.] You needn't answer that unless you want to. [Pause.] Well, he must be a metaphysician. I don't see any bills. [Pause. Left hand fell on table. Sitter left room.]<sup>198</sup>

[Long pause, rubbed face and awakened.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Dr. Brown. January 27th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitter admitted. Long pause, and then some distress.] I haven't gone yet. [Pause.] Hm. Too many people around. [Pause.] In the crowd I see Dr. Hodgson. I wonder what he wants.

(Perhaps he wants . . . .) [Had in mind a promised message, but I was interrupted by following.]

---

<sup>198</sup> Of the incident about the buttons the sitter says: "My wife has a small bag for buttons which was one of her mother's and was very probably made from a piece of her dress. I knew nothing of this at the time of the sitting."

The sitter makes no comment on any possible significance for the letter A. He has the title "Doctor," being an LL.D. This is practically indicated in the distinction indicated by excluding him from the class of physicians. If Mrs. Chenoweth had seen him before the sitting there would be no reason for asking about the degree, as her knowledge of it would go with her knowledge of the man. He is properly characterized here, and this trait, a combination of seriousness and dry humor would never be known by Mrs. Chenoweth without personal acquaintance with the man. His humor would not be suspected at first.

Wait a minute. [Waving hand in warning to stop statement.] [Pause.]

My old friend. [Pause.] Greeting and [pause] Have I ever done this before?

(Yes.)

I thought so. \* \* \* \* [Few words not caught, as spelling began.]

Success in ... I have to wait till I hear it. your wait a minute. [Pause.] study. Period [spoken] Psychology has revealed new and unknown possibilities but it has vast amount of work to do yet and I—big I it is, capital I—am still at the helm still as enthusiastic as when you and capital I used to talk about these things. [Pause.]

Yes [pause] it is not to you but the other Doctor. [Pause.] Do you know any one named Jane? (What?) Jane.

(Mr. B.: I do not think of any one this minute.) (I do.) [Jane is name of sister of person I suspected present yesterday.]<sup>199</sup>

[Pause.] Hm. I got to go. [Long pause.] He smokes, doesn't he. (Yes.)

How do you know? The same way I do?

(I don't know.)

I didn't mean to speak of it.

(Mr. B.: That is innocent enough.)

Hm. [Pause and reached for pencil and paused again.]

[The words above that are separated were spelled out. All others were uttered in the usual way without spelling.]

[Automatic Writing.]

Mother [pause] mother.

(You are welcome.)

and one two three dear ones with me and so many who are conscious of the life and effort you and yours are engaged in. I feel the impulse [delay in reading] to rush [read 'reach'] forward to ...

<sup>199</sup> The sitter's comment on this subliminal matter is as follows, the reader noting that the message was spelled out in a very formal manner:

"I have an idea as to the person from whom the communication spelled out might come, but it is too uncertain for evidence. That person would be likely to make a point of the fact that I also might be called 'Doctor,' as appears in the sentence following.

"I have since learned from family records what I am quite confident I never knew before that my mother in her childhood lost a younger sister named Jane. This is rather significant in view of the fact that it purports to be my mother who immediately proceeds to write. So far as I know that name does not appear otherwise in my circle of relations and friends."



rush . . . impulse to rush as fast as I can that I may say a few of the things I have charged my mind with before the time is over. My first desire is to forget all the time that has elapsed since I left the world as you know it and to at once begin to tell you something about the reality of this life I am now living. It was a great mystery to me just what had happened when I found myself here quite well and quite [pause] alive and a part of a well organized and [pause] humanized if I may say it that way life where I saw and knew those who had passed on before me and was still conscious of the life and friends I had left. It was quite unexpected and quite different from anything I had [pause] been taught to believe but it was so much better that I felt [read 'will'] felt reconciled at once. That is one of the strange things about it all for one seems to at once become content [N. R.] to find . . . content to find the old orthodoxy [read 'orthodoxy' as I saw it was so intended] set aside and the new heaven [read 'however' doubtfully] heaven is accepted with gladness. For a long time I felt as if another change might come But to be able to see and hear you and to be able to follow [read 'balance' to have corrected] your life with . . . follow your life with the same interest that I would have shown had I stayed that was the supreme joy.

Your father still preaches but I am not in that work. I think he preaches for the sheer love of helping his fellow men. I often tell him he is unfit for any other work but it is only a word of mine which I use sometimes when I desire to have him do something else. [Period carefully inserted.] I am as glad to see him do it as any one could be but I want [read 'think'] [Indian] him want [N. R.] him to have a time to do some of the things he always wished to do and did not because his life was so bound up in his work.

(What . . . ?) [Writing went on.]

I think he often wanted to travel . . . wanted . . . yes [to reading, not read first time.] see other places but was not able to do it and he still says while the world needs him he must serve. [Read 'save' and then 'serve,' P. F. R.]

It takes so long to express anything but I want to tell you how often I am in the home in the room where you work and study and write. It is a good place for me to draw near to help you but I am not interested in that side of your life only. I know the rest of it as well. [struggle to keep control and new pencil point broken.] I must not try so hard.

(That's right.)

The life is so different from mine that I often wonder how you adjusted yourself to it but you do and I am proud and happy. Do not

measure yourself always by what you fail to do but by what you have done.

I ought to tell you about Jesus but that is a subject of such vast importance that I dare not begin to talk of it. So much error in the superstitions regarding him I hesitate not only because of the time it would take.

I have planned to say some things about the past for your help in believing that I can recall it but you do not know how excited I get when I find myself right here in contact with you H. It is good good so good.

Do you know who E is.

(Mr. B.: Not sure.)

a lady over here came before I did.

(Mr. B.: Well, that was a good while ago.)<sup>200</sup>

Yes but it is the past [read 'best' as it was superposed] I am ... past ... am trying to write about. \* \* [scrawl and struggle to keep control.] J J J [P. F. R. and pause.] my [long pause] bok [book] of s.... [P. F. R.] pt... [probably attempt to write word 'scripture'] [Pencil thrown and hand reached in manner of Jennie P.]<sup>201</sup>

[Change of Control.]

[Three pencils rejected.] I want to come just a moment it may help the lady to get hold again and then you know ought you ought to have a little something [N. R.] to keep ... something to keep you busy. the lady who was just here has been over here for a long time. She is \* \* [very] a ... very active and quite [N. R.] al ... quite alert and she is trying [mere scrawl] to give her son some little evidence of her personality which [N. R.] it is ... which ... presumed he wants so long as he is here with you for you are \* \* [one] of those ... one of those insatiable greedy scientists who never has enough but cries constantly more and more. When will a poor spirit have a chance

<sup>200</sup> Of the communication purporting to come from his mother the sitter writes:

"My mother died of a brain disease and had been for some months not in her right mind. I can well believe that on the other side she found it a great 'mystery what had happened,' for she could not have realized anything about dying. She was brought up in the old-fashioned faith but had much outgrown it. About the pertinence of the reference to my father, that he had wished to travel, I cannot say. As a country minister he, of course, lived rather a narrow life, though he had seen something of the world.

"E' would be a good letter save for the statement that it belonged to a lady who passed over before my mother. As it is, it seems without value."

<sup>201</sup> [Note missing. But "J." is initial of "Jane" mentioned in previous sitting, relative of present communicator.—G. O. T.]

to just talk about the things that are most interesting [N. R.] interesting.

What would . . . What would you say to your mother if she came in now. You would tell her about your children your work . . . your work your interests &c— [dash inserted.] not ask her to unpack the old treasure chest and read her old love letters to you and a great many spirits who are not scientifically inclined [N. R.] inclined resent this picking apart [N. R.] apart of the heart's choicest memories and so they talk of patchwork and buttons and seams [N. R.] seem [N. R.] seem quite silly and uninteresting to the one who has fifteen cents [N. R.] worth cents [N. R.] worth cents worth of brains. Still since you keep them at the task they must appear like a lot of heathen [read 'children' and 'kitchen'] heathen witnesses who have no high and holy interests. As for me I will have none of it. I am not a religionist either but I know enough to keep away [N. R.] from . . . away . . . my friends and help my enemies and so I hope to rise to heights supernal and wear a crown on my silly head at last in spite of you <sup>202</sup>

but to return to this dear mother who waits [N. R.] waits while I give you this good advice. She has some interest in the family of her son and desires to have you know that she and his father are often in the family circle and that they watch [N. R.] with interest . . . watch with interest what has been done.

She speaks of something which has come to one of the members of the family during the last year. Is there a child a son of this one a grandson of the spirit living [N. R.] I . . . living I mean that has had some good particularly good thing come into his life lately.

(Mr. B.: That would be grandmother not my mother.) [Said in perplexity as to meaning of message.]

Yes a son of yours Just [superposed] a . . .

(Mr. B.: No, there is no grandson of my mother here.)

---

<sup>202</sup> The sitter's mother had long been dead. Evidently Jennie P. had to come in to relieve the situation, as the communicator gave indications of losing control and going to pieces, in the wandering character of her message at the end. Probably the strain of trying to give evidence, which she began after her general communication expressing her natural interest in her son, was more than she could stand, and the effect aroused the natural instinct of Jennie P. to let the communicator take his or her own course regardless of the scientific necessities of such things. She always likes to chaff me or even half reproach me for my rigidly scientific desires. As her purpose is to relieve the strain it is possible that the reproachful tone or attitude of mind taken by her is her type of humor, as I think it is, though it is sometimes tinged with genuine resentment against the scientific spirit which will not allow the human heart to have its expression. This is a natural trait of Mrs. Chenoweth, though she fully recognizes the correctness of the scientific spirit and insists on it in her own weighing of the facts.

All right. It is about a grandson whom she speaks [of] and I thought it was one in your life. It may be one [N. R.] here ... I [read] but if so it is young—a young man not a n ... dd [old] one ... not ... [pencil fell.]<sup>203</sup>

[Change of Control.]

I may come again may I. She simply kept the place for me.

(I understand.) (Mr. B.: Yes.)

I thank you for waiting so patiently and I tried to show her the book we all loved the book your father used—the old Bible. [Pause.]

(Go ahead.)

the family Bible which was read [read 'real'] a ... read and discussed as the word of God. you know dear boy what I mean. I do not refer to the one he used to carry with him but the one at home. [Period inserted.] You know what I mean.

(Mr. B.: Yes, I think so.)

and in it were some things written I think still there and a letter [letter] [pause] a written paper folded in it with some notes not full but a few words. [Pause.]

(Do you know the words?)

Yes if I can write them. It is something like a text and is either Ephesians or Ezekiel [both written very slowly] It is rather faded and not quite clear but it is there and is a loose paper.<sup>204</sup>

Do you recall coming home after going away for some study and having some talk about another language. [Greek letter delta made and not read till later.] Greek I think it was Greek or Hebrew (Mr. B.: Very likely, but I don't remember it.) but it was a talk about something in the Scripture [delay in reading.] S ... Bible.

(Mr. B.: Well, it has gone from me.)

and it was about the different version of certain passages. [Period inserted] I recall it because I was thinking of the book and while it

<sup>203</sup> The sitter writes regarding this passage: "I was myself somewhat confused about the reference to a grandson. I have a son, in whom my mother would be interested. He has been fortunate in many ways, though not especially so, that I know of, during the past year.

<sup>204</sup> The sitter comments on the reference to the Bible: "I have had no opportunity to search my mother's Bible. It is probably in my library at my country home."

March, 1924, sitter writes to G. O. T.: "I could find no paper in the old family Bible like that referred to; in fact, no paper at all. This is not conclusive, either way, as the book was subjected to various family removals before it came into my hands."

But note the apparent effort to read faded writing—an unexplained item.—G. O. T.

means nothing much to you I was impressed at the time by the fact that it was new to him.

(Mr. B.: I think likely. I don't remember.)

I wonder too if you recall a road that led to a house on the hill. [Period inserted.] And I want to write about your grandmother.

(Mr. B.: Yes.)

who was with us so much.

(Mr. B.: Yes.)

at one time. You know how cheerful she was. [groan] Busy and much loved you boys [pause] boys [pause] were good to her. [Pause.] P [pause] \* \* [either 'W' or 'Ih'] S S is what I want to write.

(Go ahead.)

You know what S is for.

(Yes, finish that.) [Sitter nodded assent.]

S a . . . [pause] S a r a h.

(Mr. B.: That's good.)

Sarah. (Capital.) (Mr. B.: Yes.) Yes I had to think hard on something else to do it.

(Fine.)

I have such love for you and often long for your coming but this is the next best thing. I am never [read 'near'] never lonely but I would like to have the long and uninterrupted visit when you could lie on the grass and watch the sky and dream your dreams and talk them over with me. [Period inserted.] <sup>205</sup>

L [pause] you know L over here with us.

(Mr. B.: I don't recall L.)

L \* \* [scrawl.] Aunt L \* \* [scrawls]

(Mr. B.: No.)

[P. F. R.] (Stick to it. Try it again.)

A L [so read but doubtfully] L y [?] [P. F. R.] no no not al. L y ['y' made like 'J' and not read.] L y [pencil fell and catalepsy

---

<sup>205</sup> The sitter's comments here are as follows: "The reference to my grandmother is correct. She came to live with us after my grandfather's death when I was not more than six years old. After my mother's death she long had sole care of my two younger brothers. She lived to be very old, much over 90. 'Sarah' is the first name of my mother."

The incidental remark that she "had to think hard on something else to do it," referring to the getting of the name, is a most important allusion in the light of conjectures that I have formed in connection with many messages; namely, that they come best and perhaps solely as involuntary or unconscious communications. There is much evidence in the psychological situation of many messages to indicate that they have to come without constrained effort at them and so automatically, so to speak. I had formed this view of them long before this casual statement was made.

with much groaning and distress while I rubbed the arm and hand and fingers. Finally they relaxed and became quiet, hand reaching for mine.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Who is John?

(Mr. B.: Well, I don't know which John.)

[Pause.] John, you know John.

(Mr. B.: I don't think of any particular John.)

Do you know any one named John Lysander?<sup>206</sup>

(Mr. B.: No.)

They seem to go together. [Long pause.] I've got an awful headache. [I placed my hand on her forehead.] You can't cure it. The spirits will take it away. [Pause and I removed hand, taking hers in mine.] Who is that lady, do you know?

(What lady?) The lady I see. (No, I don't. You tell.)

I can see a little lady with curls, her hair sort of curly. She is very bright and pretty and not old not over thirty if that old and she has dark eyes and hair dark and she is with an old lady. Do you know her?

(Mr. B.: I don't recognize her.)

Have you got a cousin in heaven? A girl cousin?

(Mr. B.: I presume so.)

\* \* \* \* [Notes not legible, but they were about the sitter's hesitating answer.]

(Mr. B.: No, not that exactly. I have a cousin dead. I don't know who it is.)

Gone long time. Is she dark?

(Mr. B.: No,—perhaps so.)

Not awful dark, not blonde. I think she is kind of bright and quick, rather nice, a little odd, a little bit peculiar.

(Mr. B.: Yes.)<sup>207</sup>

You are awful slow. [Sitter speaks with great deliberation and was trying to think what message meant.]

(Mr. B.: I slow?)

He talks slow, slow in speech, not slow in wit. I think you got

<sup>206</sup> On "Aunt Ly" the sitter remarks: "My father married a second time. As we children were quite grown and his second wife much younger than he, we always called her 'Aunt Libby.'" [By inference from "called," A. L. is dead.—G. O. T.] On the name "John" the sitter writes: "John might mean much, but 'John Lysander' means nothing to me."

<sup>207</sup> Of this passage the sitter remarks: "An Aunt of mine who died quite young might be thus described: otherwise the reference brings nothing to my mind."

quick wit enough. I meant slow in speech, moderate, deliberate. I guess you are all right. I don't mean that except so far as I get into your surroundings. I don't mean to judge any one.

(Mr. B.: Yes.)

That is for God to do. I got enough to do looking after my own affairs. Some people desire to get \* \* \* \* not so easy. There are so many people around you

(Mr. B.: Yes, most probably.)

Yes in one way. Did you ever live in the country.

(Mr. B.: Yes.)

Well, I see you in the country eating an apple, like a red . . . . it seems more like a . . . [pause] It don't seem like a winter apple. It seems like a fall apple.

(Mr. B.: All right.)

I see you . . . It seems more like you had gone away from home and got into different conditions and you go back again and pick up an apple. It tastes good. You were quite young.

(Mr. B.: Oh, my boyhood.)

You were kind of young, green, boyish. It seems that way.

(Mr. B.: That is all right.)

You know several other places that are familiar. You know when to get these things.

(Yes.)

There is such a freedom and joy about it. I think you love the country. I don't know that apple. It is a familiar apple. Have you got a country place you go to now? [Said as if a new thought and with surprise.]

(Mr. B.: Yes.)

It is not much like the old country home.

(Mr. B.: No.)

Just a country house, not like the air, trees, sky around you. Don't you love your country home?

(Mr. B.: Very much.)

You just love it when your educational and other work is done and it is a real joy, the country, to get up and have your own place. Your wife loves it.

(Mr. B.: Yes.)

She is a dear. (Mr. B.: Yes.) I don't mean because you love her, but she is a woman kindly and gracious. [Mrs. C. laughed in "Starlight's" manner.]

(Mr. B.: I hope so.)

She is a lovely woman. She don't get much ruffled. She is pretty

independent. She isn't foolishly independent but nice \* \* \* \* [notes not legible.]

(Mr. B.: Surely.)

There is something growing around your country home. I see something like shrubs. It's bushes, not fruit, but flowers. Looks like . . . [pause] something like roses. [Pause.] I am trying to see what they are. They are roses. They are thorny and grow up high and are hardy and a big clump of them. I don't mean they are climbers. They are down low and have been there a long time. There is a great lot of them. Got cut down tho.

(Mr. B.: Some of it.)

I see it around. There is a place like a shed. It is not like a real barn. It may be one, but it is not where I am going. There is a little bit of a window in it. Oh my, it is pretty. You go out behind the shed and get a view. It is awfully pretty. What you like is away off there. There is a high place where \* \* \* \* \* [notes not legible.] scenes follow the river near.

(Mr. B.: Yes, I have seen it many times.)

It follows the river down away off. All the hills are away off. I see cows in the pasture or on the side of the hill quite distant. That's what I call worth while.

(Mr. B.: It is pretty grand.)

If you haven't that sort of thing it isn't worth while. My you can dream of God in a place like that. One longs to take many souls away from the strife to feel and understand God. Ah, it is good you can be there.. [Pause.] I'd like to know what that mountain is that I see off there [Pause.]<sup>208</sup>

Do you know anything about an old-fashioned bootjack?

(Mr. B.: Yes.)

Did your father have one?

(Mr. B.: Yes.)

I see an old-fashioned bootjack that belonged to your father. He wore those boots. They looked long and you couldn't get hold of them to pull them off.

Better come again when I can try about John. It is more like Jonathan.

(Mr. B.: I don't know.)

<sup>208</sup> Of this long passage about a country home the sitter makes the following statements:

"I was a country boy: I am very fond of the country and have a country home. We have there many flowers and flowering shrubs of various kinds. We also have quite an extensive view of hills. The description here is in the spirit of all this, but no items of the description strike me with peculiar force."



Back in that time, as I think of it. He had a high pitched voice. I'll tell you more about him when I see more. Goodbye.<sup>209</sup>

(Mr. B.: Goodbye.)

Hm. Do you know what I see in front of me? (What?) A great big organ.

(Mr. B.: A church organ?)

I think so. It is such an \* \* [word illegible.] You love it.

(Mr. B.: Very much.)

When I say it I just know it. Somebody played the organ that is gone to spirit land.

(Mr. B.: \* \* \* \* ) [Not distinctly uttered.]

It is just like saying: When I look at that I think of the friend that is gone. I wonder what \* \* [word not legible.] he is making in another life. I don't know whether it is Benjamin.

(Mr. B.: That might be.)

It sounds like Benjamin. [Hand fell on table. Long pause and sitter left. Pause and awakened.]<sup>210</sup>

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Dr. Brown. January 28th, 1914. 9.30 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sigh, sitter admitted. Pause.] Oh I love these days that are like spring.

(Yes.) [Day a fine spring morning in character.]

You don't say it as if you did. [My voice low, as-I was busy making notes.]

I think I love them all. I love the winter too. Each day I think is a little better than the other. [Pause.]

Pa. [Pause.] Do you know any [pause] I keep hearing Pa, Pa,

<sup>209</sup> Of the boot-jack incident the sitter says: "The boot-jack was a familiar incident in my boyhood, but I have no association that I can recall with any particular instrument of that kind."

The sitter makes no comment on the name Jonathan as a correction of the previous allusion to John expanded into John Lysander. Cf. Note 205.

[Jonathan in the connection indicated in the text has no meaning in sitter's acquaintance.—G. O. T.]

<sup>210</sup> This passage has much interest because of its peculiar isolation of the reference to an organ and the name Benjamin. The sitter says of it:

"Benjamin J. Lang was the organist of my church. He died while a very large and handsome new organ was being installed and in his delirium talked much of the organ. Something of this probably might have been learned from public prints."

The importance of the sitter's last remark depends on the assumption that the medium knew who was present. She presumably knows nothing about who is present and the sequel shows that she did not know.

as if detached. It is not Papa. It says Pa. [pause] Pa. [Pause and cough. Distress.] Pa. I can't get away from that Pa. [Long pause.] [Rolled hand and paused again.] <sup>211</sup>

Now I'm going. [Pause.] Oh see! Oh. [pause.] Oh see! [Pause.] Hm. [Pause] Oh! [whispered] wondrous beauty. [Groan.] God's world all all [pause] starry dome of night. [Pause.] Never such inspiring soul seeking to lift men up to a clearer understanding of God made manifest in the world. Never a humble heart lifting its voice in prayerful guidance and sunbright angel with truth serene triumphant in his soul stands by in stately grandeur and inspiration sweet. [Pause.] So shall the world be lifted, so shall men be saved, so only, only, only. [Two or three lines whispered.] Not to close the church but to open it; not to confine it, but to let it loose; not to leave it, but to stay and glorify it. [Distress.]

Oh please, please go away. [Distress. and pause.] You press me so, please. [Pause and reached for pencil.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

I am come that ye may have life and have it more abundantly but my kingdom is not of this world. [Pause.] My kingdom is of God and they who worship God truly worship him in spirit and in truth. [P. F. R. twice, pause and P. F. R. twice again.] <sup>212</sup>

[Change of Control.]

I want to come but do not think my strength as great as his.

(Whose was that strength before you came?)

[Indian and pause.] I saw a company of shining ones and from among them stepped [read 'supposed' doubtfully] a man . . . stepped . . . who knew the needs of the world and he wrote but I did not see what he wrote. I saw Professor William James among them and he was radiantly happy to see his friend Dr. B. present and is hoping that some great word clearly spoken may yet reach his ears. It is [Indian] an eventful hour and so many would gladly give greeting but the fear of disturbing a family party. [Pause and struggle and heavy scrawl.] <sup>213</sup>

[Change of Control.]

W. [P. F. R.] J [pause.] Family party can . . . [heavy

<sup>211</sup> The sifter makes no comment on the reference to "Pa." It is probably an intrusion that is irrelevant.

<sup>212</sup> This rather religious passage is possibly a homily representing an intruder again. It has no evidential interest.

<sup>213</sup> The second control is again probably some intruder outside the family, judging from the closing allusion.

writing and I had to hold my left hand on Mrs. C's arm for some time to help it to keep calm control.] wait a moment.

(All right.)

I am drawn by the psychologic power of curiosity on my part this moment. drawn into the current where communication is going on. I came with the group to see how the work was progressing

(Good.)

and when the communication turned on me the first thing I knew I was too near to retreat without giving my sign and greeting to you both.

(Thanks, glad of it.)

It is a good thing to have the church with us Hyslop.

(Yes it is. I have always thought so.)

Yes but it fights shy of science in most cases and I am not surprised at that. I do not have the honor of intimate friendship with our friend but know him and greet him with more understanding [distress] and appreciation now than ever before. That does not imply a lack of appreciation of work done while I was still with you. Our lines [read 'aims' doubtfully] lines crossed now and again in those days and I know of the interest he [erased] you felt in these matters.

I may as well confine myself to the first person but it is very easy to slip into the third because of your—H—'s voice being the dominant note——

It is very wonderful to find myself here discussing these things and feeling the same naturalness about [pause] the conditions that I felt before I was translated. [period inserted] It does not seem a serious matter but the reality of the connection came over me with a new sense of awe. More because it is a subject of such doubt and of such tremendous importance when accepted.

I have been to see you at times when there was quiet and reading and I could find myself in proper relation to your thought. If I could make some sign to you I suppose I would do it with the same avidity that I could grasp your hand now if I were able.

It was the Emperor group that your friend saw and I remembered your interest in the Emperor work.

(Yes.)

Long ago when the work first assumed definite possibilities you signified your interest in a definite way. That was in the old Hodgson days

(Yes, that is true:)

when he himself [N. R.] was ... himself ... fumbling the ball.

He often refers to those days and I tell him that many of us came

to conclusions long before he did and then after his dilatoriness he was first and gave us all new trouble by making the same fumble with the ball on this side but he retorts and I have to kep [keep] still but this time I am in first and get my inning. [Period inserted.]

It may seem like feeble minded communication I am giving but when two men meet they do not usually [usually] talk laboratory work in the first few moments. [Period inserted.] It comes after the [pause] mind has settled to the real issues. [Period inserted.]

I have much to say to you about the real problems. It is now becoming a matter of receptivity [read 'simplicity' and 'reciprocity' doubtfully] am I writing badly. [Pause.] r e c e p . . . . [read] yes. The receptive mind will help the friend [read 'present' doubtfully] friend to communicate freely and evidence then follows not as forced [N. R.] forced bits of past experience which must be laboriously [read 'colorously'] labor . . . . [read] pieced together but as a natural relationship. [Period inserted.]

(Then do you find it easier now than when you first came to me?)

Infinitely. I was about to add if I might I should like to invite my friend to come at another time when I could feel I was not usurping the time which his own loved ones desired [read 'deserved'] desired. [Period inserted.]

I remember seeing a flower in a small glass vase near you one morning when I came to see you. It was in your home placed there by your wife and a fragrant flower brought from some place where it had been used for another purpose. [Period inserted.] I intended to mark the date but it was autumn. [Indian. P. F. R.] \* \* [scrawls] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] J a m . . . . [Pencil fell and struggle.] Oh dear [uttered.]<sup>214</sup>

---

<sup>214</sup> Of the long passage purporting to come from Professor James the sitter writes:

"This is interesting but not very evidential, so far as I am concerned. 'In the old Hodgson days' I was a member of the English Branch of the Psychic Society of which Professor James was president. He very likely knew that fact. He never made any call upon me at my home. We met once at the house of a mutual friend where we were both calling and there is some reason why that should be remembered."

The explanation of the appearance and communication of Professor James is interesting, and confirms the theory that control may be an accidental thing and only a matter of rapport with a stream of consciousness primarily and not necessarily a matter of will as with the living. Apparently the Imperator group were interested because of the presence of a clergyman of their type of ideas and either prepared the way for Professor James or had to let him in on their wake as a transition to family interests. It is clear that church interests were uppermost, as the record shows on any theory, and in spite of his liberal views Professor James always

[Change of Control.]

Father Father.

(Welcome.) (Mr. B. Yes, welcome.)

I come and am so glad. I do not regret you [r] friend but I long for more time my boy.

(I hope some later day you can have more chances.)

Yes I know the reason and am only anxious to impress on him that the years do not dim my consciousness of him nor do I lose my ideals for him. It is the joy of my present life that I am still in the possession of all those faculties which made life on earth dear and valuable. Do you remember about my going away. I mean my coming here. [Period inserted.]

(Mr. B. Perfectly.)

The coming was so clear and calm. You know although the sad sad separation made sorrow for you all. for all of you but I went peacefully yes [to delayed reading] with my blessing and my trust in God the last thing for you to remember.

(Mr. B. Yes, true.)

It was such a beautiful day. yes beautiful at the time but did it not rain soon after.

(Mr. B. Well, I should think it did. I forget.)

and then the service was so simple and yet so full of that sincere quality of grief that even then I longed to break the silence and tell you of my presence. Memories are coming fast now—[dash inserted.] Your mother was left [N. R.] left here. [writing became very heavy and difficult with the beginning of this last sentence, and great distress shown.]

I [Pause and Indian.] R [pause] [P. F. R.] <sup>215</sup>

saw what the church stood for in the midst of all that he regarded as illusory. This is true of the Imperator group also.

Professor James seems to direct his message to me. He undoubtedly directs some of it to me, while a part may be directed to the sitter. The most characteristic incident of it is the description of Dr. Hodgson's course when living, intimating his cautiousness and hesitation about making the leap to the spiritistic theory. The simile of "fumbling the ball" is characteristic of Professor James while it describes Dr. Hodgson's actual course and athletic tastes. The situation in which his decision placed all the rest of us is also marked by the truth and a fine sense of humor like Professor James's. The whole passage with its simile is perfectly characteristic of his mind and it represents a knowledge of Dr. Hodgson which the medium, Mrs. Chenoweth, did not have, especially the characteristics which make the reference to ball playing so apt.

<sup>215</sup> Of the message from his father the sitter writes: "My father's death was entirely peaceful, but he had lost the power of speech and there was no message at the end that could be understood. My wife says that the morning (he died just about sunrise) was one of the most beautiful she remembers. My daughter, who

(Stick to it.)

and do you know the \* \* [scrawls.] [P. F. R. and groan.]

[Apparent Change of Control.]

Sister [very heavy writing and P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

sister \* \* [scrawls.] sister West. I must come. I must come. [All heavy writing and now heavy breathing came with groans and I had to hold my hand on medium's forehead. Medium reached hand for sitter's and he held same until the struggle and stress ceased, when hand reached for pencil.]

m [P. F. R. Pause.] Oh dear. Oh dear. [uttered.] Sadie [read 'Salie' doubtfully] no Sadie. [Effort to erase whole page.] Sister was there and [Heavy writing. Medium threw pencil away violently, dashed her hand about and showed signs of great distress. Then quieted down and reached for pencil.]<sup>216</sup>

[Change of Control.]

Mother will help for it is only a matter of too much pressure on the nerve centers. Nothing to be disturbed over.

(I understand.)

I want to say there are four of us here and we are all equally eager to get a message to you for while we are perfectly well able to see you and know that you are glad to have even one of us still we have a desire to prove to you that we are all together in a family group living in a good way with added opportunities for progress and as a family we still have that same unity of purpose which always characterized our family. I do not need to tell you that when the rest get a little nervous over this coming I try to keep [keep] calm and tell them to be patient that you will understand that if one of us lives and is conscious and able to send you a message that we must all be and that we must all be together. We would not be happy otherwise. [Period inserted.] It is a great comfort to have them with me and you know she was so ill so very ill it was best after all that it ended as it did.

---

was then staying away from home, remembers that the day of the funeral she came home through rain. I have no memory about this."

The sitter makes no comment on the reference to his mother being "left here" or to the letters I and R. [The sitter replies to G. O. T.'s inquiry: "No meaning in the letters I and R so far as I know."]

<sup>216</sup> The sitter's comment on this passage is as follows: "This has the appearance that my sister has here tried to break in and failed. This would be sufficiently in character, as she was very impulsive and very apt to attempt things that she could not carry through.

"'Sadie' or 'Sallie' is the name of my youngest daughter. We use both names."

(Which was ill?) (Mr. B. She.) [I saw the 'she' and wanted relation indicated.]

[Pause.] I mean the boy my boy. Just a minute. I will get at what I want to say.

(All right.)

It is [pause] he not she—[dash inserted.] he. You [heavy writing and struggle to keep control.] I know to whom I refer.. I do not mean your father

(Mr. B.: No.)

but a younger one.

(Mr. B.: Yes.)

who seemed to have such prospects for life

(Mr. B.: Yes.)

and who should have stayed as far as human understanding could see but who having come here is of such use and comfort and strength to your father and to me and he is so often in your home a part of the life there and going forward as you know he must. [Period inserted.]

He is so eager to write for himself. He will some day do so but it is hardly probable now as the time flies so swiftly but to have me assure you that all that promise and all the gifts which were evident are still his growing and expanding [read 'experimenting' doubtfully and without any excuse.]—[dash inserted.] You were ... expanding [read 'explaining' without excuse.] panding ... Yes [to reading] You and he were so much to each other.

(Mr. B.: Yes.)

and often when you walk alone he is with you. That is not the only time but he comes closer then. Too early gone yet not too early [read 'late' doubtfully] for ... early ... for the life here would be too sombre were only the old mature to come. I wish you could see his eyes brighten when your name is mentioned here. It is as if the sunshine had suddenly fallen upon his fair face. He is fair—[dash inserted.] yes fair of face. [Heavy writing.]

We all send love to you.

(His love to all of them.)

Yes we know we know. [Pause.] F F a t h e r.

(Thanks.)

Mother Sis ... S i s t e r [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

and b ... b r ... b r o t h e r.

(Good.) <sup>217</sup>

<sup>217</sup> The sitter writes of this long message: "The statement, 'She was very ill,' would apply to my sister. It was cancer. What is said of my youngest brother is

[Pencil fell, pause and hand reached for it again.] G—[dash inserted.] [Pencil fell again and pause when it again reached for it.] o o d. [Pause and struggle.] G o o d I a m g l a d. [Pencil fell.]

[*Subliminal.*]

I got to go. [Pause.] Oh, I am simply awfully sick, you know.

(It will be over in a minute.)

Who said so. [Pause.] Do you know any one that begins with P.

(Mr. B.: No.)

Don't you, honest?

(Mr. B.: I don't think of anybody.)

It sounds like Paul.

(Mr. B.: Well, hold on, I guess I do remember. It wouldn't be Paul.)

It is something like it. <sup>218</sup>

(Mr. B.: Can't you see him here?)

No I can't yet. [Pause.] Let me see. [Pause.] I wish I could, but I can't. I wish I could stay all day and then I could see other things. He doesn't feel discouraged, does he? (No.) Does he? (No.) Does he feel happier? (Yes.) You said he was a doctor. (Yes.) His father was a minister. (Yes.)

Because I told you? (Wait.) [Getting ahead of me.]

I can't.

(Yes, he told me after the first sitting.)

Did he? (Yes.) Do you know if the father wore spectacles?

(Mr. B.: Not spectacles I think.)

I see him putting something on his nose.

(Mr. B.: Well, eyeglasses.)

He is standing reading something and puts them on. He reads well. Others mumble, especially the Episcopalians. Don't they jumble and mumble. They have to. They wouldn't be Episcopalians if they didn't. They don't have any soul but mumble it. \* \* \* \* [Sentence missed.] How can you be an Episcopalian?

(Mr. B.: I don't have to be.)

You are kind of like one.

---

very good. He died in young manhood, and he and I were especially near to each other. The summary of the family group is perfectly correct though that is not the order of their going. I do not know any way by which the medium could have informed herself of the facts."

<sup>218</sup> Of the name Paul, the sitter says: "A friend of mine whose name begins with P would be most likely to come in this way, if there were opportunity, and that name might excusably be taken for Paul. It was Powell."



(Mr. B.: Yes I expect I am.)

You are not the mumble jumble kind.

(Mr. B.: I am not an Episcopalian.)

My goodness, you kind-a look it. <sup>219</sup>

(Mr. B.: I shouldn't wonder if I did.)

You are broader than they are.

(Mr. B.: I hope so.)

I think you are. You are more broad like Edward Everett Hale.

Do you know him?

(Mr. B.: I used to know him.)

It is funny I wanted to speak of him. I have to go. <sup>220</sup>

(All right.)

I think you are glad. Goodbye.

(Mr. B.: Goodbye.)

Remember your mother loves you the same as if you were a little baby.

(Mr. B.: I think so.)

\* \* \* \* \* (two or three sentences missed, as I had to catch up in notes.)

They know you are safe and when you get there you will find it hard to get along without them. [Pause, sitter left, pause and awakened.]

## Chapter XV, Series XI, Feb. 2, 3, 4, 1914

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Miss R. February 2nd, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitter admitted. Long pause. Hand moved as if to reach for pencil and then returned to passive state. Pause and article placed on table, a drawing enclosed in an envelope, but invisible. Pause and sigh, and reached for pencil. Pause.]

<sup>219</sup> The sitter is a Unitarian and Mrs. Chenoweth knew this perfectly well in her normal state, and herself sympathizes with that point of view, tho not [now] a member of that or any denomination. The assumption here is clear that he is an Episcopalian, though the normal consciousness knows that the man present is a Unitarian, but does not know that this particular person is present.

<sup>220</sup> After mistaking the person present it is perfectly natural to wonder why she thought of Edward Everett Hale: for he was a Unitarian and having died rather recently it would be natural to have him referred to. Mrs. Chenoweth knew about Mr. Hale and his death, and if she had known who was present she would not have wondered about the occurrence to her mind of Mr. Hale, who was a colleague of the sitter.

## [Automatic Writing.]

\* \* [scrawl for 'c'] can we come.

(Yes you can and you are welcome.)

Growing powers and new unfoldment for us as we come into [read 'only'] this ... into this new atmosphere all new to us [struggle and P. F. R.] but one or two who have tried before [struggle to keep control.]

I want to tell you about work which we are trying to do elsewhere though [so read] through her at a time and place more familiar to us and we are as careful of the future as you can wish us to be. Do not be alarmed for we know more than you do. I do not mean to make a criticism of your knowledge but there have been so many things to think about and so many obstacles to overcome that I sometimes get out of patience and these people to whom you have brought us are most ready to tell us what we ought to do. Ought has very little to do with the case. We do what we can with the material at hand and experiment all the time just as you do. It is not anything to be distressed over.

(Well, it would please me for you to tell specifically what the work is and who is concerned in it, as it requires to be on the paper here in order to be good evidence.)

You are trying to establish validity and assurance.

(Exactly.)

I know and will try and help the experiment. <sup>221</sup>

---

<sup>221</sup> The sitter on this occasion was a young daughter of the R.'s who had sittings in November. She had shown tendencies to draw and paint semi-automatically, not knowing what she was going to draw or paint when she sat down to do it, and often producing work beyond her experience. She had always shown an aptness for this sort of thing and the fact decided the parents that they should encourage it. The object here in having the experiment was the same as in the Thompson-Gifford, the De Camp-Stockton, and four other instances; namely, to see if any evidence would emerge indicating that foreign influence affected the work. It was the intention to have the mother take some sittings following the child, but I purposely kept her away from the first set so that there would be no excuse for the appearance of family relatives under circumstances that would diminish the force of the coincidence. The appearance of the same communicators as came when the father and mother were present, when the child came first, would add to the evidential value of the coincidences. I found that the experiment worked successfully in that respect.

The reader will observe that the very first sentence was a good hit in respect of the girl's psychic tendencies. It did not indicate specifically what they were, but that she had powers to be unfolded was recognized at once and readers will only have to compare this beginning of the sitting with all others to remark that it is exceptional enough to make a point of it.

Apparently the reference to work elsewhere is to her lessons in art. There was some hesitation as to whether her powers should be submitted to this sort of development and apparently this is meant in the advice not to be concerned about it.

(Yes, I know you will.)

There are several of us con [read 'con, ent' doubtfully.] nected in ... con ... [read] in the work a company of experimenters who believe that this movement is the movement toward the release from old dogmatic assertions and that life will be beter [better] adjusted when these possibilities are understood and we have been united in our efforts by the lady over here. I am a man but the lady is a relative of the ch... [pause] ch ... [pause] light [pause] c h i l d

(Capital.) [Said in recognition and to encourage communicator.] <sup>222</sup>

and has been here some time some years not long years but a time here and she has most ardent hopes for great work to be done later. [P. F. R., pause.]

I will tell you about the arrangement if I can but although I knew of this experiment before it came as it was explained to us still I find a little sense of being hampered because this is not the method of my work.

(Yes, what is your method?)

More directly on the normal mind while alert not a trance state. you know what I mean.

(Yes.)

It is very different for the normal mind responds more quickly and there is less of the feeling of responsibility for once start the right [pause] sen....[pause] sorry [pause] activities and the end is sure. Just as sure as an arithmetical [read 'architectural' and hand paused till corrected] problem—[dash inserted] but I get a little confused in this stupefied [N. R.] stupefied and sleepy state.

(I understand.)

I grow stupefied and sleepy myself. Our work is all activities action action action.

(I understand.)

and it [busy writing and did not read] it is our method to set the [pause] machinery into action and leave the rest to come. <sup>223</sup> The

<sup>222</sup> Mrs. Chenoweth had not seen the sitter and so did not know she was a child, so that this recognition of who was present has its value.

<sup>223</sup> The elderly lady, a relative, is not yet identified, but there is evidently a distinction between this relative and the person communicating who claims to be influencing the child's work. It is true that the influence is exercised more on the normal life and action of the child. She does not go into a trance. Her automatic action coalesces or is fused more or less with her normal consciousness.

The allusion to getting stupefied and sleepy is most interesting as throwing light upon the transfer of the medium's mental state to the communicator and disturbing the communications. This suggests the old theory of G. P., stated through Mrs. Piper and adopted by Dr. Hodgson, that the communicator is in a dream state

grandmother of the girl is here with me. I will not try to say more about her yet but she has been responsible in a large measure for some of the manifestations the noises that have been produced at times not what we have been doing through the brain [read 'friend'] brain yes brain. [P. F. R. and Indian.] naturally [pause] quick to respond to suggestion. the work has been amplified until [read 'and' doubtfully] until [N. R.] until the case is as you know it. [P. F. R., Indian. Pause.]<sup>224</sup>

B [long pause] B r o ... [pause] B r o t h ... [P. F. R. twice, and Indian.]

(Stick to it.)

[Apparent Change of Control.]

[Handwriting became large.] I tell her what to say and it becomes conscious knowledge. I tell her ... I do ... [P. F. R. twice.] [Long pause.]

M [pause] \* \* [scrawl.] M y little girl is here. [P. F. R. Pause.] M [pause] other [pause] \* \* [most probably attempt at word 'living' and so read mentally but not aloud, as I wanted it rewritten.]

(Write that last word again, please.)

\* \* ['M h e' clear.] \* \*

(Stick to it.)

M ... Mother [very scrawly, but so read] Here [very scrawly and not read] [Struggle to keep control and Indian.]

M [N. R.] M o t ... [pause] M [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] M [pause] \* \* [scrawl.] [P. F. R.] I want to write name.

(All right.)

You know M [pause] \* \* [apparently 'Mull' but purposely not

---

when communicating. This Dr. Hodgson and I interpreted as a necessary condition and did not think of it as defined or suggested here; namely, as a transfer of the medium's state. In this new conception it is the same as the constantly observed interfusion of personality. I shall not discuss it here at length. I only call the reader's attention to it.

The explanation of this by the statement that their own work is *action* represents a true fact not known to Mrs. Chenoweth. The child does not receive communications, but does drawing and painting, as already remarked. The influence in her case is thus motor and not transfer of ideas, and the observation of the disturbance would apparently indicate that each type of phenomenon must have its own special condition for producing it.

<sup>224</sup> The child's grandmother is living. Her great grandmother is dead and the child is named after her.

read.] \* \* [four lines, upright, drawn and second one crossed for 't', but none read. Pause.] M o t h e r yes mother is with you.

(I understand, but it was not clear.)

All right. [Pause.] Mother helps much and will do more soon.<sup>225</sup>

(Good. I understand.)

And B you know B . . .

(Finish if you can.)

B e r . . . [pause] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it by all means.)

B e r [pause] n [P. F. R.]

(You can get it.)

B e r n i c e [distress. P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] B \* \* [scrawl \* \* resembles 'u' but not read as it might be 'a'] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

yes I am trying. It is not Bernice. (I know.) but somewhat like it.

(Go ahead.)

and I do not get hold enough to do it all. Do you know anything about a watch.

(I shall inquire.)

[Indian and pause.] h . . . [pause] B [pause, P. F. R. and pause twice.] e a [pause] \* \* [probably 't' but not read] B e a t ['t' not read.] I am not G (All right.) and W and B and J [pause] a . . . [P. F. R.] and \* \* [scrawls] B e a t r . . . [read 'brother'] [P. F. R.] B e a t r . . . [pause.]

I am surprised that I find it so hard but it is because there is so much feeling in my hart [heart] for my own little girl who is so near me at this hour when the spirits gather to tell the world about this life which is ral [real] to Mama now. I am beginning to break through the excitement and get hold of myself. My baby girl you know [struggle and distress. P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Indian.] B e a t r i c e [effort to erase as soon as read.]

(Go ahead.) [I would not deny or admit, supposing it intended for 'Betty']

<sup>225</sup> The sitter's mother is living and I was careful not to disturb the situation and in a moment it was spontaneously corrected to indicate that the mother is still living. Evidently the communicator was the great-grandmother who has figured under the title of "mother" erroneously so often in these sittings.

\* \* [imperfect 'B'] B e a t r i c e H H M [pause] ary.  
[P. F. R.] [pause] \* \* \* \* [lines drawn on next page] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.) [Thinking intention was to represent drawing.]

B eatrice ['ice' not clear enough to be sure.] [P. F. R. Hand tried to hold mine as if desiring to return to normal state.]

(Stick to it.)

B ... [long pause] [Hand relaxed hold on pencil a few moments and pause.] B [P. F. R. and pause.] e u l a h [purposely not read] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it. You will get it.)

B M you know what I ought to write.

(Yes, but it is not evidence when it is only in my mind. It must be on ...) [Writing began.]

B e a t r i c e is not right.

(I understand.)

but B—— is right. (Yes it is.) B e u [read 'a'] [Pause.] no not a B e u l [purposely not read as I was not sure of either 'u' or 'l', since I was thinking of 'Betty'] I cannot do it.

(Yes you can.)

M \* \* l [pause] l a

('Mollie?')

no no—— [sigh.] B e \* \* [pause] The case the case of B e l ... b e l a B e l a h [not read in either of the last three instances, as I thought the 'l' was intended for 't' and the rest mistake.] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

B e u l a h. M [Indian. P. F. R. and distress.] \* \* [possibly for 'Bet' but purposely not read.] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

M i l l e [pause] M u \* \* [Hand became cataleptic and I had to rub it some minutes.] <sup>226</sup>

<sup>226</sup> This long effort was undoubtedly an attempt to get the name Betty, the deceased sister of the sitter and from whom the mother was so desirous of hearing. The spontaneous denials about Bernice and Beatrice were interesting, as readers may see from the correct name. The statement that B is right is correct, as is apparent, but Beulah is wrong, as also apparent. Evidently either the control or the subconscious of Mrs. Chenoweth was guessing or fishing for the correct name, and it is interesting to note that the assurance was confined to the initial B, as initials come with comparative ease with Mrs. Chenoweth. The nearest to the correct name was the writing which I refused to read for "Bet" in order to have it come clearly, which it often does under this sort of persistence. But the communicator broke down first. It is possible that "Mille" is for "Mille" and if so we may conjecture that it represents the effort and influence of the Jean Jacques Labuisse who could speak only French and from whom Betty took her middle name,

[*Subliminal.*]

[Long pause, sigh and long pause, and hand seized mine.] I got to go.

(All right.)

[Pause.] Don't be discouraged. will you? (No.) You are. (No.)

Is the sitter discouraged? (No.) Who are all these people?

(You tell.)

I don't know. I can see Dr. James. [Pause.] I can see Dr. Hodgson. [Pause.] I can see [pause] George [pause]

(George?) [Desiring name finished.]

Yes [whispered and not distinct.] [Pause and sigh.] Did you want to bring another woman today?

(No.)

Did you talk of it to anybody? (Yes.) Did a woman want to come? (Yes.) And you couldn't let her? (Yes.) Well, can she come tomorrow? (Yes.) You just ... It'll help you know. (Yes.) Do you know what I mean?

(Yes, exactly.)

Hm. All right. Goodbye. (Goodbye.) [Pause.] The woman away from here, her thought was centered here you know. (Yes.) That kind o' made it almost seem as if she were here.<sup>227</sup> [Pause.] This is a psychic here, you know. (Yes.) Hm. Well, the powers are only beginning to do what they can do. It is just started you know [Pause.] Goodbye. (Goodbye.) [Sitter left. Pause.] Did anybody say she wasn't bright? (No.) She is, isn't she? (Yes.) [Pause and quickly awakened.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H., Miss and Mrs. R. February 3rd, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Cough, pause, sigh, pause. Sitters admitted, long pause and

Labuisse. It is possible that Bernice and Beatrice are efforts to interpret phonetically the possible efforts to give this part of the child's name. [The case of Beulah Miller, a little girl, had just been printed in the January *Journal* of the A. S. P. R. Curious coincidence.—G. O. T.]

"H. H." are the initials of the deceased grandfather and Mary is the name of a deceased Aunt of the child.

<sup>227</sup> The mother and I had talked over both questions, first whether she should come first; and second, whether the child should come alone. We decided that it would be best evidentially that the child should come first and alone. This, of course, was wholly unknown, as everything else, to Mrs. Chenoweth. I promised that the other lady should come the next day, and she did so.

[Was Mrs. R. perhaps reading of the psychic Beulah Miller in her January *Journal* during this time? Cf. Note 226.—G. O. T.]

230      RECORD OF MEDIUMISTIC EXPERIMENTS

article placed on table. Sigh, pause, pencil given which fell and was reinserted twice.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

B [Pause, P. F. R.] [Letter purposely not read.]  
(Stick to it.)

B u l a h Mother and I are all here together. [P. F. R., and slight catalepsy for a few moments.] <sup>228</sup>

[Change of Control.]

I am here and have a message for you. I did not write the first message.

(I understand.)

It was from a member of the family gone some little time ago who is most eager to reach them and who desires to help in some work which is soon to be done but I am of another group and I have been attracted by the need and the work which is important only as it serves to open the eyes of some who have refused to see the possibilities of power and expression from our side. One particular fact is always to be borne in mind and that is that the child is psychic and should have particular guidance and care for a little while just as one who has a gift of any sort should have the gift protected [protected]. It is not alone her gift but belongs to the other as well and is a power that has been kept in embryonic state though [so written and read and hand pointed till read 'through'] circumstances and is now revealed through the addition of the child [N. R. aloud as I was uncertain] child and her power.

I may not have made this plain but I hope so for I see the whole crux of the matter is in whether we have a psychic or abnormality. do you understand.

(I understand, but I would like to have you say specifically what you are trying to develop there.)

Yes I understand why you ask and I will tell you what the plan is as far as the plan has been developed. It is largely experimental now for new powers and possibilities are constantly coming to light and our present effort is to hold in hand the power and not let it run away with the child before she has reached [read 'touched'] reached her proper [proper] strength as a girl. It would be an easy matter to make a life of uncertainty and loss of normal conditions for normal growth [N. R.] a [?] ... growth and this must not be for there is a wonderful [N. R.] wonderful and useful life for all concerned. I am

---

<sup>228</sup> It is interesting to note that the last effort to get the name the day before repeats itself here, as if the subconscious knew that the other names were incorrect, and did not know that "Bulah" was also incorrect.



one who would [wrote 'wh' and suddenly changed to 'uld'] rather [rather] have less rapid unfoldment but sometimes a manifestation comes almost spontaneously. that is we may be trying to arrange for some future time and the affair goes on as if it had already reached that time. Do you understand.

(No, I do not have the slightest idea of what you are talking about. You must tell exactly what the child is doing.)

you must be very stupid indeed if you cannot reason out what I have been trying to say and if you insist on your own way I shall have to let it go. for it is not an easy matter to come and use so different a method to explain my work at another time and place and though [so written, but read 'through?'] another personality.

(I understand the difficulty, but do you know at all what the child does under your influence?)

Most certainly (Well, . . . .) I do at times when I produce an influence but there is experimental work going on by people on this side just as on yours and there is not a poper [proper] organization as yet and that is what I hoped to impress and to get help on. I need help in the work by having the poper [proper] thought given to the friends who are about her [N. R. Too scrawly] her. I do not intend to have any harm come to her and I shall not but the organization and definite useful expression may be hastened if you do not get too dictatorial [N. R.] D i c t a t o r i a l.

(Yes, the reason I asked was that I thought it would be as easy to write one word that was pertinent as to write ten pages that were not pertinent.)

You do know so little after all for in the very act of writing the pressure is lessened and the fact came through. When I try to write I will to write just what I need to tell you but it is not always easy to take a direct course. [New pencil given] now you [pencil broke and another given.] understand a little beter [better] perhaps and I want to tell about the clear [N. R.] clear sight the walking [delay in reading and hand drew a rectangle] no the something with the hands [pause]

(Go on.)

and the entire unconsciousness of the matter involved in the act [N. R.] act but consciousness of other things and [Indian] the [pause] \* \* [scrawl] [P. F. R.] h [pause] iatus [read 'hitches' doubtfully] h i a t u s yes [P. F. R. and Indian.] I can write through her. I can and will now that I know how [read 'here' and supposed communicator wanted to tell me what he was doing by the girl's hand. Medium's hand seized mine and I took another pad and gave pencil to

child who sat for automatic writing for some time, the medium remaining quiescent. But no writing or drawing came with the child. Finally Indian gibberish came with Mrs. Chenoweth and a struggle to get control, when I reinserted the pencil.]

\* \* [scrawls] E [N. R.] E \* \* [probably 'I'] E I [P. F. R. and pause] E E l i z a b e t h. I [scrawl] I \* \* ['cannot' ?] I cannot do it now but I did not say here. I said how and you at once thought it was here and made her try but I cannot do it.<sup>229</sup>

(I understand.)

I think I must be in for a fight with you for we do not quite understand each other.

(You see I want evidence and there has not yet today been the slightest evidence of what you are doing with the child.)

Don't [read 'did'] you know . . . Don't you know without asking me or are you just trying to force me.

(No, I am not trying to force you, but to help to get your mind running spontaneously in the right direction.)

[Pause.] It makes me nervous to try and do things this way. Beter [Better] let some one tell you about me. I can stand that better. [Indian and P. F. R.] I have definite plans even [N. R.] through you . . . even [read 'later'] even though [read 'through' and pencil tapped till corrected] you do not know it and I am not going to confine myself to the physical expression. The [pause] d r a w i n g

(Good, that's what I wanted.) [written slowly and with effort.]

and the work to be accomplished that way will be followed with more and fuller pictures which will prove beyond a shadow of doubt that our help is a permanent and definite gift to her. It is not unusual to be able to inspire [*underscored*] but to actually do the work is unusual and, I am one of a group who have [pause] un . . . [pause and read 'an'] undertaken to unfold this capacity for psychic receptivity [N. R.] recep . . . [read] yes until it makes your old foggy professors take notice.

(Good, I hope you will.)

My idea is to keep [keep] the child and all about her in a state of grateful recognition of this unusual gift and to guard and protect

<sup>229</sup> The reader will remark how long it took to get to the specific thing I wanted. The whole style of the message reflects the influence of Jennie P. and her method and ideas. The rebuke to me for my insistence on specific information will be recognized by careful readers. It was attained gradually. "Work with the hands" was correct but not specifically admitted by me and it was some time before it was gotten.

Elizabeth is the name of the lady who was with the child's sister Betty, when the latter died, as remarked above. Cf. Note 85.

it until some stable and settled life makes possible its perfect achievement.

(I understand.) <sup>230</sup>

We are also grateful for an opportunity to show this power. I will not talk about the religious side or the philosophical for I am intent on my particular expression. You may preach

(All right.)

and philosophize. I will demonstrate. I have some splendid plans for color [read 'later'] color work later. [Pencil fell. Indian and hand seized mine. Pause and distress, and reached for pencil, which fell and was reinserted.] \* \* [scrawls, tho attempt may have been to draw.]

(I can't read it.)

[Pencil moved in the air and then began drawing lines and I saw the effort was to draw a picture. Finally it ended by drawing two profiles of a face.]

(I understand.) <sup>231</sup>

[Pencil fell. Indian and pause.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh I got such a headache. [Long pause.] Do you know any one by the name of Ball? B A L L ?

(Do you mean me?) [Recognizing the name.]

Hm. (Yes, go on.) I see that name right here. [Pause.]

(Tell why that person appears.)

[Pause.] I don't know as I can. It is a man you know. (Yes.) And don't you know him well?

(I know him.)

<sup>230</sup> From what I have already said about the sitter's gifts it is apparent that the allusion to drawing is correct. All the rest explains itself and is perfectly pertinent to the situation. But it is interesting to remark that the communicator, who is evidently the person influencing the child, does not know the method of communicating as employed in this case of Mrs. Chenoweth. He or she seems familiar only with the method of influencing the child's drawing. This conforms with indications elsewhere that spirits do not know so much about their methods generally as one might suppose.

<sup>231</sup> The child has done some "color work," but not much. I have seen a few specimens of it. The effort to draw a picture was a symbolic method of trying to indicate the nature of the work done by the child. The consciousness of the religious and philosophical significance of the phenomena is not the least interesting feature of them.

"Color work" and the development of the gift have now, February, 1924, amply fulfilled predictions. The young artist has, in the winter of 1923-24, held a public exhibit in Boston.—G. O. T.

Well, I first saw this ball just like a ball and then I knew it was a name of some one and I . . . Was he very religious?

(I think so.)

Well, I hear: "A little child shall lead them" and it is just like a picture of the Savior blessing a little child, a picture you know.

(Yes.)

[Pause.] It is funny. [Pause.] You don't know anything about a Cross \* [word in note not deciphered by J. H. H.] do you?

(What about?)

I don't hear him. They are going to do much for these friends aren't they?

(I don't know.) <sup>232</sup>

All right. I'll have to go now. I wonder, before I go, if you know anything about a woman who is in the spirit land. She seems to be very near the sitter, not to you. She is probably 40 years old. She went out very quick to the spirit land, has dark eyes and dark hair, not very stout, and was anxious to live and did not want to go. She seems to belong to the girl, some relative. Do you know about that?

(Miss R. No.)

I see her right here. I should think she was an Aunt. Goodbye.

(Good-bye.) [Sitter left.] <sup>233</sup>

[Pause for a moment and suddenly awakened complaining of a headache. I at once placed my hand on her forehead and she returned quickly to trance.]

That's better. Wasn't it the right girl? S m i l e s m i l e [spelled in both instances and pause.] I can't get the rest. [Awakened.]

<sup>232</sup> Many years ago I had been sent by Dr. Hodgson to see a gentleman and his wife in Troy, New York, to investigate some of the phenomena that they had reported to him. The name was Ball and the family were very religious in their beliefs. Not a very long time before this sitting I received a letter from the wife telling me about the death of her husband and something about their experiences since his death. There is no other evidence of identity than the name Ball and the incidents I have mentioned. It was quite natural that he should try to communicate with me, as readers will remark from the story told.

Not the least interesting is the symbolic way of getting his name and identity established. It is another illustration of the pictographic process.

[Thomas Ball, 1819-1911—American sculptor, born in Charlestown, Mass. In early life a distinguished basso, but soon gave up singing for painting and sculpture. Statue of Washington in Boston Public Garden, by him.]

Spent years in *Florence, Italy*. Painted Christ in the Temple with the Doctors as one of his earliest pieces. In later life, *Jesus and a Little Child*. "A Little Child Shall Lead Them," appropriate to this and to the child whose painting and drawing were referred to in the R. séances, a *Massachusetts* child who has since studied in *Italy*. Possibly he is the communicator here.—G. O. T.]

<sup>233</sup> [Note omitted, J. H. H. G. O. T. inquired of Mrs. R. No response.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H., Miss and Mrs. R. February 4th, 1914. 9.45 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitters admitted, and article placed on table. Long pause, sigh, pause, sigh, and hand reached for pencil. Long pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

You have the task set before you as a scientific investigator of proving the intercession of spirit people in the development of special gifts mental and otherwise and there are very many of us over here who appreciate the [pause] position you are in since so many marvelous things are accomplished by special training of young brains and [read 'but'] and we have tried to take unusual means to attract attention to the subject of special control and influence and we know right well that you wish for proof of identity now that you are on [in] the work and have established the fact that we are concerned [N. R.] concerned in the manifestations which have taken place.

It is our purpose to reveal our identity to you as we have already revealed it to the group and you have had suggestions as to who we might be. The difficulty is in getting the single personality extricated [N. R.] from . . . extricated from the influence of the band which had to be formed for the work and which has been so welded [read 'evident'] welded [read 'widened'] welded together to make the influence more definite that it is more like a composite influence than a separate one.

The picture the photograph the photograph of me picture you know by which you hope to identify something do you not know to what I refer.

(Not exactly.)

but [read 'not'] what no what is that noise.

(My foot against the chair.) [My foot was rubbing against the chair as I moved my body to watch the writing, and made a squeaking noise.]

Stop it please. (Yes.) It is disconcerting.

(I understand.)

I find it hard to concentrate when there is the slightest disturbance but I was like that before I died. [P. F. R. Indian.]

I want to refer to the picture once more one brought yes [to delayed reading] I think brought to help me.

(Yes, tell all about it.) [Child's painting in closed envelope.]

Yes if possible a pho . . . . [Indian, struggle to control and distress.] photograph do you know. I have signed a name before and

have tried to tell them who I am. [P. F. R. and struggle for control.] I have I have I have. [P. F. R. and distress.] Before I came here at all for I felt I could demonstrate that I was there. [P. F. R. and pause.] W [N. R.]

(Try again. It is only a scrawl.)

W W [pause] W [pause, P. F. R., pause.] J J a [P. F. R. Held pencil in fist slightly cataleptic. . Pause.] [Indian and distress.]

E [Pause, P. F. R. Pause.] So hard to keep the letters as I want them.

(I understand. Be patient.)

You know who W is.

(Do you mean some one in the family?) [From the 'Ja' I had suspected the intrusion of William James, but did not wish to say so.] Yes.

(That is known.) [Sitters had nodded heads.]

and [read 'did' and 'don't'] A nd A nd I am glad to say W is enthusiastic about it.

(Good.)

and has some [so read] done good to me for me. [Pause.] D [pause] o you also know F in connection with this experiment. [P. F. R. Held my hand, pause and P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Long pause, P. F. R.] E [Pencil fell and hand brushed over pad as if to have the sheet removed, which I did. Pause and hand reached for pencil.] <sup>234</sup>

<sup>234</sup> The allusion to composite influences is to a psychological fact which I have frequently remarked in this work, and Mrs. Chenoweth knows nothing about the phenomenon and would not even suspect it. She has no access to the facts which prove it and knows her own work only from the sittings given to her husband or mainly when she wants information for herself, and by a cursory reading of a report on her work, the Thompson-Gifford case. I had not then myself remarked the interfusion of personality.

The intimation that the persons influencing the child's work had given suggestions of their identity already would not be verifiable but for the initials that come toward the end of this particular communication. No trace of this is apparent in anything said in this series of sittings so far, or even in the past ones of the father and mother, in so far as the child's drawing and painting are concerned. It is possible that the W refers to the deceased brother of her grandfather, the Will or William that her grandfather seemed so anxious to mention several times. The F may refer to her great great Uncle Frank, who was also mentioned several times before. Cf. Note 72.

[J. H. H. had not observed the pertinence of the name Ball, a religious artist. Cf. Note 232.—G. O. T.]

The reference to the photograph has no meaning that can be assured. The child had brought a small painting in an envelope for an article to put on the table. It had not been opened and I did not know what the envelope contained. Mrs.

## [Apparent Change of Control.]

C a r l C a r l.

(Who is Carl?)

C a r l [superposed] C a r l [pause.]<sup>235</sup>

## [Apparent Change of Control.]

Only a little release on my part and all the influence of some [one] present rushes in [read 'makes me'] rushes in and I have to hurry back to complete my statement.

(All right.)

Strange how I first got hold of the hand and began to work but all my plan is to increase the power. Did you bring a picture of me to the place.

(No.)

You have not got one [N. R.] one have you.

(We do not know who it is that is writing.)

I am one of the parties who makes effort to draw [read 'drive'] things. [P. F. R. and struggle to keep control. Indian.]

Excuse [N. R.] me I am ... Excuse [N. R.] me ... Excuse me Excuse me I do not know much about this business of controlling the hand and am having more or less of a trial with it but what I am determined [N. R.] to tell you ... determ ... [read] ... is that I am one of a group who is working to do certain things through the child and that I am still experimenting with the gift and that I shall continue as long as I am allowed to do so for I believe it is best for the future of the child

(Can you advise as to the best means to help you from our side over here?)

Yes I have some things I could wish to say to her and to her mother—— (All right. Go ahead.) I do not wish this work to be a mere sensation nor do I desire to simply do a few things to prove that a superior [superior] power is about the child but I with some friends desire to unfold a latent gift and in that unfolding to prove to the world that there are spirit teachers and co-operators who gladly assist

Chenoweth did not handle it. It was a drawing, not a portrait. Whether the allusion was to this drawing there was no proof.

It is possible that the attempt to write "Brother" at the end of the first effort to communicate the day before referred to this W or William, the deceased brother of her grandfather.

<sup>235</sup> The name Carl is not recognized as applicable to any one within the knowledge of the child or parents. It might be a mistake for the Charles mentioned two or three times. Cf. Note 73. But I think this mistake would hardly occur after succeeding so well and so easily in getting the name Charles before. It may be some unknown personality in the group trying to influence the child's work.

in the upbuilding of the precious knowledge that death is not the robber commonly supposed. In all this work I seek for co-operation with me and my band. Only time can prove the wisdom of my work. Do not talk too much about it yet but let the experiments go on as systematically as if they were under the supervision of instructors [N. R.] instructors in your own sphere.

(I understand.)

Never overdo it by forcing [read 'forming' doubtfully] a ... forcing a little further demonstration but let the time be set apart for the work and we will come and perform our part of the trial.

Sometimes it may not be as complete as at others and sometimes there may be a new set of influences at work but have absolutely no fear [fear] no fear for we will never harm or desert her and have only [N. R.] only one purpose. To [written 'So'] lead [N. R.] To lead [N. R.] you ... To lead you all to a larger life and to make the world pay attention to the fact [read 'feat'] *fact* [underscored three times]. Just take it naturally unless you want to spoil the child—— You see what I mean.

(Exactly.)

We cannot and must not take the entire responsibility but we can and will do a great work if we have [pause] co-operative and [distress] systematic assistance.

I have learned somewhat about the work since coming here and so have my friends and we will not be quite as independent I hope H [writing heavy difficult for last two words and 'H']

\* \* I say Have I said all I might. [Apparent attempt to erase.]

(You must judge.)

I know the financial problem will present itself later but I prefer to let that wait until older [read 'other'] older [read 'other'] O l d e r heads [read 'hands'] heads are my only witnesses. Do you understand——

(Not certain yet.) [Sitters shook head.]

I mean you.

(Yes I do.)

It is not profitable to have all these things now [read 'more'] *now* [underscored three times.]

(I understand.)

I want to write G— yes G— [Pause.]

(Finish that if you can.)

G [long pause.] G e o ffry [pause] and now I want to write A— A— is one of us in the work.

(Finish that if you can.)



Do they not know A—

(No, they don't recognize it. Better finish.)

Augus . . . [read 'Angus' doubtfully] Augustus. [P. F. R. Pause.]<sup>236</sup>

[Change of Control.]

Father [pause] comes

(All right. You are welcome.) [Writing difficult and said to encourage.]

to send . . . [Cataplexy and distress. I placed my hand on the forehead.]

[*Subliminal.*]

I want to speak. I want to speak. I want to speak. [Struggle and breathing became as of one dying. I placed my hand on the forehead again, and there was a long pause, after which the hand reached for the pencil.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

Father still here.

(All right.)

Are you not glad to have me come.

(Yes indeed. We shall be glad to hear from you.)

[Pause.] I am glad I can help M a m a for I did not want to die no no [heavy writing] Love and kisses to my darling and I am alive yes and [groans] near near.

(Yes we believe it.)

and will always stay where I can come at cal [1]— It was hard to go but it is good to come. [P. F. R. and struggle to keep control.]

C [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

<sup>236</sup> The advice given is sound, but we have no means of proving that the sub-conscious is not perfectly capable of it, as the general position taken coincides with Mrs. Chenoweth's own opinions as gathered from her own trance phenomena and communications made to herself.

The "H" is not clear in its meaning, as there is no context to indicate that it is intended for an initial.

The reference to the "financial problem" is very pertinent, and the circumstances that make it so are not known to Mrs. Chenoweth. The family have no large means and art is not especially remunerative, so that some day the child's position in that respect will have to be seriously considered.

The name Geoffrey means nothing to the parents. It may be the name of one in the group trying to influence the child, but there is nothing in the communications either to suggest or to prove this. Augustus Saint Gaudens, the sculptor, recently dead, was a most intimate friend of Mrs. R.'s grandfather. He was associated with her father in business.

[Pause.] C [Pencil fell and new one given.] C a \* \* [pause] nnot write what I want to but I am so happy. [P. F. R.] D [P. F. R.] <sup>237</sup>

(Stick to it.)

[Long pause. Distress and Indian.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Cat. Whose cat is that? Do you know?

(No, you will have to tell more.)

Do you know anything about a man who went out quick to the spirit?

(Yes.) [Sitters nodded assent.]

And it is a terrible shock to him and to everybody else. My it shouldn't be so, you know. (Yes.) [Pause.] He ... [pause] All right. Right beside that man is a great big cat. It's ... I don't know whether it is a pet they had, but it looks like it, you know. [Pause.] Wait till I tell. It is like a tiger cat. Do you know a tiger cat?

(Not recognized.) [Mrs. R.: Shook head.]

Have they got one? Funny.

(Mrs. R.: We had a black cat.) (Miss R.: We used to have that little tiger cat.)

This is one in heaven. It just disappeared. They may not know it died. I can't get any more.

(All right.)

[Pause.] I want to tell you this man has such a happy way when he comes in. The whole home is so different. He brings such an atmosphere of hope. He is always full of hope. They were always going to be better. [Pause.] Heh heh. I don't know. I hear H-A-R ... I think it is Harry, a name either Harry or Harriet. I think it is Harry.

(Yes.) [Sitters nodded assent.]

Goodbye. Do they know it? (Yes.) And was there anything like a pet name. It sounds like Dolly. Is there a child here? (Yes.) Well, was there a dolly or Dora or something like that? Was there any one named Dorothy?

(No.) [Sitters shook head.]

---

<sup>237</sup> Evidently it was either the mother's father here or her husband's father who had communicated before, and he could not write what he wished to do. I suspect that the allusion to his being happy is that they have finally gotten assurance from our experiments that we recognize their influence with the child. There is no evidence for this, except the fact that these expressions of happiness occur when communicators accomplish their object, and his failure to write what he wished might have prompted a very different expression.

It is a name Dolly or more like that. It seems to be a pet name. Patting the chin this way and saying: 'How's little Dolly?' [stroking her own chin.] It is a sort of pet name. [Pause.] Goodbye. Have you his picture?

(No.) Sure? (Yes.) Well, I can see one of him right here. Wait a minute. Do you know anything about a book with a lot of things in it, not writing like this but things in it. Do you know about that?

(No.)

Well, I made it plain. I do like that [picking corners of leaves.] Goodbye. Don't be discouraged will you? (No.) Are you? (No.) [Pause and sitters left.] Dolly might possibly be Molly. I don't know. The tension is off when they have gone. [Awakened.] <sup>238</sup>

### Chapter XVI, Series XII, Feb. 9, 10, 11, 1914

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mr. Gale. February 9th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

Sigh. Sitter admitted. Long pause. Hand unfolded fist, paused and then moved slowly as if wanting pencil, fell back and paused long. Indian and reached for pencil.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

\* \* [very like 'E' but probably a scrawl.] [Pause.] I [pause] I [pause] c o . . . [Pause and P. F. R.]  
(Stick to it.)

am . . . . [Hand flat, long pause and then quick jerk.] \* \* \* \*  
[writing heavy, mere scrawls, but probably attempt to write 'I want']  
want to come

<sup>238</sup> A relative in the family, husband to an Aunt of the sitter's father, committed suicide under circumstances that were a great shock to all the relatives. Of the remaining incidents the sitter, Mrs. R., says:

"He hated cats. He was really afraid of them. When he and his wife were just married they had a very queer experience looking for a cat. His wife's name was Harriet. He always called her Harry as a pet name. They were devoted to each other. He always called Mrs. R. (myself), whose name is Dora, either Dolly or Dory.

"We asked his wife about the book. She says that just before his illness and death they went out West and took quantities of photographs and that when they came home that was one of the things they did; namely, they got a book and pasted the photographs in it.

"The communication interests me very much, as his wife has always longed to hear from him. She has wanted me to ask for him at my sittings, and I told her you did not like sitters to ask for different personalities."

(All right. You are welcome.)

so much for I have waited long for this time to come. I am so nervous.

(Keep as calm as you can and I shall help by being as patient as you desire.)

It is not you but my own h ... [pause] \* \* [probably 'u']  
[P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

h u [pause] s ... [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

I want to write to him.

(Yes I know.)

and I love him and want to tell him all about it and the life and people who are here trying to help me to do what I expected to do what I want [groan] to do. If I could forget some things and remember some others I could do beter [better] for I am so nervous I do not know how to begin. In the first place it is too real [written 'ral'] to be strange and in the next place it is too strange [written 'strage'] to be coming this way to be real [written 'ral'] so [?] I would only speak instead of writing.

(Yes, I understand.)

I hate to write leters [letters] [P. F. R.] and this is worse than that.

(I can imagine that also, but a little practice will help, and when you get secure control I may have a question to ask.)

I know you have [read 'love'] have a question. I can feel it. I feel your mind (Yes.) both of you but I am afraid of you not of him.

(I understand, but you need not feel any embarrassment on my account. I am the one that makes the record and you can free your mind as you please.)

[Pause.] It is like knowing that some one is at the keyhole but even that is better than not coming. Everybody is so good to me. My mother is here in spirit life I mean.

(I understand.)

and she helps me. I suppose everybody feels badly about going but I am sure I wanted [read 'would'] wanted to stay and take care of you dear. You needed me and I needed to stay but I can help so much over here in a way I did not dream of for it is so wonderful to exert an influence over people in a way you had never done before.

(Quite good. I understand.)

It was so hard to leave you and at last I did not realize it and was glad to have it all over but now it all comes back over me. I fel [feel]

so [struggle] . . . who will do for you for you what you did for me. [distress.]

(Do you remember . . . . .) [Writing began.]

the promise the talk [superposed and not read.] talk you mean.

(No, do you remember anything particular in the business of the friend present that used to cause great unhappiness in you?) <sup>239</sup>

[Distress and groans.] Yes yes and I will tell y . . . [pencil changed.] you about it.

(Take your time.)

Fear fear [P. F. R. Distress.] fear not about it now. [P. F. R.] <sup>240</sup>

(Tell all about it.)

[Pause.] \* \* [evidently part of 'y' for 'yes' and pencil fell. Hand clutched in air in Jennie P's manner.] [New pencil.]

[Change of Control.]

Gone she will return in a moment.

(All right.)

I just take her hand for a second while she gets her breath but she is quite happy over this chance [N. R.] to . . . chance to come to her beloved. J. P. [Pencil fell and pause.]

[Change of Control.]

I am trying not to feel agitated.

(I know.)

and to say so many things that are on my mind. It is [pause] a privilege to tell you how glad [delay in reading] I am . . . gl . . . [read] that I do not feel as I did about many things. I guess I was too nervous any way [?] for [pause and struggle] I see now where I did not always make it easy for you to do what you had to do and even [read 'can'] your [read 'you'] even your reassurance es did not make me easy. [P. F. R. and pause.] Distance [Pause and P. F. R. Indian and long pause.] and \* \* [scrawl, P. F. R., sigh, distress and pause.] I am still holding on.

(Yes I see, and just stick to it.)

I [pause and scrawls] M M \* \* [scrawl] I M M [pause] M o n e y [P. F. R.]

<sup>239</sup> The syllable "hus .." is evidently an attempt to say "husband," the sitter being the husband of the deceased wife he wished to hear from. He had had some sittings the previous spring. But nothing has come thus far except the syllable to indicate who was present.

<sup>240</sup> "Fear" is the correct answer in part to the question asked, which had been given me in writing before the sitting. But we may suppose that "fear" would be the simplest conjecture to make in response to such a query.

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] Money makes men [P. F. R.] (Stick to it.) do [pause] deeds [distress and Indian. P. F. R., and distress again.]

(Stick to it.)

of violence [Great difficulty in writing, and pencil fell. Hand showed catalepsy and body much distress with great muscular tension in arm and hand pushing hard against my hand, and long pause] but \* \* [letter 'm' is one and rest illegible. . . Pause and groan.] <sup>241</sup>

[Change of Control.]

My so [P. F. R.] My boy I will help her.

(All right.)

I would not have believed it possible for this to happen. I am your father.

(We understand.)

and it is all \* \* [scrawls, evidently intended for 'a' but not read] great revelation to me but I have been here long now. [P. F. R. and struggle.] and have seen the light for many years and am only trying to help you get into more clear communication with her for it is good for each of you her peace here and your satisfaction and strength on earth. She does not worry about your getting [getting] into trouble now. [P. F. R. and struggle.] H is with us and W— also— [P. F. R., struggle, Indian and pause.]

You will remember that I came rather unexpectedly at last over here [P. F. R. twice and pause. Pencil thrown away and rejected when reinsertion was tried.]

[Change of Control.]

[New pencil.] Who is Lizzie.

(Not recognized.) [Sitter shook head.]

[Pause.] Yes an old lady with a very good face and quite grey hair and blue eyes and mild manner who is with the father who just left the hand. I think she is an . . . a relative. I don't know whether Aunt or not but something as near as that— Do you know now.

(Not recognized.) [Sitter shook head.]

Must I keep on to get her placed.

(Yes by all means if you can. and give the last name.)

Yes I will see what can be done. She is not a recent comer over here but seems rather to be of a past generation as if she might have been an Aunt to the father or mother but was quite well acquainted

---

<sup>241</sup> The word "money" is evidently an attempt to answer the question previously asked about her unhappiness in relation to his business. But it is wrong.

with the family left and was a woman of some resources. She lived in a good way with some means [distress] and had some friends about her but I think her consort passed on before she did and I think he had a business that was somewhat scholarly [written with much difficulty] yes a professional life. It ought to be plain enough after that and will probably be recalled later.<sup>242</sup>

(All right.)

I have something to say about the [written 'her' and so read, but corrected.] first communicator if I may drop a word for I think [written 'thing k' and not read] think perhaps she will not speak of it herself. There seems to be something about a child a child over here which is of much interest and concern to her. It is a small child a girl who has been here a long time. Do you know anything about her.

(No.) [Sitter shook head.]

did she lose [read 'like', dissent and read 'take'] . . . lose a little sister wh . . . long ago.

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.]

That is the one for it seems so long ago as if it were but a memory to her.

(I understand.)

grown and a part of the life with the mother and then she has a letter [delay in reading] on her mind l e t t e r E— She [distress] seemed to want to impress that capital E— on the writing and I think it is some one living [read 'long'] living in your world that she is interested in. Do you know that. Either [pause] Ed [pause] It looks like Ed or El E d [tap of pencil] or E. E d does not always mean Ed— E D does not always mean Ed—

(That is what you have written.)

Sometimes you pronounce it as if it were a name but I do not know but what it is the beginning of a name like Edith or some such all I see is the E and a taller letter beside it which I cannot [read 'must'] quite . . . cannot . . . decipher.

(You will in time.)

Yes I know now. another thing is a ring which she holds in her fingers. It is one which was buried with her I am confident for she seems quite overjoyed to have it. [P. F. R. and pause.]<sup>243</sup>

<sup>242</sup> Of the name Lizzie the sitter writes: "My father had an Aunt Elizabeth (called Betsy, not Lizzie). I know nothing about her or her husband, as she was born nearly 150 years ago and married 125 years ago. All these statements are possible, but not verifiable. The relative order of their deaths is not within reach."

<sup>243</sup> The sitter writes of this reference to a deceased sister: "My wife had a little sister who died before she was born. 'Ed' is my own name, always used by my

[Change of Control.]

Dear I want to come myself. I do not want any one to write for me. I would rather be slower [read 'closer' doubtfully] and do it ... slower and do it all myself.

(All right.)

I know that I shall be able to do it [Indian] what you expect.  
[P. F. R.]

(All right.)

J [pause] M [Pause. P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

M [?] [pause] a ... [erased.] M [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

M [read 'cH'] [pause] M yes M [P. F. R.] <sup>244</sup>

(Stick to it.)

M y [read 'M'] M y h u s b a n d [written with great difficulty.] \* \* \* [scrawls and pencil fell.] [Cataplexy and long pause.]

[Subliminal.]

Who is ... [pause] Whose revolver?

(You tell.)

Do you know anything about it?

(No.)

Do you carry one? (No.) Honestly?

(No I do not.)

I see one right here. [Pause.] Does your friend carry one?

(No.) [Sitter shook head.]

Well, somebody does, for here it is. I wouldn't see it unless somebody had it would I?

(No.)

[Long pause.]

I can't tell you anything more about it. (All right.) Does it worry you?

(No.)

It does me. [Pause.] I think it is ... I'll tell you more about it some other time. Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

[Long pause and sitter left.]

---

wife. The reference to the ring is correct. Her wedding ring remained on her finger."

<sup>244</sup> The only possible interpretation which the sitter can give to the letters "J" and "M" is that they might refer to his wife's brother Jim, who died about nine months before she did.



I think somebody went out and shot themselves. That's what I think. [Sigh.] [Pause and opened eyes, stared and then closed them again.]

It wasn't you I know. It is another man.

(Well, can you give a hint of who it is?) [Thinking of a friend.]

[Pause.] It makes me sick.

(What was the matter with him?) [Thinking of cancer.]

Do you mean he was crazy or diseased?

(Anything.)

I think he was kind of out of his head. It isn't you. It doesn't look like you. He is taller, not very stout, darker eyes. Oh but he is so sorry. [Pause.] Poor Arthur.

(Who is Arthur?) [Thinking of his son.] <sup>245</sup>

[Mrs. C. opened her eyes almost as soon as I asked the last question, but had no memory of it.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mr. Gale. February 10th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitter admitted. Long pause. Hand moved across pad as if trying to come for the pencil and twitched a little. Indian and reached for pencil. Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

I am glad to be at work again for it is easier to work than to wait and since [read 'say' and 'some'] since I made the trial [read 'tried'] trial I have been so anxious to come again.

(I understand.)

I do not have hard work to remember but I have quite a time putting [putting] in writing what I want to select from my memories a whole [pause] lot of things come rushing in at once. It is like seeing an old friend after a long absence. each one talks as fast as possible and asks questions enough to fill a book.

---

<sup>245</sup> I had a friend in New York expected to die of cancer at any moment and I knew that he had contemplated suicide. Hence I had him in mind when the reference to suicide was made. But on my return to New York I learned that he had died naturally and had not even tried suicide. Arthur was not his name, nor was it, as I learned afterward, the name of his son.

Some years ago I was in correspondence with a man on the Pacific Coast who shot himself. He had lost his mind completely. Soon afterward he was rather clearly referred to through Mrs. Keeler and more clearly identified than here. It was long after this sitting that I even thought of the coincidence which I have described.

(I understand.)

I have had much thought about this before I came here and felt [read 'well' and 'will'] I ... felt I knew a great deal about it and I still feel so. It makes me think of music. You may be able to read notes and sing them but when you try to read them and play on an unfamiliar instrument you often strike the wrong key or chord. Just so I did yesterday. [Pause.]

I am impressed with the feeling of reality in your presence dear one [read 'of' as pencil ran off pad] one. I do not for the moment realize that there is any distance between us and I know you are waiting for me to prove it. I know I was sometimes too nervous about things but still I was not always so was I and I did want to stay and take care of you but instead of that you had to take care of me. [P. F. R. Indian.] I watch over you all the time so that no harm can come to you.

(Do you remember the question I asked you yesterday?)

I think so. was it not about a matter which gave me some concern before I came here and about him and a matter which used to make him laughingly reassure me that he would be all right about the physical welfare.

(It was about an unhappiness in connection with business.)

A fear.

(Yes, go on. Make it specific.) [Sitter nodded head.]

A fear of his making \* \* [apparently 'con'] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

I know what I want to say but I can't say it quite right.

(Stick to it and you will.)

you think I can. (Yes.) \* \* [scrawl.] I was not ashamed. It was not that sort of unhappiness but a sort of fear because of someone else no specific someone but possibility of [pause] loss of life [written 'live' and read 'love'] \* \* Yes [P. F. R.] life [written 'live'] [P. F. R.] danger [difficulty in writing]

(Stick to it.)

lives dangerous risks to take [groan.] \* \* [scrawls] t r ... t r a v ... \* \* [scrawl like 'w'] [Pause.] night and day always the same fear for him you dear. Yet here am I—

(Yes I know.)

first over in the other life. [struggle] one word would tell.

(Yes, stick to it.)

the story you know.

(You will get that word.)

[Pause.] O [N .R.] O [pause] \* \* [scrawl terminating 'O' and

possibly attempt to turn it into 'C'] C a ... O [Indian.] O f  
[pause] f [pause] icial

("Official"?)

Sudden death. [Hand threshed about over pad. Indian.] Can-  
not seem to get it yet. [Writing now began to be heavy and like Jen-  
nie P's] <sup>246</sup>

[Apparent Change of Control.]

Wait [N. R.] a little ... Wait a ... W ... [read] yes she will  
do it. another pencil. [New pencil given.] [Long pause.]

[Apparent Change of Control.]

\* \* \* \* [scrawls] [Long pause.] R o b e r t. R o b  
... [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Long pause. P. F. R., and Indian.] \* \* [then pencil writing in  
air.] You were a C E E E E e C E [All E's misread 'C'] you  
know what I mean.

(No, not yet.) [Sitter shook head.] <sup>247</sup>

Yes yes.

(Well, he knows what he wants but what has gotten on paper is not  
yet clear enough to be sure what you mean.)

[Long pause.] \* \* ['C a' possibly and possibly attempt to get  
'Carrie' but erased. Possibly "E' and scrawls.] E E E m E  
[pause] her[e] I will keep trying till it comes.

(Yes, by all means.)

It is so strange it does not get [pause] there. [P. F. R. and hand  
pats the head before taking the pencil.] W [pause] W [pause] ill  
[Long pause.] \* \* [scrawl resembling 'I' but probably not so in-  
tended.] E E [Long pause] E [P. F. R. Indian.] [Long pause.]  
E m E m [P. F. R. and distress.] E l [purposely not read be-  
cause I suspected it was 'Ed'] E [pause.]

<sup>246</sup> The answer to the question the sitter wanted put is summarized here in the words "fear" and "travel." He states the facts as follows:

"My semi-annual trips south, to Tennessee and Alabama, required by my business, were of late years a source of much unhappiness to my wife, from whom I was otherwise never separated, hardly for a day. She dreaded them for weeks beforehand. Whether she feared something would happen to me or to her while I was away, she was very nervous about them."

<sup>247</sup> "'Ca' and O are not clear in their meaning. Robert is the name of an intimate friend of the family, the brother of my son's wife. C might apply to three persons, but there is no hint here as to which it would fit," the sitter reports, but does not know why two of them should be mentioned, but if it referred to the son-in-law it would have a natural reason for mention.

[Sitter's middle initial was C. Therefore "E. C." fits.—G. O. T.]

(Make the next letter a capital.)

E is that what you mean?

(I mean the letter after E.)

I understand. (All right.) E [pause] h no

(Stick to it.)

E [long pause] l [?] E l [read 'h' as written apparently.] you said a capital. ("L"?) \* \* [scrawl.] E M no no no [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it. You will get it yet.)

E [Indian and distress.] E d w a r d [all but 'E' not read immediately and not at all aloud.]

(What's that?)

E [pause] le. [purposely not read] [Long pause.] E [Pause and P. F. R.]

(You will get it.)

[Long pause.] n [possibly meant for part of 'm'] d (Who ....) Ed.

(Who is Ed ?) you. (Good, worth while wasn't it?) <sup>248</sup>

Yes but so slow. (Yes I understand.) I have hard work to be patient with my self. D D is for something else which he knows.

(You tell it.)

D [pause] r. [period inserted.] D o ... [pause] D o c ... [Pencil fell and hand threshed about.] [Long pause.] D a u ... I am [N. R.] I am M o t ... [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

M o t h ... [P. F. R.] M [struggle.] M M M M [heavy writing and last two like small 'n'] [Struggle.] M o t ... [Distress and P. F. R.] I want to write my name.

(Yes, stick to it.)

and his business and then I will feel better. (All right.) M [Indian and struggle.] [Long pause.] \* \* [scrawl.] S [N. R.] S C a ... C a C a C a you know. [P. F. R. Indian and distress., long pause.]

(What is the matter?)

[Pause.] Shall I keep on. (Yes.) Do you know I— I find it very hard to finish that. C a r ... C a r r i e but it is a name of one dear [N. R.] to us ... dear to us.

(All right.) [Sitter nodded head.]

and L. [Pause, pencil fell and hand reached for mine. Pause.] <sup>249</sup>

<sup>248</sup> The name of the sitter's wife was Emma and his own name Edward, called Ed by his wife. It is probable that the E and Em are for her name. The W and Will probably refer to the sitter's brother William, who is dead, or possibly to his nephew Will, who is living. She was fond of both.

<sup>249</sup> The syllable "Dau" associated with the word "Mother" may refer to the only daughter of the sitter and his wife. "Their relations were of the closest. For

[*Subliminal.*]

She's gone.

(Yes, do you know who the Carrie is?)

No, is it the lady herself?

(You will have to say.)

Well, I don't know. I'm sure. [Pause.] I can't see her yet, not much.

(All right.)

I can hear her saying it. Carrie, Carrie, Carrie. It is on her mind. Do you know Caroline?

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.]

I think she wanted to write Caroline more than Carrie. Did she write an L afterward.

(Yes.) <sup>250</sup>

Is that right? Did you know she was fond of flags? Or had a patriotic spirit?

(No.) [Sitter shook head.]

Well, what has that flag got to do with her? I see a flag. It is not like a big decoration flag. Are there flags everywhere around him?

(No.) [Sitter shook head.]

Are you sure about that?

(He says there is none. Perhaps it is symbolic of something.)

It may be. I will try to see. Do you want me to?

(Yes.)

[Pause.] Hm. [Pause.] At first I saw it standing as if in a socket, blowing right out to the wind and I didn't see him touch it. I just saw it high up on top of a building. I could only think of the weather bureau. Have they flags on that?

(I think so.)

All I thought of was that I can look over the building. Has he got a high up place where he can look out and see a lot of buildings out from the window?

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded assent.]

Looking out I see a strange thing. From this room you would see this flag flying and it is toward the west. Just what you would see when

---

ten years after the daughter's marriage and removal from home, until her mother's death, they wrote to each other practically every day." Cf. Sitting of June 25th, 1913: "My wife had an Aunt Carrie or Caroline, who is dead, and a niece Carrie, who is living."

<sup>250</sup> The Carrie is a continuation of the previous effort at the name evidently and makes it clear that it was Caroline that was intended. But the reference to "L" is not explained.

looking out of this window [Mrs. C's window looks to the west.] It just faces like this window you see.

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.] <sup>251</sup>

It is higher, much higher. Then I think she wants to tell something about his affairs where he is and his affairs. This picture is left.

(Yes, about his business.)

Yes, I think so. It seems in connection with that picture. It is the funniest thing. There is a lot of people around in his business. I almost want to contradict that. At times he is alone working with his head down and alone I mean.

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.]

At other times people are coming and going. There are people around. Do you understand?

(Yes.) Is that right? (Yes.) I think she can show me the picture better than she can write it. She is all right. She is too ambitious and wants to do it all in a minute. She has a lot of fun in her. She is bright, a bright talker. She has quite a gift of talk. Ask him.

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.]

She is quite a fearless woman, I don't care what you say. [Pause.] Why do you think she is afraid?

(She said there was a fear about some matters that caused unhappiness.)

It was more fear of result than of anything. You know what I mean, uneasiness instead of unhappiness. That is the better word. Is that right?

(I don't know.) Well he does. (No.) [Sitter shook head.]

[Pause.] Well, I guess I shall tell by and by. I see something like a big safe door. It is black and looks more like a safe. It is big enough for a man to go into. I don't know whether it is a vault or safe. It is very black. It is before me. Is it in connection with him?

(No.) [Sitter shook head.] <sup>252</sup>

I guess I'll leave it. She makes me nervous. [Pause.] Is he sorry he made her unhappy?

(No.) [I answered because the question was perplexing,]

<sup>251</sup> The sitter writes regarding the flag incident: "All this description of the flag is true to me, but not especially connected with my wife. My office window (6th story) looks out *towards the west*, to many higher roofs, on one of which is a flag pole. The flag is raised on holidays especially. I do not know that my wife ever saw it or spoke of it."

<sup>252</sup> Of the description of his business surroundings and his wife the sitter writes: "This description of my business surroundings is absolutely correct. The description following of my wife is good. I have a safe in such a vault, but not in my office and my wife never saw it."

Hm. Isn't that funny. Goodbye. I guess you are glad I am gone.  
(It will give me a rest.)

Hm. [Pause.] Does Hackensack mean anything to you?  
(I know of it. Why mention it?)

Because I mention exactly what I hear, everything that comes to my mind. Hackensack valley. Is there such a place?

(Yes.) <sup>253</sup>

[Pause.] All right, goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

[Sitter left and long pause.]

Do you know if he is a lawyer? (No.)

You don't know?

(No.)

Oh, you don't know what he does.

(No.)

Ain't that funny? [Awakened.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mr. Gale. February 11th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitter admitted. Long pause. Hand rolled, paused, reached for pencil, which fell and had to be reinserted. Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

Dear I am satisfied [pauses between the words] now and so happy to be a part of your life in so real and complete [article placed on table.] a way. A change has come over me. I am no longer superstitious and full of a strange fear but am calm and happy and try to be patient waiting for you to come. It is so lovely and beautiful over here that I wonder that any one ever dreads death. I know now that it is only the separation which seems so fearful and that is not at all necessary I have been conscious of you and your life and thought of me ever since I came here and have so much wished to tell you and to thank you for so many many things done for me. I do not mean at the very last but all through the years. The last [read 'best', as hand was pulled down to prevent superposing.] was done as ... the

<sup>253</sup> This allusion to Hackensack and Hackensack Valley has no relevance to the sitter. I do not know its meaning. Dr. I. K. Funk lived the latter part of his life in the Hackensack Valley and his brother had died a few days prior to this time. But I have not any evidence that the allusion is intended for him.

[One of our best psychics was just beginning her development under J. H. H. and G. O. T. at that time. She lived in Hackensack Valley.—G. O. T.]

last was done as I would wish and you have often wished you knew if I were pleased and satisfied and I tell you that I was—

I know that the hardest work is to prove that I am not a shadow or a figment of the brain but I can do all that I believe and if I can help you to understand my near and close proximity to you I can give you the courage you need. [groans and Indian for some time.]

I am making desperate effort to keep my seat. [Indian and groans.] I want to refer to some valuable things fur furs of mine (Go ahead. Tell it fully.) [Sitter had nodded head.]

which I loved [read 'would' for correction] loved pretty well you know. the long fur that was so warm.

(Tell . . . . ) [Writing went on.]

and not so old either.

(What was the color?)

brown. (What kind of fur?) [Pause.] Yes I know. S a . . . [purposely not read.] my S a b l e. S . . . [struggle to keep control.] You know my brown brown long furs.

(Yes, they are recognized. Tell all you can.)

and I was so proud and they were so warm and comfortable. Just like you to want me to have them. You always said Get the *best* [underscored three times.] they last longer and are the cheapest in the end. You know what I mean. [Indian.]<sup>254</sup>

I have another thing I want to recall. A [or scrawl] trip [N. R.] journey . . . trip . . . before I came here. Quite a trip of some little moment which was long talked of and at last taken. You know to what I refer.

(Tell all . . . . ) [Writing went on.]

warmer place [P. F. R. and groans.] Yes that is what I want to write about. It was so beautiful there. [P. F. R.] City [only reading possible.] [P. F. R.] S o ['o' read 'a'] S o . . . [P. F. R.] Do you not know which [read 'what'] which [P. F. R.] place I mean.

(Yes, but it will not be evidence until it is written on the paper.)

I wish you were at the bottom of the Red Sea for I could talk with him all right but I really \* \* ['do?'] know you are quite important just the same.

(Good. I understand.)

It is so exasperating to be pulled up to some particular word just

<sup>254</sup> Of the reference to furs the sitter says: "The reference to furs is pertinent and interesting. My wife had recently bought and worn a long *brown* fur coat for automobile use, which she enjoyed very much. She was undecided between this and a cheaper one, but I advised and persuaded her to take the better one. She had also very recently had made over for her own use a set of Hudson sable furs which were valuable and had belonged to her mother."



for you. I mean a place we had a great many flowers flowers growing everywhere and . . . [P. F. R. Indian.] <sup>255</sup>

I want to recall another lady whom we met while away and I want to speak of some more private affairs. I mean some of the daily [Indian and distress.] life matter. you will recall something about the telephone call. [Distress.] How can I make that plain. I refer to a special telephone call which gave some alarm. [P. F. R. and distress.] P a [pause] [P. F. R.] P a [P. F. R.] So sick [N. R.] sick and sad sad [mere scrawls and reading conjectured.]

(Stick to it.)

\* \* [scrawl and groans.] E d. [P. F. R. twice.] Long pause.] <sup>256</sup>

Just a moment. I lost my hold.

(I understand. Take your time.)

[Pause.] I think I will not try to recall any of the sad things. I make no fuss about smoke now smoking. I would be glad to smell even the strongest of them even if I did now and then speak of smoke in strong disrespect [N. R.] Pipers dear dear.

(What was that word after 'strong'?)

disrespect. He knows what I mean.

(No, he does not recall it.) [Sitter shook head.]

Yes he will when I get through what I am after.

(All right. Stick to it.)

He knows what I mean by smoke smoking. [Pencil fell and hand

<sup>255</sup> On the incident of the trip the sitter comments as follows: "We had for several years gone to Atlantic City, about Easter time, but had omitted it for two years. This time we talked it over a great deal and concluded to go. After a week of pleasure and enjoyment she was taken sick and at the end of another week she died there."

The style of rebuking me rather indicates that Jennie P. is helping and resents, as usual, my objection to questions from them, and the supposition that my knowing what is meant is in any respect evidence. Jennie P. and I always crossed swords on that and the communicator would probably have no such petulant manners as Jennie P. so frequently shows.

The reference to their having "a great many flowers growing there" would tend to contradict the place recognized by the sitter: for they did not live at Atlantic City. The "A" and "City" are clear hints of the place mentioned by the sitter. Possibly my insistence on my point of view had the effect of changing the thought in the communicator's mind, or Jennie P.'s rebuke did this and the connections were broken. There is no way to settle such a question.

<sup>256</sup> Of this confused passage which ends in a breakdown the sitter writes:

"I do not recall any particular lady that we met while away. Of course she made some temporary acquaintances at the hotel where we stayed.

"I called her every day from my office at a fixed hour. She did not ordinarily like telephone calls and telegrams, for fear of bad news."

The letters "Pa" are not explained by the sitter and Ed is his own name, as we have seen above, by which his wife always called him.

reached for mine, but I refused it and after long pause pencil was taken, and writing began with some difficulty.]

Do [struggle] you not know about smoking.

(Yes, stick to it.) [Sitter nodded head.]

and as a rule I enjoy it you know but sometimes smoke odor is was rather strong even for me understand. [P. F. R.] but I hope you will keep up the habit over here just the same. [Struggle and spoke 'Oh pshaw'] <sup>257</sup>

B B [P. F. R.] B a place a place. he and I have. B B [P. F. R.] [Long pause and Indian. Threw pencil away and paused. Reinserted.] B B. <sup>258</sup>

[Change of Control.]

She dropped out at once. This is G. P.

(Yes, I thought so.)

and I was trying to hold her in for a little longer time but she grew excited as she tried to recall a specific experience. Do you know anything about a carriage A private carriage or car. I cannot make it quite clear which she was [read 'tries'] was trying to recall. But it sounds like a private carriage in which she was riding— Does it mean anything to her friend.

(Yes it does. Tell about it.) [Sitter nodded head.]

She was very fond of this thing and liked [read 'wished'] to go ... liked ... and to drive and enjoyed always the going [read 'agony' because of a scrawl and hand pointed till corrected.] but there was something which gave her concern about it when she tried to write and I fear I cannot get it but I tell you Hyslop I think her a very level headed woman and a good communicator in the embryonic state. [P. F. R.] <sup>259</sup>

<sup>257</sup> The sitter comments on the smoking as follows: "The smoking conversation is not very pertinent. She never objected to smoke or smoking on personal grounds, but only with reference to my health."

There was probably an effort in this message to indicate that the communicator did not object to smoking. In a sitting at the end of the season of 1913 the same communicator complained in rather a deprecative tone about the sitter's smoking and in his note then he admitted that, since her death, he was probably smoking to excess. In this passage she is referring apparently to her attitude of mind generally toward the habit. It does not quite take the attitude that the sitter implies, and tho it speaks deprecatingly of it at times there is also the favorable attitude which the sitter's comments do not clearly recognize.

<sup>258</sup> The sitter says of the letter "B" that it does not signify either of the places that he and she had. It seems not to have occurred to him that it is the initial of Boston, where his office is. Whether this is meant is not determinable, but the possibility of it on any theory should be remarked.

<sup>259</sup> Of the allusion to the "private carriage" the sitter explains as follows:

"We had a small motor car (for two) in which for several years past we have

(All right.)

She makes several attempts to get the pencil now but I tell her to wait a moment.

I want to write about a man who is with her over here. He is not an old [N. R.] man ... old ... but rather young and has been here sometime and is apparently a man who was connected [N. R.] connected with her friend and who has been a factor [read 'teacher' and hand pointed till corrected.] in the helping influences around the life. Was here [so written and read] a ... Was there a brother who passed away some years ago.

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded assent.] <sup>260</sup>

He is very strong and helpful and would gladly send a message on his own account but this time the lady was to have the time. It is a very pretty family group over here. The fathers [delay in reading and pencil tapped.] of both ... the fathers of each are here and there is a very dear old lady who is rather stout and fair and with spectacles and very pleasing manners announces [N. R.] herself in motherly way— ... announces ... yes to him—

And do you know if there is one whose name is Susan who is connected in the family.

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.]

Was it not an Aunt.

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.]

She said just tell him that Aunt Susan is in the family group and as happy as if she were standing among the redeemed [N. R.] redeemed which \* \* leads [N. R.] me ... leads me to infer that she was a good Christian lady— <sup>261</sup>

I cannot well stay longer and I leave you to imagine what a joyous time [N. R.] is it ... time it is over here for these friends who are really so loving and devoted [N. R.] devoted—

I want to speak about a small animal which I see here. It is either a small dog or a large cat. I cannot tell until I get out [N. R.] out which it is. It is dark very dark and looks most like a dog. Somewhat like a King Charles Spaniel yes [to delayed reading] Does he know anything about it.

taken very frequent half-day or all day excursions. She was fond of this car, and the rides in it were her *greatest* pleasure. She had also a carriage and a horse for her own use, which she enjoyed very much."

<sup>260</sup> The sitter has two brothers dead and the communicator also two. No indications occur here as to who is meant.

<sup>261</sup> In regard to the name Susan the sitter says: "I had an Aunt Susan, my father's sister, who was closely associated with the family when I was a child. I do not remember her appearance and have no source of inquiry. But she certainly was a good Christian lady."

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded assent.]

It is a great pet and much loved as a baby would be. Glad to know it is here. Arnt you . . . are you not. [Pencil fell as if to end sitting and I interrupted for a question.] <sup>262</sup>

(See here, George.)

[Pause and pencil seized.] Well Well.

(If I come alone next week I wish you would bring that Jack we talked about before and perhaps he can get through not only his name but also some advice for his wife.)

Yes I will send and will help all I can. There is only about so much we can do after they take the pencil. It is mostly in preparation [N. R.] preparation.

Was there a name of a pet something like Ko-ko.

(For whom?)

a pet in connection with the friend—

(No.) [Sitter shook head.]

It is not quite right I know but something which suggests Togo or Ko-ko or something of that sort. [Pencil fell.] <sup>263</sup>

[Subliminal.]

[Indian.] Hattie, Hattie. <sup>264</sup> [Long pause.] Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

Just a moment. [Pause.] Do you know any one specially fond of Hiawatha? I don't know whether it is to suggest Longfellow or the Poem. I keep seeing pictures from Hiawatha. Was anybody connected with this sitting especially fond of Longfellow?

(I don't know.)

You can't find out?

(I don't know.)

[Pause.] Hiawatha. [Pause.] All right, well is there anything that it suggests to that man? I can't get at it. Was the lady very

<sup>262</sup> In reference to the animal the sitter makes these comments: "We had for twelve years a small dog, 'very dark,' a Skye terrier much 'like a King Charles spaniel,' 'a great pet and much loved.' It was a great grief to my wife when he died a few years before she did."

<sup>263</sup> The dog mentioned above was not named either "Koko" or "Togo," or anything like it. There is no indication that these names refer to him. Such an indication might have been more definite were it not for my interruption of the situation by my query about the next week's work, though it is apparent that the automatic writing was ended by the fall of the pencil. But possibly the resumption of it by my question may have either revived a confused reference to the dog or have opened the way for a new incident.

<sup>264</sup> The sitter says of the name Hattie: "Hattie is the name of the widow of one of my deceased brothers, and always considered like a real sister to us."

fond of music?

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head hesitatingly.]

Well, there was something about it of special interest in Hiawatha. The music is in Hiawatha the poem. I get an unusual interest in that. That is what I think it is. It seems like going to hear it. It is a special production. Do you see?

(Yes.)

[Pause.] Goodbye. [Sitter left. Pause.] I could hear him walking. I can hear him walking now. [Sitter's steps could be heard.] <sup>285</sup>

### Chapter XVII, Series XIII, Feb. 16, 17, 18, 1914

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mr. T. February 16th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitter admitted. Article placed on table, large package containing pipe, according to sitter. Long pause. Indian and rolling of hand. Long pause, sigh and half groan, and pause.]

Who are all these people?

(You tell, if you can.)

Hm. [pause.] Yes, Hm. [Pause and reached for pencil, followed by long pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

I [written at edge and pause.] will try and do what I can to come to you my boy for I have long wished to come to you.

(You are most welcome indeed.)

I am not more welcome than [pause] glad to welcome him [distress in face.] I cannot make it seem quite real yet to come in this way but shall soon get hold of the idea, [struggle for control] I think. <sup>286</sup>

(All right.)

It is so good to come at all that it is worth [read 'both' doubtfully] any effort . . . worth.

(Yes, I understand.)

<sup>285</sup> Of the allusion to Hiawatha the sitter writes: "There seems no pertinence whatever in the reference to Hiawatha or Longfellow. My wife was moderately fond of music. She played and sang for home pleasure."

<sup>286</sup> The sitter was a son of Mrs. T. and this was his first sitting. I had arranged the matter in such a way that the conditions were as good as if the family were entire strangers to the work. I wanted to see if the same communicator came that came to his mother before. The reader will see in the sequel that it was the same one. The very first sentence was a hit, considering that Mrs. Chenoweth had not yet seen the sitter.

I do not know just how to begin. It was not so hard at first as after a while for at first I was excited and saw so many people and friends who were glad to have me come here but after a little when I began to realize that it was all over and that I was cut off from the old familiar intercourse and daily contact I grew [sigh and distress] home-sick for the old life but this is good this is helpful [groan] dear I shall yet be able to say al [all] I \* \* [P. F. R.]

(Keep calm. I shall help.)

want to I am sure. Do not feel as if I were far away for I am so near you. In your work and all you do. [P. F. R., distress and Indian.] I know how lonely you are sometimes yes all the time but you are responsive to the ... [struggle] I [P. F. R.] (Stick to it.) L o v e I love you [groan] I have seen my mother and tried to help. [P. F. R. and pause.]

(Is your mother living or on your side?)  
not here.

(I understand. I wished only to have that clear. To whom were you referring when you said "I love you"?)<sup>267</sup>

[Pause.] To her and to him and f a t h ... [P. F. R.] P a ... [groan] Papa.

(I understand.)

and I am happy he is here not in spirit land. It is hard to make you understand because you call it here and there

(I understand.)

and it is all one life and we have to make distinctions to make you understand that is the hard [P. F. R.] part of it.

It seems as if I ought to have stayed in the home longer doesn't it [struggle] for it was so lovely and complete but when you come to know what a close relation there is between us you will not feel so forsaken. I can laugh even when I recall the sad [N. R.] parting we [?] ... sad [read 'said'] sad ... for I find it so much [P. F. R. and Indian.] better than I thought death could be. [Pencil fell and new one given. Long pause, and finger moved up for pencil, which was given, followed by a pause and a struggle and pause again.]

S [P. F. R. Pause.] Shall I come again.

(Yes, my intention is that you shall have three days this week and also three next week. Your wife wishes some advice on a point about

---

<sup>267</sup> The communicator's mother is still living, assuming that it is the sitter's father that is communicating. The implication most natural in the statement that he had seen his mother was immediately corrected in response to my question. But the confusion had already begun with the language that the communicator had usually addressed to his wife.

which I know nothing, and if you can tell what it is that is on her mind and tell it here it will please her. I would ask you that you try to get Emperor to help you and he may come here before the series is over and help to give the advice. Do you understand?)

[Pause.] Yes I already know who Emperor is and also the other friends who work with him. Do you know whether I have ever written the name Harold [N. R.] since ... Harold ... I have been coming here.<sup>268</sup>

(I do not recall, but think you have not given it before, but explain all you desire.)

It is a name I wish to write here now and I can say no more about it at this time. It makes me quite indignant [N. R.] indignant with myself that I cannot keep [read 'seek' doubtfully] to the ... keep to the line better. You know when a man goes all to smash all at once it is hard to collect himself and each time I try to fasten on to the thing in hand I find my old condition floating over me. I wonder if I will ever get over it. I do not feel [read 'but'] it at ... feel ... at all when I am not trying to write.

(I understand.)

I am with her so much I get her feeling of [groan] uneasiness but no sense of my own accident.

(I understand, perfectly.)

I want to tell you now that it was an accident pure and simple and no carelessness about it either as far as I can see now and I think it is that [pause and groan] element of accidental death that makes it so hard for all of our friends to bear. They think they could have borne it better if it had been in some other way and perhaps they could I cannot tell.

It does seem hard to have life and prospects and everything a man holds dear swept away from him by one stroke of bad luck but I try never to think of that but to build on what I know now of this dual life if I may speak of it in that way.<sup>269</sup> [Indian and struggle.] \* \* [scrawls.] B [P. F. R.]

<sup>268</sup> The letter S is not intelligible. It might refer to the same thing as S in the next sitting. The wife knows a cousin Harold who is living, but there is no known reason for mentioning him, except that he was a missionary in China and used to play cricket with Mr. T., the communicator. He was fond of Mr. T. and was a sister of the Jacqueline mentioned later.

<sup>269</sup> The communicator's death was accidental, as we have seen in previous notes, and I remark it here only because it is a circumstance in the identity of the communicator with a new sitter present.

The allusion to a "dual life" has its interest because of a possible connection with statements later. The allusion at this point does not convey its own meaning, because we do not know enough of that life to interpret it. But as the communi-

(Stick to it.)

B [pause and tapping pencil.] B [P. F. R.]k

(Stick to it and I shall help.)

B [tapping pencil and long pause.] B n no B B r [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it. You will get it.)

[Pause.] B B r o . . . B r o ['o' erased] [P. F. R.] B r . . .

B B r \* \* ['in' or possibly effort at 'th', as lines may be clearly so construed.] B r t ['t' not read at time purposely] [P. F. R.]

(I shall be patient if you will finish it.)

[Pause.] B r [pause] r What's the use you know what I want to write.

(No I do not and if it be correct it will be a great piece of evidence. Perhaps the friend present here knows what you are trying to do but it will be evidence when you get it on paper.)

I want to say so much to him.

(Yes, go ahead. Say what you wish.)

[Pencil fell and hand reached for mine, as it was cataleptic. I rubbed it some time and after a long pause the subliminal began.<sup>270</sup>

[*Subliminal.*]

Have you got a brother?

(Yes.) [I saw reference was to sitter's brother, the mention of whom would have special relevance at this time.] (What do you want to say of him?)

I just wanted to write brother.

(Yes, and if he can tell why it will be an excellent piece of evidence.)

I don't know what you mean.

(If he can tell why he wanted to mention the word brother for the friend present, it will be an excellent point.)

[Pause.] Yes but I don't know him. I only felt that brother pounding that word on my head. Didn't somebody try to write it?

(Yes.)<sup>271</sup>

Better get him back and try to finish it. I am not too independent.

---

cator later confessed that he was "earthbound," [See *Journal*, March, 1920] what we know of that condition would suggest that he had not escaped the dream condition which characterizes it. His constant close staying about his wife would help to prevent his normal development on the other side.

<sup>270</sup> The allusion to brother is not intelligible without something more specific. The sitter's brother was rather dangerously ill at the time with scarlet fever and I suspected the intention to refer to him and so encouraged the communicator to make it clear. But he broke down in the effort.

<sup>271</sup> The first sentence in the subliminal confirmed my suspicion of what the intention was, but the matter was not yet made as clear as desirable.



I just can't see. [Pause.] I want to tell you another word I see, may I?

(Yes.)

I don't think it is any one in heaven but on earth. It is a woman. She has brown eyes, very brown eyes. [Pause.]

(Yes.)

I think she is very pretty. She is . . . [pause.] I don't know. She . . . [pause] Did she ever take any part in theatricals or anything like that? I see a lot of costumes around.

(That depends on whom) . . . . [Went on.]

she—is—I—know—what—you—are—going—to—say. [Spoken in imitation of my slow speech when writing down my own statements.]

Well, she wears black now and has been thinking of all her dresses, costumes, colors, and whether to do anything with them or put them away. They have all been handled again lately.<sup>272</sup>

(Yes.)

Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

[Pause.] I heard a strange name. J a c q u e l i n e.

(All right. Who is that?) [Sitter nodded head.]

I don't know. It seems like some verses you know, as if it would be two. J a c q u e l i n e.<sup>273</sup> I'm gone.

(All right.)

Tomorrow.

(Yes.)

[Long pause, rubbed eyes and sitter left. Pause and awakened.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mr. T. February 17th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitter admitted. Article placed on table. Long pause.] Hm. [Pause. Twitching muscles of face. Long pause.]

Isn't it still?

(Yes.)

<sup>272</sup> A short time, perhaps a month, prior to this sitting, the sitter and his mother were in Switzerland and a fancy ball was given in the hotel where they were stopping and the sitter was dressed in a paper costume.

The sitter's mother has very brown eyes. At the time of this sitting she was still wearing black, but had bought some of her dresses in color and wondered whether she would wear them or make them up for a daughter.

<sup>273</sup> Jacqueline is the name of a cousin of the family and she is the sister of the Harold mentioned earlier in the sitting.

Hm. [sigh.] I see two letters.

(What are they?)

S and G. They are both capitals. Possibly they should be the reverse of that and I would make them G and S. [Long pause.] Switzerland.<sup>274</sup> [Pause and distress in face.] Do you want me to say what I want to say?

(Yes.)

Gad! it is hard to want to say something and to have so much difficulty. [Pause.] I got to go. I got to go. [Pain apparent in face.] [Pause and reached for pencil.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

My dear boy. Good of you to come to help me and I am more glad than I can tell you to have you interested for it helps me to feel that I am a part of the old life and that I have not burned all my bridges behind me even if I did pass through a terrible battle. I am kept busy enough trying to keep [keep] track of all of you and you can think of me as rushing from one point to another to see how everything is going on with my friends.

I would like nothing better than to sit down for an hour and talk over some of the things I have seen and heard over here but there are so many interests which still claim my attention that I am not quite free to leave them and devote myself to a description of my life and opportunities but that must not be interpreted as meaning that I wish to withdraw [N R.] withdraw from any of the interests that I own [N. R.] are ... own ... are compelling because of my love. I prefer to take part in everything that is possible as definitely as I can.

Do you believe in signs. I do not know just why I ask you now except that I have looked back to the time before the accident and it seemed as if there were several things which pointed to what was coming.

(Yes, tell what they are.)

more [read 'there' carelessly] more or less trouble about getting off at the start changes and some rearrangements and many little plans which somehow fitted in with the end. I did not think it would be such a long journey I took. [P. F. R.]

I wish I could say what is on my mind.

(What is it about?)

Several things about her and several to my b r o . . . friend here

---

<sup>274</sup> The allusion to Switzerland probably explains the meaning of "G. S." The sitter and his mother had just come from Gstad in Switzerland. Of course Mrs. Chenoweth could not possibly have known of this. [Note the "Gad" following.—G. O. T.]

not you. It somehow mixes me up to write to you when I mean him. It is a sort of interpreter affair. Sometimes in Court affairs I have seen some such performance between foreigners but I still speak English.

(Yes I understand, and shall try to help you out. You ... )  
[Writing continued.]

What good does it do to have him keep so still. [Sitter had been quiet.]

(I suppose it would be better to speak, but I rather think a new person here has as much embarrassment to talk as you do.)

Yes but it is d... awkward

(Yes I know.)

and makes me feel the strange separation imposed but I will try and make no trouble for you as I am mighty glad to have any kind of a show.

There are a great many decent kind[s] of people over here who never have a prayer directed their way much less a chance given them to cable a message. Do you know I think the cable is a beter [better] example of our communications than the telephone.

(Good.)

for we use short messages and signs and abbreviated words to save [read 'serve' at first and then corrected] expense of energy just as the cable operator does.

(A question. You referred to his brother yesterday and I would be glad to know why you did so.)

Just why would it seem strange for one to refer to another.

(But there might be a special reason in this case, if you ... [Writing continued.]

and there is and I do want to get the reason down on this pad if I can. [struggle to keep control]

(Good, stick to it.)

I have seen him since I came here and wish to help him also [struggle and excitement.] I won't leave \* \* [scrawls] don't be afraid I'm game this time.

(Yes, all right.)

I have a message for him brother. [struggle.]

(Yes, I understand. Stick to it.)

and I am pleased and satisfied [pause] and [long pause.] still here.

(Yes, I'll help.) [Held hand.]

[Pause.] glad he is all right.

(Was anything the matter with him?)

Why yes he knows why I said I was glad *he* [underscored] is all right.

(Yes I understand and I only wanted to bring out the specific thing without hinting.) <sup>275</sup> [Writing began.]

Yes I know what you are after and I know he is aware of many things in the [struggle to control] past in which I lost my body. Isn't that a fine distinction.

(I understand.)

I have a body now however safe [read 'soft'] safe and sound in limb and brain am I now. [struggle to keep control.]

E E E E E E E \* \* [pause.] Be patient with me. <sup>276</sup>

(Yes, certainly I shall.)

I make a great mess of it I know but I try to get in stronger and operate the whole business and I don't fl [so written and read 'feel'] fit and I have to be ejected [N. R.] ejected. The house can't hold me. I do not do it intentionally.

(I understand, and whenever you can say anything about or to *her* it . . .) [Writing began.]

Yes I know you mean my darling wife.

(Yes.)

I come directly from her almost every time I come here with an idea that I will be more explicit and strong. I want to tell her about a jewel which she wears constantly as a sort of talisman between us. That is enough. She will know what I mean and she is coming home [N. R.] home some time sooner than she is planning now. There is some business [struggle and hand threshed about and Indian.] also [also] which must be attended [N. R. and struggle.] a t t ended ['t's crossed] to for her here. [period inserted]

(Yes, and she wants advice on some point I do not know, and it will be important to give it if . . .) [Writing began.]

Yes I know what she wants to know and I have touched [read 'worked' doubtfully] on it . . . touched [N. R.] Touched on it. <sup>277</sup>

<sup>275</sup> The reader may remark that I totally failed to get anything definite about the ill brother. A very little mind reading or even guessing might have gotten something. Such incidents, and they are numerous enough in the work of Mrs. Chenoweth, might teach the believer in telepathy some humility about the theory.

<sup>276</sup> The sitter's mother did not recognize any meaning to the letter E, but on pressing to know whether there was any Elizabeth who might be mentioned *she said* there was a cousin Elizabeth, sister of the Harold and Jacqueline, and who had been dead some time and she had apparently communicated at earlier sittings.

<sup>277</sup> The communicator's wife wears a necklace he had given her. It had been alluded to before. She had already come home, so that the subconscious must be regarded as unconscious of this fact. It starts from the point of view of earlier sittings. There were some business matters to receive attention. The matter which

Do you know F F yes F.

(Yes, go ahead.) [As I looked at sitter, he pointed to himself.]

Fr ... [pause] Fer ... [pause] Ferd ... Ferd yes yes n  
... Ferd ... Ferdinand.

(Good, that is well done.) [Sitter nodded head.]

I wanted to get it for two reasons. One for interest and association. One for oddity not easy guessed.

(Good.)

You see I am getting the tricks of the trade.

(Yes you are, fine.)

Now I want to write C yes C [pause] C a [pause and not read] C a ... [pause and pencil moved in air.] C [read 'l'] C a [pause] \* \* [stroke which made me read whole as 'r' but it might have been intended for 's'. P. F. R.]

H e r b e r t [pause and P. F. R.] [Sitter shook head to my look.]

(Who is Herbert?) <sup>278</sup>

[Pause.] I will tell you \* \* [pause] \* \* [scrawls] [Pause, and hand stiff.] over here with me. [Pencil fell.]

[Catalepsy in hand which I found very cold and blew my breath on it to help warm it. Pause and face showed distress and then medium cried a little as if in pain.]

(George, can you come a minute?)

[Pause.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh! [crying] [Pause and crying again.] Oh W-i-l-l-i-a-m-s-p-o-r-t [spelled out and pause.] Who came from New York?

(I did.)

No not you. [Pause.] Do you know about a big stable where horses are? You know it is like a big place. I see a great big brown, reddish brown horse. Oh I can see him, can't you see him?

(No.)

Well, look, a beautiful creature. Do you know whether any spirit has been here talking that was interested in a horse like that?

I had in mind had been touched on before, a fact which I did not know until I came to make these notes long after. I refer to the communications about "a coming event." Cf. Notes 178, 179.

<sup>278</sup> The sitter was called Ferdinand by a living gentleman who is the son of a well-known man. His name begins with the letters "Ca." Both were intimate friends of the family. The young man's name is not Ferdinand, but quite different, so that this incident has much interest.

Herbert is the name of a distant cousin of the family. He had no connection with the two gentlemen referred to in the name Ferdinand.

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.]

It is a beautiful creature.

(Yes.) [Encouragement.]

[Pause.] You know I mean it is a sort of a country place. Oh it is so lovely and everything is beautiful. All is so changed since he went away. Do you know what I mean?

(Yes.) [Encouragement.] <sup>279</sup>

And [pause] there is something else I will tell you. You must remember. I see a letter P, it sounds like Peter. You know it. I don't think it is Pete. I think it is Peter. I don't know if it is connected with the place where I see horses. I hear something that begins with P. Do you know anything about it?

(No.) [Sitter shook head.]

Of course you know. It seems like the name of something, a place or a creature, not a man, either a place or a creature. It is like Pete or it might be Peter Pan. Do you know?

(I don't know.) Will you ask? (Yes.)

Possibly it is Peterson. I can't get any more.

(I wanted George Pelham by all means for a few minutes.)

Well, that means you want me to go back.

(Yes, if possible.)

Well, think me back. [Hand fell from mine.] I haven't gone yet.

(I know.)

[Pause and reached for pencil.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

R. H. will get G. P.

(All right, are you here, Hodgson?)

Yes. (You will do.) all right anybody will do that can take a message to Imperator.

(Yes, I wish if possible that Imperator and Rector and yourself and this boy's father would come with me tonight and see what can be done.) <sup>280</sup>

Yes we will all be on hand and try our best to help. The father is so glad to have him here. He ges [gets] rather excited but he is very happy and will aid and guide him in his work and study. Yes

<sup>279</sup> Williamsport at one time was the place where Mr. C., the father of the C mentioned in the previous note, was stationed in his service of the company of which he was later the president. The son, Mr. C., has a big stable for racing horses. The father had a big reddish brown horse which was a favorite and one he used to ride a great deal. His home has been completely changed by his death.

<sup>280</sup> I had arranged to see Mrs. Piper and expected to try her automatic writing in her normal state.

[to reading] of this matter. What is this matter of giving up the work. Yes<sup>281</sup> [to reading]

(I must take a rest or I am likely to come to your side too soon.)

We do not want you here yet but we are much concerned about a break for there are sure to be others who will rush for your time and so we are in a quandary Said [or send?] someone.

(Yes, has the father of the boy present gotten the point that his wife wants light on?)

[Pause.] He is not quite through with what he wishes to get to her. He has a deep and abiding love for the boy wants him to be all to her that he can and to be very patient with her. You know how easy it is to grow impatient when one seems first to lose all interest in a great grief but she will return to normal life. Is there a girl a young girl with her with the mother.

(I am not sure what you mean?)

a young lady alive in your world. I think a child may be a sister.

(There is a sister.) The father of her boy speaks often of her. Is there not someone whose name is somewhat like Elise yes Elise.

(Mr. T.: Can you say why?)

I hear a name something like that spoken often by him. [Pause.] I will tell more about it later and dear me the names coming in fast now are rather disconcerting. Constance [pause] K a ... yes I think a Kate. [Pencil fell.]<sup>282</sup>

(Hodgson, try to have the father of the boy give the advice tonight by the help of Imperator and also try to have Imperator give the same here. We shall be grateful.)

[Pencil given.] Yes R. H. If he can tonight he will but it is not at all sure for the conditions are not as we always wish but will try. [Pencil fell.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Goodbye. (Goodbye.) [Long pause and sitter left, pause again.]

Did anything come? (Yes.) Not much? (Not much.) Are you kind of discouraged? (No, it was good that came.) I guess I'll give it up. (Not if I can help it.) I know you want to come, but you are tired and I am tired and let's give it up. [Long pause.] Do something else. [Pause and awakened.]

<sup>281</sup> Mrs. Chenoweth knew that I expected to take a rest, as I had to tell her in order to make the proper arrangements for the continuance of the sittings.

<sup>282</sup> Elise is correct and is the name of Mrs. T.'s sister-in-law, and Mr. T. was intimately acquainted with her. The name Constance is not recognized, but Kate is the name of a deceased lady connected with the C.'s mentioned above.

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mr. T. February 18th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitter admitted. Article put on table. Long pause. Clutched hand as if in a struggle. Indian, and reached for pencil. Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

At the same place that we once before came we sought to come.

(I understand. Go ahead.)

and were at our old task of serving our deserving friend and brother. We failed to do what was asked but got a message through of some pertinence. It was hard to keep the mind of the lad's father on the theme as there were so many things around that attracted his attention and the work was done on a different scale although we [sigh] tried to make it similar to help him.

(I understand.)

Larger room more space to control. [Pause.] Richard Hodgson was there.

(Yes.)

and made a great effort to [pause] communicate for him.

(Good. I understand.)

and we also tried but I repeat it did not please us entirely. Another opportunity I think would improve my work.<sup>283</sup> The father of the lad is here and makes some impatient gesticulation for me to make more haste but it is only the expression of an anxious spirit jealous of the passage of time.

(I understand.)

There are many things to be done by the lad [N. R.] son the future is as yet an unsealed [read 'unsettled' and pause till corrected] book and these days of preparation for a larger life with abundant resources of [pause] opportunity to do what the highest call of his profession demands will find the father responsive [Indian and distress.] and ready to guide. [Period inserted.]

It is one of ['yes' spoken] the joys that attend the new born

---

<sup>283</sup> Later Jennie P. said it was Imperator and Rector that began the automatic writing. That will explain the use of "we" at the outset. It will be noticed that they referred correctly to the case with whom they had worked. Mrs. Chenoweth knew nothing of my intentions and thought at this time that Mrs. Piper had no powers at all. It was several months later that she heard her power had come back to her. Consequently it would not be natural for her subconscious to guess who it was.

They did not succeed with the mission I wanted effected. There was not a hint of it in any way whatever. Of this also Mrs. Chenoweth had no chance to know. Dr. Hodgson was present and alluded to my need of a rest and advised me to do exactly what I had planned to do, even as to the time I should stop the work.



spirit that the sorrow of separation is lost in service to those who should have a father's guiding hand. [P. F. R.]

(Good. I understand.)

The mother need not hesitate about taking the step which will bring them all together once more. The plans include two groups of people separated by the tragedy of the father's sudden death. [Indian and distress.] and to best serve both groups the change will be best. <sup>284</sup>

There is also a question of disposition of some estate or portion of it—the wisdom of it is questioned at the present time. Some one by the name of Benjamin I think I have it correctly written is in the family circle of influence and another whose name is T —

(Finish that if you can.)

[Pause.] T o . . . [pause] T o m [pause and P. F. R., pause.] M a y [Pencil fell and reinserted, Indian, but fell again and hand reached for mine. and I reinserted pencil but hand would not write. In a few moments it began clutching the air in Jennie P's manner.]

[Change of Control.]

[Four pencils rejected.] There thank you . . . thank . . . I have had at last to come for a moment as I often do when the strain of getting nervous comes on [read 'in'] on. It is somewhat like a spell [N. R.] spell which has to be relieved by yours truly. that does not imply [N. R.] imply [read 'simply'] Imply that the spell is a spell of names [read 'nerves'] names but do you know who that Ben is. Someone alive [N. R.] alive yes. [To reading.] <sup>285</sup>

(No, not recognized.) [Sitter shook head.]

It is someone in business I believe and you know there are all sorts of business interests connected with this bunch [N. R.] of people . . . bunch of people. Do you know anything about a school or school work which is on the mothers mind about some one near her. <sup>286</sup>

(I think so.)

It is also a matter of importance to the father who is here. I want to say right here that this father is the right sort of a spirit to have about. He is whole souled . . . whole souled and very firm when he starts out to accomplish anything and he is the very heart of loyalty

<sup>284</sup> This is precisely the subject on which Mrs. T. wanted advice, and it pertained to matters about which neither the sitter nor I had any knowledge. It shows exact knowledge of the situation.

<sup>285</sup> The name Benjamin was not recognized by Mrs. T. at first, but later she saw a possible meaning. He was a cousin of Mrs. T., a member of her father's firm, and deceased. Thomas, however, is the name of an intimate friend of Mr. T. He was never called Thomas by him, however, but by his second name.

<sup>286</sup> The sitter was concerned at this time about his going to college.

and all the sirens in the deep blue sea cannot charm [read 'dam'] I did not swear.

(I know it.)

charm [read 'drown'] charm him away from those who are his earthly angels and for whom he would resign his chance for a first glimpse of the heavenly kingdom.

This is not intended to be funny [N. R.] at all . . . funny [N. R.] funny. that is only my way of racing at the truth to give the boy an idea that his [N. R.] his father is the same here as when he was with him in the body. It is only the strings and bands [read 'bonds'] bands put on him by these strictly scientific gentlemen which keep [keep] him from bursting [N. R.] bursting forth f... [read] yes forth into some exhibition of his power ex . . . [read] just as I do—

He is so impressed with you Hurricane and your desire to be sure that he does not rush [N. R.] at . . . rush . . . the expression of his love and his devotion as his heart prompts him to do but simply takes his medicine and bows [N. R.] to the decree . . . bows bows bows to . . . of the scientific men who work with you but he is an [read 'in'] active . . . an . . . He is an active gentleman when he is away from your influence and many a bit of good help is given to those he loves in his own way. He is as proud of the boy as can be and is glad indeed to have him make this effort to get into communication with him, but don't forget dear that I am a constant influence and will always be as long as you live is the sum [read 'sun'] and substance . . . is sum sum addition sum [still not read tho really plain enough] s S U M and substance of his thought as I write [N. R.] it . . . write . . . for him if you can call this writing.

It seems more like some strange and unusual skirmish with a pencil [N. R.] and a . . . pencil . . . and pad. How I hate [read 'note'] the end . . . hate . . . end of the pad. [This control always dislikes the last two sheets of the pad and we had reached these at this point.]

I wonder if the boy knows [N. R.] anything . . . knows anything about a warmer [N. R.] warmer southern warmer state than this one—I mean geographically not netherly [delay in reading] netherly [so read but may be for 'materially,' but not corrected]<sup>287</sup>

You will get nervous prostration if you try to follow me.

(Yes I believe it.)

you will or I will. We too have nerve [delay in reading] over here. yes [to reading of 'nerve'] altho you might sometimes think that we had nothing but a bit of lead [read 'blue'] pencil . . . lead [read

<sup>287</sup> All that is said about Mr. T. by Jennie P. is perfectly characteristic. The sitter and his brother had gone South together with their father on a hunting trip.

'coal'] who said blue . . . lead . . . as the motive power [not read] as the motive power of our beings.

I wish you could see the group sitting and standing around here just this minute. I know you would laugh for [new pencil given] each one is in a tense state of interest and all difference of opinion is forgotten in the interest taken in my hieroglyphics. We are all clothed tho and in our right minds so far as I can discover [read 'answer'] discover. You pople [people] are the dead ones not us you are lost in the sound of your own machinery and do not hear [N. R.] half [when read hand pointed to 'hear' and I repeated 'half'] hear half we try to say— Get up out of the dust and noise and you will have no trouble in seeing and hearing us—

Now I guess I have given you enough to do . . . given . . . for awhile and Imperator and Rector who began in dignity have slipped aside only that I might change the atmosphere for your friend. He somehow likes the more normal [N. R.] more normal state of conversation [read 'consciousness'] conversation. he is not so high and mighty and can't walk . . . cannot walk on . . . walk . . . stilts all the time any better than . . . any better than I can.

I wanted to ask about another place much warmer country than this and if it were [read 'there'] a p. . were . . . familiar place to the boy or his father. Do you know about it—

(Can you name the country?)

It seems more southern than this and was a place or rather is a place of pleasant recollections [N. R.] recollections to both of them and there is an unusual [read 'musical' at first] unusual harmony of tastes existing between these two— They liked the same things almost always even to food [read 'foot'] food yes. He knows what I mean.

(Mr. T.: Yes.)

and always there is a sentiment of "My father and I like this [ " ] and it is so sweet to the father to have the boy keep that same sincere [N. R.] sincere thought of him. They liked out doors out of doors and walks. There is the merriest [N. R.] merriest twinkle [read 'wrinkle'] twinkle in the father's eye as he thinks of the past. It is so much to have such a family still loving [read 'living'] still loving him and so much for him to have such a father still conscious of that love. <sup>288</sup>

I must go now but I wou[ld] stay all day and write now for there . . . for there is an established line now and I hope it will help in the future.

<sup>288</sup> The sitter is very much like his father, according to the mother's statement. The reference to the likeness in taste for food is also correct, and it may be a reminiscence of the hunting trip which they took together and apparently mentioned above, because they all had hot cakes on the occasion, in which they displayed the same taste, as remarked.

What about a game they used to play— Out of doors with a ball—  
(Tell what it is.)

I don't know whether golf or tennis but something like it. J. P.  
[Pencil fell.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Hand thrust violently at me with hers in mine.] Who said base  
ball, anybody?

(Not that I know.)

[Pause.] Who is W? (You tell.) Do you know W?

(No.) [Sitter shook head.]

All right. Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

[Pause.] They worked an awful long time, didn't they?

(Yes.) Do you feel any better? (Yes.) [Pause.]

Well, I think that W is William but they call him Billy. It is more  
like Billy you know.

(No.) [Sitter shook head.]

Like Billy French, something like that.<sup>289</sup> [Pause.] [Sitter left.  
Medium rubbed eyes.] God it is an awful thing to be killed.  
[Awakened.]

#### Chapter XVIII, Series XIV, Feb. 23, 24, 25, 26, 1914

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mrs. T. February 23rd, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitter called.] Did you speak to me?

(No.)

[Sitter admitted. Long pause and reached for pencil.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

\* \* [scrawl as if trying to make 'I' or 'J' and pencil pulled  
down when hand relaxed and then struggle to write began. P. F. R.,

---

<sup>289</sup> The name "Billy French" is not intelligible to the sitter. It is possible that it is the same person alluded to earlier as "Willie," for that name comes in this connection again. Cf. Note 191. The father used to go with the sitter to games of baseball.

Sitter's latest note: "There was a boy about 18 years old we met on a train from Lausanne to Paris, named French, and maybe Billy. He couldn't *speak* French, though he had been to school for several years in Lausanne, and asked Mr. T—— to put him straight with the customs officers who were coming through the train. We didn't know him, though knew of his people, who were Americans."

pause and P. F. R. again.] [When writing began it was heavy and strained.]

I must come [P. F. R.]

(I understand. Keep calm.)

I am glad glad and so ha ... [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] happy to see my [pause] w ... [P. F. R.] [Pause.] dear W... [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it. We shall be patient. I understand some of the emotional difficulties of this situation.)

J J [P. F. R.] and I are going to make good.

(Yes I know it.)

if you do not get weary before we get through this labarynth of conditional salvation [Struggle to keep control.]

I think I am going to say much and get so many ...

[I noticed here that I had not placed article on table and hoping to help by putting it there I took it out of the valise and placed it. The hand paused while I did so and also sometime after.]

get so many definite messages back to my friends and all at once the power gives out and I am stalled for a time. I know I am alive I know I am conscious of all that is done by my wife and my family and friends. I know that there is constant contact with the world of affairs which I was not permitted to have a share in any longer and yet I find it very hard to tell any of the things that will prove it to you. I do tell and I do write but not half what I think. It gets lost in the air. It is like pressing your finger on a pastic [plastic and so read] substance and believing you have made an imprint and then finding that you did not press hard enough and when you press harder you find you have actually [read 'already' doubtfully] actually displaced the substance

But that has not much to do with this morning. I am as glad and buoyant as if this seeming separation had never cast a shadow over our lives for I begin to see the real definite [struggle, pause, and tapping pencil] and connected life which is left to us dear not quite the same as when we were able to talk everything over but we may yet accomplish that. It is no more improbable to me now than this would have been before and as long as you try to make it possible for me I will continue. [P. F. R.]

(Do you know by what means you are trying to communicate with her?)

Do I understand you. Am I not using a messenger [pause] in the form of writing and have I not tried to personally make myself a \* \*

[P. F. R. and attempt to erase something.] make myself known to her. You may not know this, but I do.

(Yes I know just what happens but we need to have it mentioned here to distinguish from things that might raise a doubt.)

Why doubt when I try so hard what else can it be who else could come to her and why let any notions of hallucinations . . .

(It is not the fear of hallucinations, but of alternative possibilities that need to be eliminated by cross reference here. If you can in one or a few words tell just what occurs. . . ) [Writing began.]

[P. F. R., struggle and Indian.] I know what you mean.

(All right. Go ahead.)

don't try to say it all—I [pause] am not quite so scientific as you are and when I try to make a sign or produce [produce] a \* \* ['n' in shape] manifestation I do not always plan it before and write it down at the time and refer to it when I come here for I [new pencil given] am more spontaneous about it but I will for your benefit seek to recall some particular instances [P. F. R. and refused, and hand reached and insisted on reaching for mine when I took hold of it. Then it jerked away passionately and pencil was given.]

Don't hold my hand.

(You put it out for me.)

no I did not. I am not here for a conflict but I am most anxious to say something which will forever settle this question of my proximity and alliance with her in all the affairs of life which have fallen on her shoulders by the sudden and somewhat awful [pause] break which came to me.

I have been at another place—city [read 'why' and pencil pointed till corrected.] and there returned in a different manner than this and I have made [distress] two other attempts to do something like this and I have tried in a personal way to do something like this but without the induced [N. R.] induced [N. R.] trance . . . in . . . [read] yes [to reading] and I have [pause and tapping pencil] written yes I have written it now. [Distress and struggle.] <sup>290</sup>

---

<sup>290</sup> J is the initial of John, the deceased husband of Mrs. T., and also the initial of the Jack that caused confusion before when Mr. T. was wanted. It is possible that the inclusion of another than himself was designed to clear up matters. But if so he did not get far with it.

[J. J. were the first and second initials of the other John's name. This may be regarded as a point in clarity.—G. O. T.]

<sup>291</sup> There is nothing in the allusion to having tried to communicate in another city that would identify the place. Nor did anything come in this effort that had any evidential or characteristic touch.

But there are intimations of the identity of Mr. T. in the allusion to the "awful

[Change of Control.]

Just a moment he will return again

(All right.)

Just a little too tense.

(I saw that.)

but he is all right as far as being ready to acquiesce [read 'conquer'] acquiesce in your plans.

It is the same gentleman who has been here before and he has made some plans about some future [N. R.] future. Perhaps you do not know who it is.

(No I do not know and it makes no difference to me, but it would be important to tell exactly what the plan is.)

[Pause.] Yes you do not recall the gentleman who came last week.

(Yes I do and he referred to a message saying that there should be no hesitation in taking the step. Now what step is that?)

[Pause.] are you asking me or do you wish to wait until he returns. He had in his plan something to say about a step which involves a change for a member of his family and that again involves changes for another but there is another matter of which he has not today spoken and may not for he is really quite [new pencil] overcome by he [read 'the'] presence of the lady whom he loves. I wonder if you have any [sigh] sort of idea of what he is going through this moment.

(What it is necessary to say and it makes no difference who says it. Tell the exact step he wants taken.)

[Pause.] You ignore the statement I made.

(All right. Say what you wish.)

I did.

(I do not know what he is going through this moment and would be glad to know.)<sup>292</sup>

[Pause, hand relaxed hold on pencil, struggle for control and reached for new pencil which was given.]

[Apparent Change of Control.]

C C r o s s [sigh] and [pause] settle. [P. F. R.]

break" which separated him and his wife. That is the only glimmer of evidence in the whole long passage.

[Nevertheless, it is to be noted that Vango in London, "another city" worked in a "different manner than this" and one other bit of automatic writing has been already noted as having some evidential value. (Cf Notes 169 and 170.—G. O. T.)

<sup>292</sup> What is said regarding the plan suggested gives no more than Rector and Imperator gave before and it is the same in pertinence, perhaps a little more definite. But it is curious that it should be taken for granted that I should know what was going on in his mind. The subconscious would know better than that.

(Stick to it and I shall be patient.)

[Long pause and tried to write and paused again.] B a b y  
[pause.]

(What does that mean?)

[Pause, threw pencil down and tore sheet off pad.] <sup>293</sup>

[Change of Control.]

[Three pencils rejected in Jennie P's manner.] Just a minute. I do not find [possibly 'want'] to make any suggestion but I think it best to do so for the spirit is getting [N. R.] \* \* ... getting discouraged. You ask so many questions and do not give the slightest help for a most trying time for him.

(You are all wrong in that. I am only trying to help the mind to stick to the point.)

Let him alone. He knows enough to stick to the point and if he does not he ought not to be here. I know what I am talking about and you do not.

(What comes on the paper does not show any connected point at all.)

You talk like an idiot.

(Yes, I know that and you write like an idiot.)

I stop right there. [read 'here'. Pencil fell.]

[Pause.] (Stop what, 'here'?) [No reply. Long pause.] <sup>294</sup>

[Subliminal.]

[Sighs and intervening pauses.] Do you know any one named Dan? Or [pause]

(Dan or?)

Daniel, sounds like Dan.

<sup>293</sup> The words "cross and settle" and "Baby" are abbreviations that perfectly summarize what was involved in the plan, about which I knew nothing and which was meant in the earlier allusions to "a coming event." It was the union of two families separated by the death of Mr. T., and it involved financial advantages and the desire for a child.

<sup>294</sup> Here Jennie P. again takes me to task for asking questions and disturbing the communicator. My uniform experience is that, unless I hold the communicator to the point, he does not make the incident complete that he starts to give. In perhaps hundreds of instances a relationship has been wrongly stated and would have remained so had I not kept the communicator to the point. The very method which Jennie P. defends tends of itself to let the mind go on with the mere chance that it will hit upon the crucial incident. Here the confusion of the communicator was great and the message without any external indications of a meaning. I knew that the communicator and the sitter had lost a child at its birth and without discriminating this from the other fact the allusion lost in force. But next day Jennie P. atoned beautifully for her action though without modifying her view of the necessary method. The sequel shows a change of method.



(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.] <sup>295</sup>

[Pause.] Do you know what hit me?

(I think Jennie P and I had a fight this time.)

Are you honest and true? (Yes.) You will have to get on your knee to her.

(No, I think not.)

Do you think she will? (No.) You will be too stiff necks.

(No, I think we are much alike and she thinks things are going all right when they are not going right on our side. They may be all right on her side. I do not know.)

Eh-heh. Well, I don't know why I should be kicked unless it is for the good of the cause. Wait a minute.

Do you know a man. I think he is probably 65 or 70 years old, but straight, strong, and fine looking, blue eyes and gray hair, a little bald on the top of his head and very clean cut and he seems more like a military man, as if you call him Colonel. It's a title, I think it is just Colonel and he is one of this ... [distress] I am not sure whether it is just an honorable or honor title or whether it really came from service, but it seems both as if he had been in the service and sort of shows military bearing. Is he connected with the spirit communicating about that?

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.]

Well, he has a splendid influence, great strength. Perhaps he is arbitrary but only when something is at stake. He feels it is such a pleasure having him here. That spirit takes hold to help out in some things. I guess you won't have much more trouble really. <sup>296</sup>

(I know.)

You don't mind my telling something else? (No.) I see something like mountains, mountainous country. It is beautiful, wonderful scenery. I think in America. I don't think it is very far. I think it is in New York or some place on the Eastern Coast. A place where he used to go and love the wonderful place. It is like going on a little expedition [pause] trip is what I want to say.

Right there I hear a name like Max, Max. Possibly it is Mac and they are making it possessive. It sounds like Max [possibly 'Mac's'] See if you know.

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.]

[Pause.] And then H-E-L-E-N [spelled] That is something alone

---

<sup>295</sup> Daniel is the name of a friend of Mr. T.

<sup>296</sup> The description here of a man having a military bearing and called "Colonel" is an accurate one of a Mr. C., an intimate friend of Mr. T. He was called "Colonel."

you know. H-E-L-E-N [spelled] I don't know whether there is more to it or not, Helen or Eleanor. It seems as if I would like to put something else to it. I got to go.

(All right.)

Do you know who Helen is? <sup>297</sup>

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.]

[Pause.] I want to tell something more. (Yes.) It is something not little, but rather important.

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.]

She has been worrying whether she should, not would, but should do something with some property.

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.]

Go ahead. That is better. It will help her. Afterward it should turn out well and to her advantage. That is what will do something. She feels a sentiment about it and wants to keep it but it feels like an extravagance. Better dispose of it and not keep spending money on it. You know what I mean.

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.]

Is that right?

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.] <sup>298</sup>

You feel better, don't you?

(Yes.)

[Pause.] I can hold your hand just the same if you and Jennie P did fight.

(Yes, all right.)

[Pause.] Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

[Pause and sitter rose to leave.] Just before she goes ask her if she knows Billy?

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.] <sup>299</sup>

[Sitter left, pause and suddenly awakened.]

<sup>297</sup> The man described as "Colonel" had just such a country place surrounded by mountains. It was on the "eastern coast," but not in New York. It was farther east. The meaning of Max or Mac is not certain, but it is relevant. Eleanor, not Helen, is the name of the daughter of the Daniel mentioned above.

<sup>298</sup> The reference to the country place and advice regarding its sale are very pertinent. It is a summer home of the Daniel mentioned, he being dead, and it is now of no use to the family and sentimental reasons induced them to hold on to it. But it is an unnecessary expense.

<sup>299</sup> The "Billy" is recognizable as the name of a cousin. It is evidently the same person as the "Billy French." Cf. Notes 191 and 289. The sitter's statements about it do not agree.

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mrs. T. February 24th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Article placed. Sitter admitted. Pause and sigh. Long pause, and hand reached for pencil after manner of Jennie P.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

G ... [pencil rejected and another given.] Good morning Hurricane.

(Good morning, Jennie P.)

I want to come first that you may have no misunderstanding about [N. R.] my ... about my attitude yesterday. I was more troubled than you can know for the spirit had been making [N. R.] desperate ... making desperate efforts to overcome [written scrawly and read 'come' doubtfully] overcome his own [N. R.] own weakness. that does not mean weakness in the sense in which you understand it but he was trying to forget what you wanted [N. R.] wanted so that his mind would act more naturally [N. R.] naturally and every [N. R.] time ... every [N. R.] each and ... every time you pinned [read 'hummed' doubtfully] him ... pin.. [read] down to the point in question and it kept him from that freedom which would eventually produce the result we [N. R.] we *all* [underscored three times.] wished [read 'worked' and pencil tapped till corrected.] to obtain [N. R.] to obtain.

It is the same principle as when one tries to recall a name when it seems to be right on the tip of the tongue and I thought if we let it alone it would fall out of itself. I have to call names when I see any one acting against their own ... their own best result and it is the only way I get hold [N. R.] hold but I don't think you wore [N. R.] were any more of an idiot yesterday than you [N. R.] you have been a thousand times before now put [read as given, thinking 'now' ended sentence.] Now... [read 'how'] before, [Period inserted emphatically] now put that in your pipe and smoke it.

(May I say something?)

Yes indeed.

(I want to explain just how things are on this side. I have always found that unless I try to hold the spirit to the point I do not get anything and no doubt I sometimes mistake the situation and that is the only reason I ever interfere with it. Yesterday we did not get one iota of evidence that the husband of the sitter was present until the subliminal came, and then the evidence there was the mention of relatives and friends. I always try not to disturb the run of things and as the message was so awfully important for the lady present I wanted it

clear so that she would make no mistake about the plan and wishes of the spirit.)

I understand and did understand yesterday and so did the spirit who was trying to get himself into some state of mind which would reflect [N. R.] in [so written and read] reflect on the writing. .

In the first place he knew who was coming and was like a boy in his enthusiasm and much that is of great importance to her and especially what shall be done and his desire in connection [read 'communication' and pencil tapped, when I read 'connection'] with it is not so strong an influence on him as you might think.

It is one of the strange things in a cause [so read] case like this that the one most interested often seems to care less and to leave the decisions in the hands of the loved and trusted who are on earth.

but I am not going to write for him. I wish him to have his experience here for it will help him in his further work with her and with his darlings. He is an active influence and will always find some way to impress his care for them.

I go now but I did not like that phrase [read 'phase'] phrase I've had a fight with Jennie P. for we have only one purpose and that is to get the truth and help from spirit spheres to you who too often work in darkness and alone. Your faithful Whirlwind.

(Thank you.) [I broke down sobbing.]<sup>300</sup>

[Change of Control.]

[Pause.] I am at the task once more and hope I may get some of the messages through which I have in my heart for you dear one. I do not find it at all complicated to see you and to get into your surroundings but I make more blunders [read 'blindness' and groan.] blunders trying to do all that I think I ought to be quite able to do.

It is not because of the shock I had the effect of that is not with me now but I think it was because I felt so many conflicting emotions when I tried to recall what you wished me to write about. I am interested in every step you take and every move you make for the life of my wife [written 'fwife'] is the one precious gift to me now as in the past and the responsibilities of re-establishing yourselves is quite too much for you alone and if I only feebly help it is better than no help at all.

<sup>300</sup> This explanation of Jennie P. will have to pass for what it is worth. It takes no account of the fact that the method on which she insists results only in long rambling talks which start anywhere and lead nowhere, though sometimes having a lucky outcome, but too often showing matter which disappoints sitter and scientific reader alike. One has to wonder why it involves more energy to get one word through than it does to write ten or twelve pages which have no value, while the single word would mean everything.

I have been trying and made some sign to you in another place. I tried to speak to you not write like this. there was an effort to write but it was for you for you. [P. F. R.] H [pause] ave you not received the message Jack.

(We got the name Jack in connection with you but your wife said it was wrong and apparently it had the effect of bringing another person to spoil the message.)

That is just why I refer to it now to tell you that I was at that time trying to write something especially good for you. That was when you were away and I was trying by myself.<sup>301</sup>

Do you know about a conversati... [pencil ran off page. Read 'conversation'] with a man who had some of our business to look after and who has been very punctilious about everything and it is not fully settled yet (Yes, go ahead.) [Sitter nodded assent.] and it is a matter of some . . . . [pause: my mind had wandered back to Jennie P.'s message.] in a minute some interest to me because of a future which may make better conditions for you financially. I am not at all fearful about the final outcome and settlement and I know that the plans you are now making may be carried out without any further delay or uncertainty on your part. all the break and change had to come but now there will be clearer sailing.

I want to write something about the borys I mean the boys.

(Yes, will it interfere with what you wish to say if I ask a question?)

go on please it may help me.

(I understand that the change refers to matrimony. Is that right?)

Yes.

(Well, is it perfectly safe for the wife to assume motherhood?)

It is best so and will bring the peace which is to be the crown after sorrow. I am only earnest for the best to come to all to all. It will in no way lessen my devotion understand do you understand.

(Mrs. T.: Yes, I do, my dearest love.)

It is one of those things that a spirit comprehends the need of. I do not need to say that the loneliness and heartache has brought to your life a cup of joy not consolation only and I give assurance of more and more peace to all. Mine always to watch over and to serve and to bring gladness just as I have tried in this instance to do.

<sup>301</sup> There is no recognizable meaning in the allusion to trying to make a sign at another place. The only place that the name "Jack" came was here, and it was wrong, as explained. But it is not made any clearer here. Instead of going on with the matter and giving the evidence he breaks off on another subject, verifying what I have just said about the rambling method of Jennie P.

I love you and your happiness better than all else. I shall be happy too—

(If you are through with that you can take up what you wanted to say about the boys.)

Yes my boys you know they are good boys full of life and will be cared for in the right way after the work education is completed.

(We understand.)

and I will try and bring the best guides from this life to them—  
[P. F. R.]<sup>302</sup> I want to speak of some other friends a lady Q Q [read 'I,' 'I'] [both times scrawl and might be attempt at a capital letter Q or S.] my relative who has some notions about you dear but don't care you know you and I always had our little laugh about her [Sitter nodded and smiled.] (Good.) (Mrs. T.: Yes, dear.) and it is of no consequence what she says ud [?] underst... [pencil fell. Hand reached for mine. Indian and long pause.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sigh and pause.] Do you know Carrie? (Mrs. T.: I can't think of it.) I think she is in heaven. [Pause.] Goodbye. (Goodbye.) Tomorrow? (Yes. And remember that I shall stay for the next day.) Yes. [pause] Goodbye. (Goodbye.) [Sitter left. Pause, cough and awakened immediately.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mrs. T. February 25th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[Mrs. C. told me that the sitter the day before, after the sitting, had left her handkerchief in the parlor with her name on it and the maid found it and tho she got a glimpse of the name did not remember it, but did not tell it to Mrs. C.] [Article placed on table in normal state, but covered.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitter admitted. Pause and sigh. Long pause.] How wonderful. [Long pause.] How lovely the Bay looks. [Long pause.] Hm. [A half sigh and half groan, but not distress. Pause and reached for pencil.]

---

<sup>302</sup> I here allowed the communicator to follow the method insisted on by Jennie P. and absolutely nothing came of an evidential character. Even though I actually suggested the subject on which she wanted advice and if the subliminal knew what Rector and Imperator said, it should have reproduced it. But nothing of the sort was done, so that, whatever we may think of it, the subliminal is not very resourceful. But the method of letting the communicator ramble without holding him to the topic did not fulfil the claims made by Jennie P.

*[Automatic Writing.]*

[Writing began very slow and continued so for a long time.]  
manifestations are at last to be judged by the sum of strength given the arm of Truth and Happiness.

I wish to add to the joy of my child and casting away the veil of sorrow allow the light of heavenly love to fall upon her face. I am not the father but one removed a little from him a grandmother of my little girl who needs the woman's touch in this work of unfoldment. I am more familiar with the work than some of the dearer [read 'lesser'] ones ... dearer ... for I have been over here a long time and have from the first desired to give the truth about the return of the dead. I have watched the work done here until I could wait no longer to tell you of the few things I have on my mind.

There is with me a lady of much spirit and earnestness who seeks to give you assurance of her help and attendance on the new life which has already opened its doors to you. She is not old nor ill [?] nor fearful of anything which is to be undertaken and she and your dear one are in a constant and [pause and Indian] definite plan to bring out of all this uncertainty and doubt a clear thought for you and yours and for him and for his who will look to you for love and care.

I am more earnest to have you keep a beautiful mediumship which is quite possible for you after you have arrived at some definite situation ['situation' and not read] situation for I see in that a foundation for most perfect and unbounded [N. R.] unbounded happiness for you are so dependent on the proximity of your loved ones that to know of the never failing presence will be enough.

I feel as if I were writing out a speech I had learned to give you and it is almost as if I had for I did not want to leave much for chance inspiration as it so soon vanishes. I have watched your husband too many times.

I think you may not be surprised to have me show an interest here when you remember my various activities but of course I did not have active interest in this particular field [N. R. at first and then later as 'friend' for trial] of world for ... field of work. I was far [read 'for'] far too narrow to comprehend its use [read 'rise' and at once corrected] yes use. I am M [groan] M \* \* M [P. F. R. Pause.] M other of \* \* [P. F. R.]

Do you remember long ago I came here.

(There has been no evidence yet who is here.)

Did I not say I was mother of the father of the little girl here—

(Yes, but that proves nothing.)

[Pause.] I do not understand.

(I quite understand that and believe you implicitly. But unfortunately I have to convince a hard unbelieving world and I know their troubles, so that I am sorry that I have to *appear* doubtful when I am not so personally. My friend Hodgson on that side understands me perfectly and I hope you will talk it over with him.)

Yes I see the difficulty. I think I should have sent in my card first. (I understand.)

That would have been the proper time for it becomes awkward now but I was more intent [N. R.] to set . . . intent . . . her mind at rest about some doubtful problems for in talking with him I saw that she would wonder if in the goodness of his heart and his desire to give her happiness if he had not been too ready to let her have her own way and if he quite fully understood the situation she found herself in and so I said I will communicate if I can. That is how it happened.<sup>303</sup>

I have with me G— [pause] G [long pause.] just a moment George. do you know to whom I refer.

(Mrs. T.: Friend.) [Said in very low whisper.] (It is not clear yet.)

not an old man but one who was not long ill and who came much later than I— and I want to write about Francis. [Pause.]

(Not recognized.) [Sitter shook head.]

Frances [sigh]. It is a lady not a man and one in our family.

(Not recognized.) [Sitter shook head.]<sup>304</sup>

[Pause.] Shall I keep on or let him come.

(You should decide that on your side. I shall only say that it is now useless for him to try to give his name because the friend present happened to leave a handkerchief in the room with her name on it, but she would be glad if he would come and say something about two other members of the children.)

I will only leave my assurance of interest and constant love. (Thank you.) Grandma \* \* [resembles imperfect 'M' but not read] M no not M. Grandma B. [Pause.] \* \* [possible attempt at either 'B,' 'R' or 'K,' tho only as retrospectively read] K [pause] no not M nor K [read 'R' and erased.] Grandma \* \* [scrawls, one like 'J'] \* \* [possible attempt at 'EJ'] Grandma h [?] I'll get it in

<sup>303</sup> I again let the communicator alone and the same rambling course was taken as before and ended in nothing that was evidential. Mr. T.'s mother is still living, so that the claim of mother, as it appears before correction, is false. The correction that it was the sitter's grandmother implies a truth, but it is not evidential under the circumstances. Almost anyone's grandmother is dead, at least of persons old enough to take sittings. I deliberately said what I did with the hope that Jennie P. would get it.

<sup>304</sup> George and Frances are cousins of the communicator.



a moment I think. Grandma S [struggle and pressure on pad.] [Pause.] \* \* [possibly attempt at 'A'] [Long pause.] d [Pause and P. F. R.]<sup>305</sup>

[Change of Control.]

I am geting [getting] interested now. I would like to see her do it. She may find it easier than I do. if she does it will make me laugh. I have been here watching her and wondering how long she would hold on. I tried so long to get my own and now you tell me it is no use. I did not know the handkerchief was left.<sup>306</sup>

(Had you a pet name your wife called you? If so, that will do.)

Yes I know but I am not silly enough to try and get the names after all the flunks [N. R.] I have . . . flunks I have already made. I know I don't seem to be a very good communicator and I don't know what the matter is but I know I am here and I also know that I have been with her and that I have tried to do some things for the boys also and I want them to have the help which I can give—I see no more trouble dearest [N. R.] dearest [N. R.] D e a r e s t . . . for you I mean no serious trouble like this which came with my accident. You know my boy Hyslop don't [N. R.] you . . . don't you.

(Yes, I do.)

He is a good boy and he will go on with this study and work and will be a help to you Mamm . . . [read 'Mamma' by me, but 'Marion' by sitter, and possibly intended for this.] That is a word she wanted to hear.

(Yes, I understand.)

and it is as good to me as if I had said it earlier and there is another have I not written about him too—

(Who is it?)

The other boy— (Yes.) Younger boy you know.

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.]

and he is somewhat of a rogue. I mean full of life and fun all right though [delay in reading] though [read 'though' and 'through'] the— he is. do not worry about him either and do you know about E— yes E.

(Not recognized.) [Sitter shook head.]

<sup>305</sup> The B in reference to Grandmother is not intelligible, nor is S and the apparent "Sad[ie]."

<sup>306</sup> The reader should refer to the note at the beginning of the sitting where I explained that the sitter, the day before, had dropped her handkerchief on the floor in the parlor with her name on it. On any theory of fraud or subliminal automatism I should have gotten the name without difficulty and not a statement of ignorance, unless you prefer to hold that the subliminal would inhibit it intentionally. But this is to abandon the conditions for automatism which are apparent.

Just a minute. E is some one I wanted to speak of in connection with the boy—

(Not yet recognized.) [Sitter shook head.]

It is a boy's name. E d . . . [pause] E d . . . [pause and Indian and scrawl] I just begin to think well when it is time to go— but I stay a little while longer may I not.<sup>307</sup>

(And say what you can about the other two.)

The other children you mean. (Yes.) I know I ought to refer to them and I have just the same love and interest of course but they seem to be so close to Mamma's heart and life that I hardly need have a care. That is not quite what I mean but the boys might give me a little more concern since their [N. R.] their temptations [N. R.] chances of t . . . temptations might be greater. Do you understand.<sup>308</sup>

(Mrs. T.: Yes, dearest, I do.)

But I am none [read 'more' and pencil pointed till corrected] the less with them and as you will know am none the less eager to have them have all my loving [read 'long' and pencil pointed till corrected] care [pause and tapping pencil] govern them—

One is so sensitive so supersensitive sometimes not the little one but the other you know.

(Mrs. T.: Yes, dear.)

and she is so psychic. Those eyes seem to see so much. It is quite possible that I can draw near enough to give her a little help in that sensitive state. I know how different they are and yet how a like in a few things. I [pause and groan.] P [Indian] P [pause and P. F. R.] P e g . . . [purposely 'eg' not read tho I knew them correct. Pause.] P e g ['eg' not read for reason] P e . . . [distress.] P a u . . . ['u' made as 'i' as usual but not read purposely.] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

I know what I want to write. A name of one of my darlings.

(Yes.)

P a u . . . \* \* \* ['I' or 'P'] There is a P [resembles 'C' but mode of making it showed intention] and an M and a D ['D' erased.] I [Indian and P. F. R.] P a u l . . . [written quickly and 'ul' not read at time.]

(Stick to that.)

<sup>307</sup> The boy's name is Frederick, and he is called Ted, not Fred. It is possible that "Ed" was an attempt at "Fred" or "Ted." He is the younger. I knew both, but Ted was present at the sittings the week before.

Marian is correct. Do not know whether it or its initial only was on handkerchief.—G. O. T.

<sup>308</sup> This expresses exactly the feeling of the sitter, who felt quite competent to manage the girls.

P e g \* \* [scrawl like top part of 'g'] [pause] \* \* ['e' with scrawl or 'ter']

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] P a e \* \* [read 'i' but may be for 'l']

(Stick to it.)

She knows whom I mean.

(Yes and so do I but want it to get on paper.)

l [N. R.] not Paul P a ... [Indian.] P a u ... [made like 'i' and not read] P a u l i n ... [P. F. R.] Polly.

(Mrs. T.: Darling man.)

P a u l i n e.

(Mrs. T.: Good, splendid.)

So slow I am ashamed but I suppose I might learn to get as good things as R. H. did.

(Yes, capital.)<sup>309</sup>

He was nothing to brag about was he.

(I thought him good, but most people did not. I know the difficulties and others have no mercy on spirits.)

I only take his own estimate of his work but he bids me be cheerful and so I am. I have another thing I want [N. R.] I want to say.

it is about a letter F yes. It is a name I want to write.

(All right.)

F F l o r a [pause] (Flora?) F l o r e n c e.

(Yes, go ahead.) [Sitter nodded head.]

It is a suggestive name to us— and is not only a person but Florentine as [read 'is'] well... as well. I wish to write of— I can't [read 'and'] say what I wish but it is a reference to some place which was like another place to us. [Pause.] You don't know what I mean.

(Mrs. T.: Not exactly, dear.)

Our house which suggested Italy. Wait a minute we had a wonderful view we [N. R.] loved [N. R.] loved ... we ... which was open [N. R.] open fine wonderful beauty suggesting days of Florence. now you know. Summer home there air [so read] art [read 'and'] view was ['was' erased] art [superposed on 'was' and not read] surroundings were as fine as Italian land. I loved it. You loved it too and I have my home in spirit nearer [read 'forever' doubtfully] nearer [read 'newer'] nearer like that than like city where we lived. Understand.

<sup>309</sup> Peg and Polly are the pet names for the two girls. Pauline is the real name of the one called Polly, and I did not know it at the time. I knew the real name for which Peg was the pet name. It is interesting to remark the phonetics in the mistake of Paul for Polly.

(Mrs. T.: Perfectly.)<sup>310</sup>

More dream like and when you think to me think of me in a surrounding like that yes [to reading of 'surrounding']

I bring you the violets you love and the [read 'we'] the roses. Oh now [so written and read, but pencil pointed till read 'how'] I would surround you with those soft pink roses. You know. Were the marsh [pause] neil

(Yes, that is right.) [Sitter nodded head.]<sup>311</sup>

I wanted to write dear for they are ours soft as a rose leaf your cheek . . . your [Not read first time] cheek is to me. I touch [N. R.] it as . . . as I touch it gently [written 'gentle' and so read when 'y' was added.] as I would if you were near me here.

Say Hyslop it rather spoils [N. R.] my . . . spoils my sentiment to have you read it.

(I share it most fully, as you may know, so go ahead.)

You are kind but I still feel that you are in my way. I will trust to my darling to understand that I am her lover husband and husband lover and the sweet words Papa knows \* \* \* \* [apparently 'help me,' and pencil fell.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Indian, pause, Indian and pause.] Oh I got to come. Do you know a Madge or [pause] Marguerite. [Possibly 'Margaret']

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.]

Did you ever call her a shorter name, Margie, Margery, not Maggie. It is a kind of a little cunning name. It just seems to come falling down on my head as if some one wanted to get it through.

(Yes.)

I get Margie. [Long pause.] It don't begin with M does it?

(No.) [Sitter shook head.]

It is from that name, but it is another. It isn't Peggie is it?

(Yes.)

Is it little Peggie? (Yes.)<sup>312</sup> Well please don't give me credit for it. It was there ready to come through and I just happened to catch it. There is lots of joy for you little lady. Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

[Pause and a Starlight laugh.] Do you know anything about a

<sup>310</sup> Mr. T. very much liked the copper and glass ornamentation on the lamp or chandelier in his house. It was Florentine and hence the reference to Florence and Italy.

<sup>311</sup> Violets and Maréchal Neil roses are Mrs. T.'s favorites.

<sup>312</sup> Margaret is the name for which Peg or Peggie is the pet name of the older daughter. The reader will note that both are given here.

small bed. It looks like . . . I see two right side by side, like two, not cribs. They are real beds but small size right side by side. [Pause and another laugh.] It is almost like a nursery, as if I was going into a nursery and looking at some children. They are in bed side by side. You know what I mean.

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.]

Well, dearest little things. Well, it is like a little prayer I hear, as tho a prayer for the father who wasn't there, but praying for him just the same.

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.]

Never fail to say "God bless father" just the same as if he was here. Isn't that lovely. Goodbye.<sup>313</sup>

(Goodbye.)

Do you feel better?

(Yes.)

Is there any one begins with N? Nathan. It seems more like a firm name, like Nathan and Co.

(Mrs. T.: I can't think.)

I don't know whether it is a broker or banker. It seems big business people and sounds like Nathan. [Pause.] I don't think it is anybody here. It seems to be in New York. I thought perhaps you knew it.<sup>314</sup>

[Pause and sitter left. Mrs. C. rubbed face and awakened at once.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

February 26th, 1914. 9.30 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Quickly started into trance. Long pause, Indian and movements of body as if to secure more easy position, pause and repetition of movements, and long pause when hand reached for pencil.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

I am glad to be here. I am R. H.

(I thought so.)

and have been thinking over this matter for sometime. There are a number of reasons and combinations of reasons which make the adjustment of the situation more or less complex but I think we can

<sup>313</sup> This is an interesting incident. "Every night," writes Mrs. T., "I hear the children's prayers in their two beds, as described, exactly, in the nursery and say especially the Gladstone prayer."

<sup>314</sup> The name Nathan has no meaning to Mrs. T. Nor does the reference to a "banker" or "broker."

arrange to go on with the work. This [written 'ths' and not read] This would be most desirable in most ways for the effect on the public and our friends it would be better to have no break. It would also be better for us but for you personally I think and indeed [read 'intent' doubtfully] indeed we all think a respite a sort of furlough will do you good.

(Yes, if the work continues, will it be all right to have my Secretary do it?)

Have you thought of the lady over here who has done work for us at times.

(No, because I intended the automatic writing, as she had only the Sunbeam work and would not know how to manage this.)

She was with our Ohio friend and took the series and was excellent help.

(All right. I had not thought of it, but shall look it up.)

It would be less of a break on your side of the work for you need the Secretary at her post.

(Yes, that is just why I wondered whether it should go on at all. I shall see if I can arrange as you suggest.)

It would be quite agreeable to us and I believe will be the best solution of the difficulty for you must not be released from one task only to be overwhelmed at another point—<sup>315</sup>

(If I find it necessary to come on for two or three weeks for a certain very important case, would that be all right?)

Yes and at any time you might find it well to come over for a look at the work but let the lady do the hard part of it even if she sat in the hall to take it as you read it.

(I understand.)

You have been overworked and we have known it and tried to keep [keep] less of the subliminal and a short sitting to help but it is well enough to have help now and remember that we will do everything on this side to keep [keep] the equation [read 'equilibrium' first tho not thinking it this.] yes [to reading]

I have been most interested in the work of this season. It has been of a different type but we see so many many things to be done that the same old enthusiasm fires us and we may work you too hard. It is not our intent. Imperator is going to take you in charge and you won't

---

<sup>315</sup> It is most interesting to remark the way my own plan already arranged with my secretary, though I had my doubts, is here upset and one not thought of by me is suggested. Mrs. Chenoweth was quite agreed in her normal state upon the plan I had in mind. It was a better proposition than mine to have it as here suggested and it is one that Mrs. Chenoweth had not suggested in her normal state in our talk about it. Mrs. Chenoweth knew normally about the Ohio case.

know yourself in two weeks. You will be eager to return to the scene of battle.

One [N. R.] of the . . . One . . . things that has given me much concern is the unprotected state of your work. I have a fear [read 'fair'] of . . . horror . . . some one getting here that ought not to come and I know how easy it is to be deceived and think some fine [read 'one'] fine helper is at hand when it may be an enemy from our contending forces—

(I understand. I have always felt that too.)

That is one of the reasons that I do not want to keep the way open for other sitters while you are resting.

(Had I better see that old sitters come rather than new ones?)

You mean with the automatic. (Yes.) That will make no difference. It is quite safe when it is with a reporter.

(All right. I understand.)

But what I fear is the independence which the light has and you know how I always believed our safety in the Piper case was in tying up the territory.

(Yes, that is right.)

It is not easy to make the average person understand what a few of us know and the way the work was managed after I left is a fair indication of the common sense of the usual operator—

(Yes, right.)<sup>316</sup>

It is a heart to [heart] [spoken myself without thinking when reading] message I am giving you for I have the future of this work so deep in my breast.

(Yes, I know, Hodgson.) [Sobs by myself.]

I always tried to look out for the future. (Yes.) I think we will pull every thing out all right.

Don't feel that you are alone. You have a host of royal good friends [on] both sides working like trojans [Trojans] to bring the whole work to its highest. We do not want you here yet. You must stay awhile longer and while all these plans may work as if we [read 'the'] were . . . we . . . planning to run our ship without a captain I tell [read 'let'] you . . . tell . . . now we have no such scheme in our heads. Our scheme is to get you back as soon as possible.

---

<sup>316</sup> The solicitude for the protection of the medium is perfectly characteristic of Dr. Hodgson. He had been especially careful to keep undesirable persons away from Mrs. Piper, and Mrs. Chenoweth knew nothing about this, unless she conjectured it. The characterization of Mrs. Chenoweth as "independent" is perfectly correct and it is not like her to put the situation as it is done. Her subconsciousness need have no fear, but admitting her independence and urging that it be curbed is a peculiar attitude to take for a subliminal.

Get your nose out of the typewriter for fifteen minutes and you can breathe better and your blood will begin to circulate like a white man—

(All right. Thanks.)<sup>317</sup>

I must not keep you but I have come with all the greetings of the united groups and we see no break no serious inconvenience [N. R.] inconvenience even [N. R.] even— Just have some one take your place for awhile and then don't work so hard again [N. R.] again.

(I understand. The lady here yesterday is not yet sure of what her husband wants and wanted me to ascertain further, if I could, so as to make it perfectly clear.)

You refer to her plan for a change in her living [N. R.] life.

(Yes, she prefers things to stay as they are, but will unhesitatingly do what she is sure he desires or planned for her, and she will not do it unless he does desire it with all his heart.)

I will talk with him about it and report to you. I know that he had a feeling that perhaps she would be better cared for if she married and gave to the children a father, but it was entirely for her own peace and protection and perhaps if he understands that her preference is to remain as she is it will help him to state the exact [N. R.] feeling . . . exact feeling.

(I understand.)

it is hard for a man to insist that a woman remain without what he considers a protecting arm and he felt that perhaps later she would reach [N. R.] for . . . reach . . . just this sort of a helpful companionship and it might be too late to get it. Do you understand. For my part I would not accept the association of a woman's life if her heart was with his spirit.

(I understand perfectly.)

It is rather hard to tell her exactly what to do and he [read 'we' without any real excuse] he tried to escape but it looks as if she had kept her hold on him and I will get to the solution.

She is certainly a beautiful woman with courage to devote her life to *their* [underscored] darlings. I shall be happy to undertake the mission and will report to you next Monday.

(All right. Thank you.)

[*Subliminal.*]

[Pause, Indian, pause.] Aren't they lovely spirits. Don't you yank me so quickly back. [Pause, sigh and awakened.]

<sup>317</sup> All this is also characteristic. I have been too closely confined to the typewriter, but Mrs. Chenoweth knew nothing about it, save as she might have guessed it.



[Further matter on this case was published in March, 1920, *Journal A. S. P. R.*, pp. 119-139. Sittings omitted from this series, therefore. Sittings of March 23, 24 and 25, 1914, appeared in *Journal A. S. P. R.*, January, 1920, pp. 9-40.]

### Chapter XIX, Series XV, Mar. 30, 31, Apr. 1, 8, 1914

Mrs. C. Mr. See [pseudonym]. March 30, 1914. 10 o'clock A. M.  
[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitter called and entered room and put envelope on stand near pad.]

It takes longer to get away sometimes than it does others, doesn't it?

(The stenographer:—Yes; why is it, I wonder?)

I think it is the holding of the influence—wait a minute—I will tell you in a minute. The people—the spirit people come in and are so anxious to communicate right off, their anxiety holds me back so I can't go away and let them. I suppose I get interested in them, don't you?

(Perhaps so.)

Do I make it plain?

(Yes.)

I am going now all right.

(You will come back by and bye, won't you?)

Oh, yes, if I didn't, why I'd die. That is all dying is. I wonder if I got over and couldn't get back if some other spirit could stay and keep the body alive, just transfer a spirit. Wouldn't that be funny?

(Yes; do you suppose they ever do that?)

I don't see why not. If a spirit could come for a little while, and write, I don't see why it couldn't settle itself down in the body and stay if I didn't come back to crowd it out. Of course I come back and demand my own place after awhile. There are a good many things to learn.<sup>318</sup> I see a man named Charles [pause] W [whispered]

A R R [speaks] E N

(What does he want, I wonder.)

I don't know.

<sup>318</sup> This is part of the series arranged for during my absence and the stenographer who took them was not familiar with all the little incidents which I was in the habit of recording. Both in this subliminal stage and in the automatic trance she omitted much that I should have noted, though after the long series of records in the past this omission will be a useful thing to mark, as it best represents the continuity of psychological action in spite of pauses and interruptions.

[Pause and hand reached for pencil.] <sup>319</sup>

[*Automatic Writing.*]

M My boy [N. R.] is here I will try [dropped pencil] to come to you and [pause, Indian] I will try and do what I can to make a statement of some value [N. R.] here It is not strange to me to come but this way of communicating is new and I do not know where to begin I have so much to say so much to say and so many friends to speak for I am not alone There are four of us here today four in the family and some guides and helpers but I am so [marks on paper] f

(Stenographer:—What are you trying to write?)

father and [dropped pencil] [pause]

(Yes.)

I am here [Indian] father and I are here you know my father [dropped pencil—pause]

(Yes.)

not your father but his and mine

(Stenographer:—Do you mean the sitter's father?)

and mine [A letter was here written—either J or F; dropped pencil]. <sup>320</sup>

[Writing changed]

Good morning

(Stenographer: Good morning.)

I am J. P. and I want to help if I can It is not always easy for a new group to begin for the instruction has to be partially [N. R.] objective [N. R.] One [N. R.] can never tell exactly what to do and the effort must be made with [N. R.] the real [N. R.] condition and not with a merely supposed case so there is always more or less difficulty [Indian] stumbling over the impedimenta [N. R.] I tried [N. R.] to be very scientific [N. R.] and use a term [N. R.] which sounded right [N. R.] Impedimenta

(Yes.)

It was all lost on you I want to speak for one of the group coming with [N. R.] the friend It is a man [N. R.] quite past [N. R.] the middle life with grey hair and blue eyes and a short grey beard and a very gentle way [Indian] and rather calm manner He is a relative and is quite eager [N. R.] to get a message through to the friend present He is accompanied by a younger man who has been over here for a long time and by a lady who is most active and very much inclined

<sup>319</sup> The name Charles Warren is not recognized by the sitter. Nor do I know anyone to whom it would apply.

<sup>320</sup> The sitter's father had died recently and it was from him that the sitter wanted communications. He does not recognize any meaning in the letter J.

[N. R.] to take a hand in this matter I do not know whether the [N. R.] older man is a father to the friend or to the lady but he is one or the other I take the lady to be a mother to the man here Is the mother over here

(The sitter: Yes. Do you want me to answer it?)<sup>321</sup>

She is most active always was active and alert about whatever interested her and this morning she is fully [N. R.] alive to the opportunity of the occasion and is, to glad to be here with [N. R.] the boy—to her he is a boy so dear [N. R.] so beloved and she understands him as perhaps no other person does She certainly came over here before she ought that [N. R.] is [N. R.] from a human standpoint but it is one of the sweet things about such a passing it gives an [changed pencils] added impetus to return to the ones left. She must have suffered somewhat for there is a sense of relief at the time of passing but only because of the pain and worn [N. R.] physical condition She is a woman of higher [N. R.] ideals [N. R.] and a boundless [N. R.] faith [N. R.] very pretty to look at because of her bright and animated face I am sure you will understand all this but if I tell you that she has planned [N. R.] at other times to come and has done so I wonder if you will also understand that

(Yes.)

It is one [N. R.] of the joys of her present life to make a connection with those in the earth life She will never keep still but will [Indian] constantly exercise her rights of motherhood and protection [N. R.] and guidance<sup>322</sup> She will write herself after a little but I want to write a little more for her for there is a young girl over here in [N. R.] that group which comes here today I also want to say that [Indian] the friend is very sensitive and responsive to the spirit influence and that his work is to be [N. R.] aided [N. R.] by the inflowing of the [N. R.] power of the spirit-power It has been in the past and will be in the future There is a man here [N. R.] by the name of Henry Do you know him Henry

(May I ask a question: ask if Henry is his first name.)

No I think not It [N. R.] seems to be a last name and he seems to be much interested in this experiment This [N. R.] man puts on [N. R.] glasses as if he were in the habit of putting them on when he attempted to read anything and as I wrote about him he placed them on his nose and looked over my shoulder in a [Indian] very quizzical

<sup>321</sup> The man described is recognized from the description as the sitter's grandfather on his mother's side. She, also, is dead. The younger man mentioned might be either of two persons who would be expected to be with the mother.

<sup>322</sup> The sitter's mother is adequately described in her characteristics.

way I also want to speak funny [N. R.] how I always say always speak as if I were talking to you instead of writing but to return to the other matters I wanted to speak about another person but I wait for your question

(I would like to ask this gentleman named Henry if he knows what is in this envelope.)

Yes he nods his head in affirmation and will try and tell me what it is after a little I think he had best wait until tomorrow for that test but he will not forget You see we are getting into rapport for the closer [N. R.] work Do you know anything about an Ed or Eddie<sup>323</sup>

(Yes.)

And is there not something of importance about a matter [N. R.] matter not altogether [N. R. Moans] They are getting so close to me in their anxiety that they will swamp me unless I look out so if I disappear all at [N. R.] once you will know it is because I could not hold on [N. R.] You are not used to this rapid fire [N. R.] are you [N. R.] [Indian.]

(The sitter: What is the name of that little girl you started to talk about, I would like to know.)

I can hear your question and assure you [N. R.] that I will get at all I [N. R.] can [N. R.] as soon as I can The little girl is with your mother and is being [N. R.] taken care of by her and is happy and [pause] I [dropped pencil] [long pause] G [letters written not clearly—page 455] r e h t o m [Mother Mirror-writing:] “Mother is here now like [or *she*?] loves [or lives?] [scrawl] [Pencil fell]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Indian.] Who are all these people?

(The stenographer: Who are they, tell us about them, can you?)

I keep hearing something like Kittie, Kittie.

(Kittie?)

Something like that. You know anyone named Kittie?

(The sitter: No.)

Katherine, Kittie, I don't get it very plainly. It's—did you ever have a Kate?

(Yes, I guess so.)

They call her something besides Kate. They call her Kate or something like that.

(You can't get it, can you?)

---

<sup>323</sup> The sitter's father had the middle name Henry and he had a deceased Uncle Edward.

I can't get it. Was she full of the old Harry—full of fun?

(I don't know. She was very old when she went over. I was a little boy. I don't know really.)

She is so full of fun, you know. I know she is in the family group.<sup>324</sup> He's a medium, isn't he?

(The stenographer: Is he?)

(The sitter: I have been told so.)<sup>325</sup>

My, yes. Isn't he serious?

(The stenographer: Is he?)

'Em. Of course he has got a good deal of fun in him and good deal of understanding of fun and like that, but he has really got a very deep, serious purpose in life and seems he is—he is honest, you know what I mean. I guess he is a good fellow, I guess so.

(The sitter: I hope so.)

Well, I wouldn't have any question about it myself, no. I will tell you some more tomorrow. I can't seem to say any more now.

(Are you going now?)

Yes, I think so. But you know this man who is so dizzy—my head is just going round like a top. He seems to be up and dressed and walking about, but as though he suddenly gets this dizzy feeling and goes right out to the spirit quick, just as quick as a flash but it is all suddenly becoming so dazed, dizzy, going to the spirit and he is on the street, you know he is outdoors when he comes and then he goes quickly to the spirit. He belongs there too. I don't think it is around here. It seems to be some distance away from here, you know. You know who that is?

(The sitter: No.)

Oh, I feel so dizzy. Did you ever have an uncle who went away?

(Yes.)

Goodness! My, he does want to get back and tell about it. I will give you some more tomorrow. Will you feel all right?

(Yes, I feel fine. I hope you do?)

Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

[Sitter left. Pause and Mrs. C. awakened.]

Mrs. C. Mr. See [pseudonym] Tuesday, March 31, 1914. 10 A. M.  
[Breathed heavily when going in trance]

<sup>324</sup> The sitter did not answer my questions regarding this Katherine, and so the recognition of her at the sitting is all that is ascertainable at present.

<sup>325</sup> The sitter is psychic. He does automatic writing.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitter entered and put on table sealed envelope]

Yes [Pause] Yes [pause] Yes [pause] Yes

[Pause and hand reached for pencil]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[Made marks on paper and breathed very hard. P. F. R.]

My son [pause] Pa P Pa I want to come to him [pause] Papa [pause] so hard for her to write but I will try and do something myself I tried yesterday a little and it seems good to be in direct connection with my boy. I am able to do many things from this sphere of action which make his life more as I would like to see it and yet when I try to use another method of communication I find it harder work It is like trying to sew with a pick axe instead of a needle one does not have strength to even lift the instrument but the will and knowledge are both resident in the consciousness of the spirit I have no loss of interest and no loss of—

(Who is writing?)

What did I write before you spoke do not break my thought because I lose so easily the current I am the mother I came yesterday I am with M and E [moaned; pause and made marks on paper] I love you I want [P. F. R.] to come [Indian] to you I am your little [pause—a mark which looks like S.—Indian—P. F. R.]<sup>326</sup>

[Change of Control.]

I am G. P. I simply want to infuse a spirit of confidence for a moment It is a little girl who is with the mother who was trying to write to the friend present I am interested to see each one who desires to return able to do so in a clear manner and whatever I can do I will do—not done for the sake of the spirits who are here but for the help of the friend who is a friend of the cause and desires to be of further use as he gains further knowledge I may as well say at this time that I am always and hope to continue to be an interested member of the Society which is making for better and more rational life. For men to go on living in the dark with nothing [N. R.] but the hope of a humane [N. R.] solution of life is not sufficient for such as we. The friend present I include [N. R.] in the We. I will not stay to make any long discussion of these problems for the time is precious No one knows this better than I but I do want to add just this that I feel

<sup>326</sup> The sitter does not indicate any possibility in the initials M and E. The M might be for Mother, the E for anything. Nor does he explain any possibility in the allusion to a little girl. The sequel shows it was probably his own daughter, Elizabeth.

the interest and the power about him and will be glad to help in any way. There is a man present

(The sitter: I am much obliged.)

who is a relative a father [N. R.] I think It is a man of strong and definite ideas of his own who knew nothing whatever of this expression and would have had little interest in it because he was intent on other matters and yet comes here with a very strong purpose to write Do you know anything about him

(Does he say he is my father?)

No, he has a fatherly care and influence as I see him near your mother I think it possible he is her father Do you recall anything about him

(No, I never saw him in all my life. He died before I was born.)

He is a very strong self assertive man and has made some progress since coming here

(Is it possible for you to give us the names of those spirits who are there with you?)

Yes indeed I think she will write her own name for she is only resting now to begin [N. R.] again as soon as I release the pencil She can write now for she has been learning to do all the things that a child would do in its progressive life She is with his friends who care for her and devote themselves to her with the same degree of interest as if she had been left in their care

(May she try to write the name now; I would so much like to have her do it.)

Yes do not be too anxious for your anxiety is a pressure on her she lives and breathes in your affection and it is one of the blessed things which you are to know that she cannot be lost to you I go—for the time being—G. P.

(Thank you very much.)

[Indian talk]

[Change in handwriting and change of control]

I am happy

(Try and write your name.)

Yes I hear you [pause; Indian; pause; tried to write; Indian]

EM

(That is E. M. isn't it?)

[Pause; Indian; pause; Indian]

D [P. F. R.] [A letter which looks like R]

no it is not R [Indian]

(Can you make it any plainer?)

Yes I am so [pause] I am trying Little girl Little E [or C]  
[pause]

(That is asking too much of her to communicate.)

Please Pape M e

(That letter is right.)

M [moans] Papa little M Me [Indian] No not me Mam  
Mama yes mama

(You want me to tell her?)

Yes I live with you at home E E E E is

(Can't you go on and finish that?)

El El

(That is right. What is the next letter?)

i

(That is right.)

Eli Eles no [Indian] Eli Eliz

(Now she has got it.)

a b e

(That is right.)

t h

(That is right; she has got it; that is fine.)

Elizabeth we are here together both of us 2-2 1-2 of us two Es  
Papa Mama love love love so much and I know about the picture  
[N. R.] book the picture book Did I went away so quickly too  
[N. R.] bad [N. R.] it seemed but I am still [N. R.] yours you  
know and

(Yes, little one.)

I say my prayer for you just the same because [moans] I love to  
[Indian] Please do not make me stop for I want to tell you that it is  
not so hard as it seems

(The stenographer: This is another control, isn't it?)

(The sitter: Yes.)

no I am Elizabeth and I am getting stronger I had a hard time  
didn't I But I was glad to do it Grandma

(Elizabeth, you want to send a message to your mother now you  
are writing?)

helps me <sup>327</sup> I want Mama to know that I am growing every year  
and when the birthday comes she speaks says [N. R.] Elizabeths birth-

<sup>327</sup> The Em and D are not intelligible to the sitter. Elizabeth is the name of his deceased daughter. The psychic was helped too much in getting the name spelled out. The association of the grandmother with the child has this interest: namely, that the sitter had been told elsewhere that his deceased grandmother was with the child. The child had no picture book. She was too young to have one. This is spontaneously corrected a little later.



day and I hear her I am so glad she remembers me for I never forget her and I bring flowers to her and kiss her and tell her that I am her little Eli Elizabeth [Indian]

(That z bothers her right along.)

I want to tell you so many things Dont you know what I mean by my brown picture one of mine my own picture [N. R.] book P kept it The fever [N. R.] what killed me

(Is that a question, Elizabeth?)

I know what killed me but I try not to think of it and tell mama not to for she thinks I might have stayed but I think I could not I [moans] love you I love you love you I give you a bear hug (You are a good little girl to write all that.)

I would write all day if I could. It is lovely to come this way and some day you will see me and you will hear me laugh you used to like to make your little L I Z Z I E L A U G H Elizabeth

(I want to ask Elizabeth if she remembers how old she was when she died?)

1 2 3 4 5

5 + + most 6 not most 6 but next would be 6 y e a r s

(That throws it all out then.)

not 6 but next would be 6 m you thought I meant my picture books but I mean my picture mama wishes I had no pictures mama wishes she had I was not big enough for books I

(Now, Elizabeth, tell me again how long did you stay here with us on this earth?)

guess never never had a real birthday baby 1 2 3 4 5 + months (She is guessing; that is too bad.)

I [Indian] baby yes I was little yes 1 2 3 4 5

(That part is all right so far as it goes.)

1 2 3 4 5

(Five what; now try once more.)

What did I write days I did not mean to write days [Indian] for it was more than [moaned] It was not years Let Grandma come Papa Papa W [Indian]<sup>328</sup> W.

<sup>328</sup> The child was only five *days* old when she died. The original mistake, unfortunately too clearly hinted at by the sitter, was corrected in the allusion to her not having had a birthday, and then correctly hinted at with a doubt expressed. But the situation was badly managed and the correct statement may be a natural guess, though *months* ought to have been tried first. It was absurd to ask the child any such question and it is not probable that she was communicating, but some one for her. The guess of months seems to have come in the subliminal.

P. is the initial of the sitter's deceased father, but it may stand for the initial of "Papa," which came later.

(I wish my father would take hold now if he is here.)

[Indian, took hold of stenographer's hand then threw it from her with force. Indian] [Change of Control]

(The stenographer: I wanted to ask about the sitting tomorrow; if it makes any difference if the time is changed.)

Please do not change It is all arranged over here for a certain time and we cannot get all his helpers at any time except the regular one

(I wonder if anybody over there is willing to read those questions and is desirous or willing to answer any of them.)

Have you some questions you wished answered

(Yes.)

I will see if they cannot be [N. R.] taken up [N. R.] the first thing in the morning when the influence is strong. Your little baby girl has tried to make a good record [N. R.] but now that she is a little away from the pencil she sees she made a slight mistake which she will rectify before you get through The mother

(Is that matter?)

no mother was in the feverish state The child was only lent you friend [N. R.] that you might peep [N. R.] through the open door through which her little [N. R.] spirit [N. R.] went [N. R.] and catch the light of the eternal [N. R.] stars in God's kingdom

(Could she please come herself to say how old she was when she died, I would be very much obliged or if G. P. will say it for her.)

Are you coming tomorrow

(Yes.)

She will tell you herself You may reserve your questions or you may ask them and I will arrange with those to whom they are addressed to answer tomorrow but the strength is gone now.

(These are all supposed to be asked my father if he is here.)

Yes

(Is he here now?)

Yes

(I wanted to know what is the first name of the person who gave the name of Henry yesterday.)

(If Henry knows of the matter, please refer to what happened last night and where.)

(Also give identifying names of others present.)

(I want to know if Swedenborg in my father's opinion was the victim of self-delusion.)

(Is Lee's book "The Life Elysian" true to fact, particularly the "soul mate" portion of it?)

(Are either Robert Emmet or Gray Eagle present? You might answer that now, G. P.)

Both are here.

(I would like to ask Robert Emmet why it was he stopped helping me write if he cares to answer.)

Not a complete break only for a time He will communicate himself probably tomorrow I will see that your father is able [N. R.] to answer your questions

(G. P. I want to know if you cannot help me tomorrow to try to have my father tell what is in this message, and it is the main thing I am desirous of and it is probably the last sitting we may have, and I want you to help me all you can. In the meantime I thank you very much..) [Pencil fell.]

[*Subliminal.*]

What does m o n t h s mean?

(Don't you know?)

Is it in answer to anything? Might be, perhaps. It has been an awful long sitting, hasn't it?

(Yes, you are tired, aren't you?)

Yes, isn't his mother in the spirit land?

(Yes.)

[Sitter left room, pause and Mrs. C. awakened]

Mrs. C. Mr. See [pseudonym]. Wednesday, April 1, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitter admitted]

I don't like—I never saw so many colors in my life. All plaid.

(Stenographer: Plaid?)

'Em [Pause] beautiful [pause]

[Hand reached for pencil]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

My son I am glad at this time to communicate with you to say all that is on my mind would take much time so I hasten to cover a few points knowing that you will understand that my interest and affection still continue It is more wonderful than I can relate now but the essential points are as you have formulated them in your thought A world of activity and expression and of many more opportunities to return than I thought Your mother is with me your little baby girl is with us the guides are here and the whole circle of friends and help-

ers is complete and we have many plans for your future work and unfoldment Just keep as receptive as you can and I know the work will be resumed in full measure No one has left you for any extended period but now and again one may cease a certain kind of work only to resume with greater vigor a little later on I am happy perhaps happier than you can realize in this knowledge that the communications may be established for direct work It is for you my boy to feel that your life is in the keeping of your guardian angels [pencil changed] who have the conditions of your life well in charge Your temperament and responsiveness help much and produce good conditions [pause] for work Do not feel discouraged and do not be weary with the effort to make proper connections for your guides I am somewhat astounded at the differences of opinion which spirits hold even after they are here but I suppose that is quite in line with human progress E. S. was a prophet as well as a seer and some [N. R.] of his visions were not in the locality which he ascribed to them but were without doubt correspondences of some things then existent. I have changed my opinion in a degree everyone does but I did have some light to help me when I came to perplexing problems [moaned] I have a desire to formulate a code of living and of the spirit manifestations sometimes but do not know as I can do better than to inspire you as often as I can R. E. is still a strong factor Do not [threw up hand—Indian words] doubt it. Charles I am still here but if I may release my hold a moment I think I [P. F. R.] [Indian]<sup>329</sup>

J is here [pause] Will you please repeat the questions you wish answered

(I would like to know if my father is there what he knows about the contents of this envelope.)

He is here and with me and I am trying to help you both The envelope seems to be a matter for posthumous testimony as he makes effort to recall a message rather than to look clairvoyantly at the contents now. Do you understand (Yes.)<sup>330</sup>

that

(I understand that it is hard to remember, but I hope he will be able to as he promised to do it.)

<sup>329</sup> The answer about Swedenborg's vision is interesting, but not useful for evidence. The sitter's father did have experiences in this field and they were a source of help to him. The sitter does not understand the reference to the name Charles. It is possible that it is the Charles Warren whom he did not recognize in the first sitting. As the sitter is psychic it is possibly the name of his guide, though there is no way at present to verify this.

<sup>330</sup> The father had left a posthumous letter. It was hinted at by the sitter at the end of the previous sitting, though not explicitly called a posthumous letter. The nature of it might be guessed by the subconscious.

There is a message and a sign sort of a symbol which was some time used and which he hoped to reproduce. It is at the end of a message wherich [which] is in the form of a letter. It is not a bequest but it would suggest a legal form and the first word looks like a capital I—to me as he places it here. Wait no wait—a moment until I can see more clearly [pause]

I am mot her. I am mother and am trying to mother and am trying to help father give his promised test. It ought to be easy enough, [pause]

Son I, —— come to prove the survival of [Indian] my soul after death

(Are those the words of the message as you have them there?)

There is something more the sign or signature follows,<sup>381</sup>

(I would like to have that very much.)

O [pause] [Indian] H [mark on paper]

[Change of Control.]

Who is O Do you know any one who is related who is named Oliver [N. R.] Oliver

(I think the O is meant to be some other letter.)

I think you may be right [N. R.] but I will try and help. I thought if I took the pencil it might move along faster but I will let the other one come

[Change of Control.]

Cl 2 [or Q. crossed out] scrawls. [Put hand on stomach; moaned; pause; more marks on paper; pause; Indian; made dots on paper]

In a minute [N. R.] I think it will come [mark on paper] d dearest P. O O O O [P. F. R.] d no not D—It is not D

(Do you mean they are trying to read it clairvoyantly or read it as a message from my father?)

Take it as a message from your father

(His name?)

Yes that is exactly what is happening

(They got his middle name true. If they could get his first name it would be enough.)

C

(There it is.)

C.C.

(That is right.)

---

<sup>381</sup> Whether all this purporting to be from the posthumous letter is relevant or not cannot be determined at time of making the notes, as I have advised the sitter not to open the letter yet.

C C

(C?)

yes C-C just a minute C [Indian] C ee

(Is that e?)

no C [Indian] C Cl [Indian] Co

(It is right now so far.)

r [Indian]

[Apparent change in handwriting]

I want to write it for myself and I will do it

Clar [or per] oo

C l e

i o n [Indian—pause]

[Apparent change in Control again] [G. P.?)

How hard it is after the first pressure to obtain a certain thing. The more he tries the harder it comes. Of course I know his name is not Caroline and yet that name comes oftenest [N. R.] to [N. R.] the [N. R.] friend and almost written of itself. I suppose the automatic [N. R.] action of the subliminal consciousness is to write *something* and it is like a charge of electric fluid which gives an [N. R.] action with absolutely no meaning to it.

(I wonder if the writer knows my name.)

Let the work proceed [N. R.] for a little. The name is not Carl is it

(No, C is correct.)

Yes I knew that by the way it persisted and I thought the next letter was a larger one than a but did not know—any way the father knows his own [N. R.] name and if he could disentangle himself from the machinery of the light and the influences present he could easily write it

(I suppose he could write it through my hand but it would not do to try.)<sup>332</sup>

You ought to have been able to get the posthumous message also through your own hand but your consciousness makes you fear to make a trial so important but you have enough power to do any of these things. It is only a matter of practice. Did your father ever travel

(All his life traveling.)

I see so much of other scenes and also various kinds of people about

---

<sup>332</sup> It is probable that the communicator was trying to give his own name in all this effort. C is the initial of his surname. It was Cooper. It is apparent that he got the first three letters of it and then in going off to "Cleion" he got too confused to succeed. Some time later it came through correctly when the sitter was not present.

him and numerous notes [N. R.] and suggestions like [N. R.; Indian] bits of memoranda which he was in the habit of taking. He was a good conversationalist and knew pretty much of almost every subject that might come up. He was broad but not shallow.

(Is that right?)

Yes and when he found himself about to take a longer journey it was with avowed interest of in what it might reveal [N. R.] Do you know if he knew Myers

(No, I don't think he knew him personally; I don't know.)

I do not mean personally I mean his [N. R.] writings

(Yes.)

because he has met him and seems to be most impressed with his clear headedness if I may use the word and at this moment he and Myers are talking together. It is like a strong young influence your father brings. He is enthusiastic [Indian] always and that enthusiasm he still retains. There is a deep religious undercurrent in his make up however much he may dabble in the [N. R.] occult. It is not a good word I used and he slightly resents it because it was not a dabbler he was but a serious student [N. R.] of these problems and still is and will continue [N. R.] his researches as earnestly as when in the body. Myers laughs a [Indian] little bit at the effort to get the message and says it would prove [N. R.] nothing except a power to see what was written. The memory of some less important and quite incidental [N. R.] matters would be better evidence of identity than to see what was written in the envelope.<sup>333</sup> still your father [N. R.] was pledged to do the thing and would not feel that he had kept his part [N. R.] of the agreement unless he met you here [two letters—may be G. P. or C h]

(How would it do if I touched the medium's hand; would that help any?)

Try it

[The sitter puts his hand against the back of medium's hand]

---

<sup>333</sup> The communicator never met Mr. Myers in life, but in this effort to give a posthumous letter it is quite pertinent to report him as present, though Mrs. Chenoweth does not know why. Mr. Myers had such a letter and failed to give it. But the most significant thing in the message is the statement put into the mouth of Mr. Myers; namely, that success would "prove only the power to see what was written." This exactly characterizes the view that Mr. Myers had when living, as explained in an article in the *Journal* (Vol. V, pp. 186-189). Mrs. Chenoweth never saw this article and does not know either that Mr. Myers had such a letter or what his views were. The rest that is attributed to Mr. Myers is also just as characteristic of him. It was his knowledge of some things done by Stainton Moses that convinced him of this view. Through two or three of the psychics in England Mr. Myers expressed the same view and read Mr. Piddington's posthumous letter to prove it at the time Mr. Piddington was writing it.

C [pause]

(Right so far.)

or [scrawl] Cumodore [?]

did it come

C o Com H it came before [Threw pencil away. Indian.] <sup>334</sup>

(If father is still here and wants to get a message to mother, I would be very glad to take it to her.)

[Indian.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Who is A? It sounds like Annie. Do you know Annie? That is not it. It is A. It is more like—it don't sound anything like Annie, but A U G U S T. There is some more but I can't get it. I don't know whether it is Augusta or Augustus, but somebody here, somebody alive, you know. Do you know who it is.

(Perhaps you are going to try to get a date of a month.)

May be. Does August mean anything about your people?

(Yes, it might.)

A U G U S T Your people know Latin?

(Not very much of it.)

Well, it is only one figure that I see after that.

(That is right. That will help if you can get the right figure.)

Well, I really can't tell you whether it is a 3 or an 8. It has two squirls to it, you know, but I can't get that. I know I can't.

(Ask him to put in the Roman letters.)

Oh, you mean like V and something?

(Yes; ask him to put it that way for you and see if you can get it.)

Well, the minute you ask me that I saw what looked like a V but with something after it, you know. I am afraid I can't do it. I am scared. <sup>335</sup>

(Stenographer: What are you afraid of?)

I am scared; why should I be?

(No one but friends here.)

Are you friends?

(Yes.)

You got a little bit of baby over in Heaven?

<sup>334</sup> There was evidently another effort here to get the communicator's name Cooper. Whether "Com" is a mistake for "Coo" or an attempt at "Commodore" cannot be determined. He was not Commodore, but Admiral. H is the initial of his middle name. But whether intended for this is not determinable.

<sup>335</sup> The communicator's birthday was August 5th. But no one would suspect this to be the intention but for the interpretation put on the word August extended into Augustus, tho the correction of this last to August favors the sitter's view. He helps the communicator out too much to make the incident evidential.



(She was a baby sometime ago; she has had time to grow since then.)

Yes, I know, but when she went away she was little bit of baby. Isn't she cunning? That is when your hopes all went, didn't they?

(Yes.)

But she is beautiful as a spirit and I think it is wonderful to have babies over in Heaven. It is just as good as having them here, if you only knew it. Of course you miss a thousand little things that you see other people do, but there are a thousand more that are just as sweet and beautiful when your spiritual consciousness is awakened. There is something—something to that little word of “treasures laid up in heaven,”—can't put money there but you can have babies there. Bless their darling little souls! they're an everlasting joy. They are the jewels. I don't know your baby's name, but I know she is like a lovely flower, a lovely lily. Isn't that good?

(Yes.)

You know there's a young man who has been gone a long time too. He seems to be right by your father. Your father's there and I see this young man who is either your father's brother or your brother but *he* was mostly born in the spirit too, you know. You know him?

(No; I guess if there is one like that he died before I was born.)

You know there was one?

(I had a half-brother die before I came.)

Well, he is a help to you, you know, just the same.

(That is good.)

And you know you're a pretty good feller.

(I hope you are not joking with me.)

I couldn't joke about it. You are, and it is a pleasure for spirits to find such a man and to help him in his work. You have not begun to get the unfoldment and power you are going to have. It is going to grow, and do you know anyone—I think it is Fred; do you know anyone named Fred?

(No.)

Don't you really?

(Not over there.)

No, I don't mean over there. I mean alive.

(I can't think of anybody.)

Seems to be somebody in the body, you know, someone you know. I don't know as it is a relative, but I think it is someone you know—know right well, too.

(I can't think of him.)

Funny, I will have to go. I am sorry.

(So am I. Are you all gone?)

I will be in a few minutes, but I wish I could stay longer. Have you got a step-mother?

(I have.)<sup>336</sup>

She is pretty good, isn't she?

(Good as can be.)

Your own mother, your own honest mother, you know,—

(Yes.)

She likes her and there never will be any quarrel about your father when she gets over there, you know she sometimes thinks of that.

(My step-mother thinks of it?)

Yes, sometimes; she doesn't trouble very much, but it would be just kind of little wonder, you know, but they will be all right. They will harmonize. They are both such beautiful spirits that all these—all associations people are accustomed to don't hold good in spirit life. It is just beautiful, spiritual relations, and your father sends a message to her that, to tell her his life is not complete without her just the same, even though he has found a lot of friends. She will be glad of that won't she?

(Yes, she will be glad to get that message.)

I don't think she is going yet, you know.

(Well, we hope not.)

I don't see her going. I think she will stay and she is one of the women you never would be glad to see her go except it would be larger life for her, that is all. Your little girl brings the loveliest white rose; I call her a lily, but she brings a white rose and lays right across your hand, and I should think you would smell flowers sometimes. Do you ever get the odor of flowers?

(Spiritual flowers, you mean?)

Yes.

(No, I am sorry to say I don't.)

Well, I think you will because she puts it right there so you will get the odor of it sometimes. Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

[Sitter left room]

Goodbye, Miss Alice.

(Goodbye.)

Probably he is Harry, isn't he?

(I will ask him; I don't know.)

Did his father get his name through?

---

<sup>336</sup> The sitter's stepmother is still living. The spontaneous mention of her under the circumstances is a fair hit.

(Part of it; he said so.)

Well, I think it must be there were other letters too, so I don't feel sure myself.

Well, is the next one after the C an O?

(I think so; perhaps you can get it through.)

I was wondering if I could. C O—I don't think so. Probably U is it; C O U [pause] I can't seem to get it, but it's Coken or something like that, you know. It isn't Corsen, but it might be that, you know. Goodbye.<sup>387</sup>

(Goodbye.)

[Pause and Mrs. C. awakened.]

Mrs. C. A. I. C.

Wednesday, April 8, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

I see Dr. Hodgson.

(Do you? I guess he is coming today, then.)

I don't know. I can see him here. Don't you love to find out about these things in the spirit?

(Yes.)

Isn't it beautiful?

(Yes. There is so much to know, so much we don't understand.)

Yes. What there is to know is how it affects us. But the great truth of the life beyond is very simple and the complexity is no more complex than the way people are affected by each other in the visible world,—

(No.)

—just the same.

(Only it doesn't seem so natural to most people.)

No, because they haven't become accustomed with the idea. But most everybody is affected by people in their environment and the people in their environment are there through circumstances or relationship of one form or another, and this is just about the same. People are attracted for one reason or another to a center where there is a sensitive person and they affect that person. I can't see that it is least bit different,—the relations between spirit and mortal, than the relations between mortal and mortal. But of course when they come to try to manifest, that is more difficult; I was talking about the general relations, you know; just as it is very difficult to manifest to anyone

<sup>387</sup> This is another attempt to get the name Cooper. "Cou" is phonetically correct enough.

in the body,—the only way is to write a letter and depend upon someone to deliver it, or send a telegram or cable or telephone, and all those things will become established between spirit and mortal just as they have between mortals in the early days of establishing communication. It is very wise, isn't it?

(Yes.)

I didn't mean to sound so pedantic.

(It is very nice for you to say it.)

But it is the way I seem to understand it now. You know there was some people came last week who didn't get everything through that they wanted.

(Yes.)

They did pretty well, though. But the man—the father was a student of these things. Did you know it?

(I thought so.)

Yes. Of course he wanted to make it perfectly sure to his boy that he could return and so he made a promise.

(Do you suppose he could get his name through?)

I think so. He is the one who began with C, wasn't he?

(Yes.)

Yes, I think he can.

(I think his son would like it very much.)

It isn't Clark, is it?

(I don't think so.)

Oh, you know what it is?

(I think I do.)

It is something like Clark, isn't it?

[Pause.]

It has five letters, hasn't it?

(That is pretty near.)

Six; it has five beside the C. [Pause] Do you know if the next is O?

(I think so.)

Do you know if the next one is l?

(I don't think so.)

Do you know if the next one is V?

(Not quite.)

O W

(I don't think so.)

C O V—I don't know—wait a minute. He is here.

(Is he?)

Yes, that is why—is there an I in that?

(No.)

I will see if I can get the next one to that.

(Yes.)

They are kind of blurred together.

(Yes.)

[Whispers] S [turns head] Can't you speak it to me so I can hear? It is an odd name, isn't it?

(Well, perhaps so. You got most of it the other day.)

Yes; I didn't know they did. There is an R there, you know, and an A, I think; C O R—I have got to work on it a minute.

(Yes; no hurry.)

I think Hodgson wants him to give it.

(Yes.)

[Whispers] C O—sounds something like Colsa—Connor; it is not Connor, is it?

(No, not quite.)

Connor, something like that, you know. Well, isn't there an R in it and an A?

(No.)

C O R—Conrey.

(Don't let it bother you too much.)

Doesn't bother me any, only it is like having something right on the end of your tongue and not being able to speak it. [Pause] There is an E, you know, because I—I have got C O R E

(That is right, I think, only they are not in order.)

There is two more letters I have not got. Isn't that funny?

(Is he trying to show it to you?)

Yes.

(Or speak it?)

First he tries to show me and then he tries to speak it.

(I suppose it is elusive, isn't it?)

Very.

(Moves, does it?)

Yes. It is like those moving signs. First you think you see a word and then you don't, and then so many of them look alike. C O; Is R the last letter?

(Yes.)

And then E backwards. I have lost my two middle ones, you know. Let me take the pencil.

[Pencil put in hand.]

Oh, I can't hold it.

(Do you want me to hold it in your hand?)

No, I can't; they have got the hand. Isn't that funny?  
[Pause and hand reached for pencil.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

Co n Con er no not quite but somewhat near it I have been persuaded to try my hand again by my friends as my son was most anxious to get a little more from me I was afraid that I could not write without him but I am doing very well and if I can get my name through that [moans] will help I tried to speak it to the light but did not get it through with [N. R.] sufficient force Coulter no  
(You are doing pretty well.)

Yes Cou right Cou [P. F. R. Indian; pause] er [P. F. R.]  
[long pause] w p [Indian] Couper<sup>338</sup>  
(Perhaps we had better leave it now.)

Just a moment

(Yes; plenty of time. You are doing well.)

for it is almost right now and I am [moans] pleased that I can come at all.

(Yes.)

It is so quiet and calm after the stress of life to feel the pervading [N. R.] influence of peace and to know that time is not a measure for tasks but a revealer of the mysterious providences and expressions of a power and influence which [moans] men have named God. I am beginning to have a sense of the incomprehensible and to see that the work which my confreres are engaged in is the noblest and mightiest [moans] effort ever made to help the race—human race forward towards its ultimate expression. To [N. R.] teach men how to understand their kinship with God to lift men into an atmosphere of divine life to prove to men [N. R.] that the span of years [moaned] called physical life is but the first breath [N. R.] of infancy which unfolds into mature and perfect manhood in a land of possibilities before undreamed [N. R.] of and to reduce the speculation doubt despair and misery which [moans] death has always produced by the knowledge which this work brings is surely a work to enlist [N. R.] the efforts of the angels of God.

(Yes.)

I want my dear ones to [N. R.] know that I am alive to the need of the more definite and scientific proof and that I shall devote myself to that side of the work quite as earnestly as to the philosophy which

---

<sup>338</sup> This long and labored effort to get the name Cooper is most interesting, especially for the absurd guesses or mistakes. Apparently at the end the communicator is aware of the error in "Couper." This is corrected still later. [It is noteworthy that *Couper*, *Cowper*, and *Cooper* are all, *correctly pronounced*, exactly the same in sound.—G. O. T.]

enfolds the truth. Cou [Pause; Indian] just a moment Cou er  
[written backward; pause after e]

(Yes; don't hurry.) [pause]

C [pause] C is right and O is right [pause] will I ever get it  
down on the paper [Indian; pause; P. F. R.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh!

(What is it?)

[Pause and hand reached for pencil]

[Writes] N

(What is that?)

N Ne Neril [Pause] [might be Nerit] [Cf..Note 339.]

[Change of Control.]

It is hard for him but he will not give up [Jennie P.'s writing]

(He does well.)

Yes he has done well and I think he has written the letters but they  
were not in order but he will try once more after I have relieved the  
pressure a little I did not know that he was to try to do this today so  
was not trying to help him but I think R. H. was [throws pencils]  
rather anxious [throws pencils] to have it go on as he knows that it is  
a great help to a spirit to do the thing they start to do.

(Yes.)

It is a bad thing for one to begin a certain name or word [N. R.]  
or test and then abandon it. It leaves a sense of discouragement [N.  
R.] in the subliminal area and tends to lessen the power of concentra-  
tion [N. R.] in a special case in [N. R.] the future work and that is  
why we often persist to the very end even [N. R.] at the risk of the  
charge [N. R.] of guess work. We know right well that guess work  
has little to do with it and if telepathy [N. R.; throws away pencils]  
had any leg [N. R.] to stand on it would now and again be found as a  
part of the work here. But a name perfectly familiar to the one desir-  
ing it yes is more hard is more difficult to get through than one that  
comes spontaneously and unsought [N. R.] It is the sought for test  
that gives us the trouble of our otherwise peaceful [N. R.] career [N.  
R.]. It is rather funny to see this man trying to write a letter that  
you know and he knows and yet it fails [N. R.] to get an [N. R.] im-  
print on the pad [N. R.] We get along alright but I fear I make  
[N. R.] some rather [N. R.] hideous marks for you to decipher I  
will go now and let Mr. C. come and have another trial [N. R.] I  
wonder if you know anything about an office and some books and papers  
and a safe and other men in [N. R.] the office that was connected with

this C. It seems to be more in connection with his son and there [N. R.] are two rooms connected and several men. It seems to be a business affair and as if Mr. C. were quite interested in it and do you know if this C is the Christian name [N. R.] or the surname. I thought it was the family name not the Christian

(Yes, that is right, I think.)

It seemed as if he wished to have me understand that it was the name his son bore. Do you understand

(Yes.)

All right. Also he wishes to have the son know something about a pin [N. R.] It is a relic. I do not mean that in the sense of an old old relict [*sic*] but it is something which C—Mr. C—over here left behind and it is treasured for its associations more than the intrinsic value. There are two things which he shows to me now. One is this jewel which is rather [N. R.] a dark colored stone and set in a very plain setting of gold and the other is spotted

(Spotted?)

yes not all one color. The other article is something he takes from his vest pocket and it is small and rather light like a piece of paper [Indian] in which is wrapped a small bit of something which he puts to his mouth. It seems like crystals. I think it is a kind of medicine kind [N. R.] of medicine and it is the smallest bit which he takes out and it is white [N. R.] somewhat like a crystal not quite as fine as a powder.<sup>339</sup> Then there is something about a small thing which looks as if it were fastened to a keyring or [N.R.] or chain. It is about as long as a small steel whistle [N. R. small steel whistle] and is round<sup>340</sup> I think perhaps you [N. R.] can find out what it means. There is much more but I cannot stop now. I will let him come. It is not Cowper

(Cowper, is that it?)

---

<sup>339</sup> Note omitted by J. H. H.

The white crystals taken into the mouth were of trional, which is sometimes, if not always, administered from a paper. "Neril": there is no meaning to this unless it refer to the medicine given him in his illness to make him sleep, trional according to Mrs. See. There is a suggestiveness about the sound of the syllables "nerit" or "neril" that occurs to the mind in noting the facts.—G. O. T.

<sup>340</sup> Note omitted by J. H. H.

The history of the pin and the other article, as given by Mrs. See, is as follows: The communicator's son, L—, then a boy of four years, found the stone, which must have dropped out of a scarf pin. It was an intaglio of dark red. And the boy gave it to his father. It was mounted in 1901 as a seal, was much treasured by him, and worn constantly on his watch fob. The cigar cutter was the length of a steel whistle, was of gold, and flat, with the cutter in the center, sliding back and forth. This was carried in his vest pocket on his chain. An earlier one worn in the same way was circular, and about the size of a whistle.



Yes that is what I wrote

(That is very near indeed, if I know the name, and I think I do.)

Yes it sounded [N. R.] like that as I started to go away—J P--  
[Cf. Note 338.]

[Change of Control.]

[Hand put out for new pencil. Pause.]

Cooper

(Now do you think you have got it right?)

[Pencil fell]

(I think that is right.)

[Moan]

[*Subliminal.*]

When he put down the pencil he was through, wasn't he?

(Yes.)

I have got to go.

(You have?)

I have been away a long time. Did they do anything—

(Yes.)

—good?

(I think they did.)

I think Dr. Hyslop will be back before awfully long.

(You will be glad, won't you?)

No, I don't care. I like him and I like to have him work but I like to see him get the rest. I think it will be good for him if he can stay longer, don't you?

(I should think so.)

But he will feel he can take a rest when he wants to.

(Because he has tried to see what we can do?)

Yes, it isn't quite so desperate. Easter will be come and gone before—what an awful time they make preaching that awful thing. Why should they preach the most awful thing that ever happened to a prophet of truth? Don't need to keep that in the minds of the people. Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

[Pause and Mrs. C. awakened.]

## Chapter XX, Series XVI, Apr. 13, 14, 15, 1914

Mrs. C. Mr. Seaman

Monday, April 13, 1914. 10 A. M.

[Breathed hard]

[*Subliminal.*][Sitter admitted. Pause] <sup>341</sup> I wish you could see what I see.

(The stenographer: What do you see?)

So many, many different places. Just as though I were moving rapidly up a river and could see places each side, only it isn't a river, you know. It is probably—probably one of those innumerable paths through the ether. It is strange.

(Are you alone?)

Oh, no. I never seem to be alone. No. Somebody takes me away and somebody always comes. Where do you suppose I really go?

(I don't know; what do you think?)

I suppose to just the same place I would go when I die, only I come back again. Some day I am going to remember all the people I see while I am gone and tell you when I come back.

(That would be interesting.)

Do you think so?

---

<sup>341</sup> The gentleman present at these sittings was an entire stranger to me and the sittings were arranged for him by my secretary while I was absent, though I had promised the man some sittings before I left for my rest. "Seaman" was not his real name, but he was known by this name to the stenographer and not known by any name to Mrs. Chenoweth. His explanation of the sittings as a whole should precede the individual notes.

"A few preliminary remarks will be necessary to explain one cause of confusion, as I conceive it to be, which characterized my sittings.

"My desire in arranging for these sittings was to obtain, if possible, some communication of an evidential nature purporting to come from my *maternal* grandfather; and during the sittings many incidents occurred which cause me to believe that a personality purporting to be my maternal grandfather was actually trying to communicate. However, after reading the reports, my father (Mr. Frank B. C——) tells me that they contain many very striking allusions of a nature that indicates the presence of my *paternal* grandfather, whom I have never seen and who died years before I was born. It would seem, if it is true that my paternal grandfather was also trying to communicate, that on such occasions I was mistaken for my father and spoken to as though I were he. I cannot judge how probable or improbable this state of affairs would be in these sittings, but there are strong indications that several times my paternal grandfather was present; for example, in the accurate description of the watch with its date 1800 and something. I would note here that I knew nothing of my paternal grandfather's watch and its history until told it by my father after reading the reports. I supposed at the time that the reference was to a watch carried for a great number of years by my maternal grandfather; but then the description does not cover it, since the watch carried by my maternal grandfather, while old-fashioned, was a stem-winder and encased; while the watch of my paternal grandfather had a history connected with it and that of my maternal grandfather had no special associations."

(I suppose you forget when you come back, don't you?)

Well, I never tried to remember. Always so many people around when I come back and always somebody making more or less fuss to get away from the body, and I have to get in quickly, you know, before I get tangled up. It is rather a delicate operation after all, I suppose. I am gone.

(You are gone?)

Good bye.

(Goodbye.)

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[Pause]

I will try

(That is not quite plain.)

I will try to write to my boy and give the m message [P. F. R.] I much [P. F. R.; moaned] desire to give [P. F. R.] [marks on paper] It is so strange to feel so light headed [Indian] I do not feel as if I had any weight at all but it gives me a strange sense of disconnectedness I will get hold soon I hope I have known about this [Moaned] fact for a little time fact for some little while I am he who seeks you and who would help you to a clearer light on problems that make your life [Moaned] a source of study and effort I do not [moaned] know where to begin I will

(The sitter: I would like to ask who is this?)

try and begin right soon

[mark] F

[change in handwriting;]

my [mark] no I did not write S I wrote an E and before that [N. R.] I wrote an F. both letters are just what I wanted to write<sup>342</sup> and I will get the rest as soon as I can I cannot hurry I can only [N. R.] say I am a relative a man gone some little time and with me is a lady who seeks earnestly to reach [N. R. earnestly] to approach her boy She tried to write at first and lost her hold of the hand and I am now writing in her place [Indian] I have been here longer know better the need of determination determ yes I can hear every word you say and wish I could talk [N. R.] It [N. R.] would seem to be easier I cannot tell whether it would be or not Uncle [N. R.] yes uncle to you and [ \* ] some [P. F. R.; Indian; pause] W W W W W

(M is it?)

<sup>342</sup> The sitter's father and mother are living, so that being addressed as "my boy" is false, assuming that it implies the death of either father or mother. F at the end of this first effort to write may be for "father," which would be false. But as this form of expression is often confused with "grandfather" there may here be that mistake.

No W Write Write as soon as I can [Indian; pause] <sup>343</sup>

G [Change in handwriting]

Good [N. R.] morning I must come and help the friends a little I think for they are getting a little tired I am not half as furious as I seem but when the energy is fast leaving [N. R.] I must do something quickly or not at all. There is a gentleman here who is apparently [N. R.] a friend of the friend present and a lady who is rather a close relative I think by her anxiety but she is not old not very old I mean but is somewhat of a care taker and has a very pretty face bright dark eyes dark hair and a round face with a very animated [N. R.] expression She may possibly be a sister and if so she has had [N. R.] some years over here I mean by [N. R.] that she probably came [N. R. probably] some time ago for all her attitude is of care and protection [N. R.] which a spirit though young will often assume if the time over here has been long [pause] I waited a moment to see more about the man of whom I wish to give a description he is fair [N. R.] blue eyes brown hair with grey in it and with large features Is [N. R.] the father over here in spirit life I wonder If not this is a close relative who takes a father's place over here <sup>344</sup> I hate those little pencils

(We shall have to have some new ones, I guess.)

No use to try to save money on me I don't like to use scraps It makes me feel small and restrained [N. R.]

(We will have some new ones.)

All right I only try to change the current now but will return again as I am needed you may know I will help the 4 people whom I see here very near [N. R.] our [N. R.] friend—J P—

[P. F. R.] [pause]

mother will help [pause] [marks on paper] H is here H H H H is here. <sup>345</sup>

[Pencil fell; Indian; sighs]

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh, I got to come back.

<sup>343</sup> The sitter has no "Uncle W," but he has a Great Uncle W, who is still living. The lady said to be with him is not described sufficiently at this point to guess her identity.

<sup>344</sup> The lady described is not recognizable with definite assurance, though some of the characteristics identify the mother of the paternal grandfather, who died when the sitter was very young. She was not young, but had an oval face, according to the sitter. Of the man the sitter says:

"I think he may possibly be my maternal grandfather. His hair was almost gray, however."

<sup>345</sup> The "H" is not recognizable. [But Hodgson soon appears.—G. O. T.]

(You have not yet, have you?)

Who is the man?

(What man?)

The old man; can't you see him?

(I can't see any man.)

Well, look, he is quite bald. You have got somebody here with you, haven't you?

(Stenographer: Yes.)

Well, this old man knows him, you know. His hair is just a little bit curly, kind of—not real curly, but kind of—what you call it—wavy, but it is quite, quite white, you know he is an old man and bald, but it is just down here, just goes round a little bit, you know what I mean.

(Stenographer: Yes.)

And awfully pleasant. He is right up there looking right at us. He is rather good sized man, you know, round, full face, and very pleasant looking. I don't know who he looks like, but somebody I have seen before, and he is awfully nice. You know who he is?

(The sitter: Does he seem to be a relation?)

Well, I don't know; he is so—he is so pleased and happy I should—yes, I think he is. You got a relative like that in spirit land?

(I have several relatives in the spirit land.)<sup>346</sup>

But do they all look alike?

(Oh, no; do you know what relative this is?)

I will try and find out. I don't suppose you could have two who looked like that—that is what I—you know he is standing right exactly beside Dr. Hodgson, as if Hodgson were helping him, and I don't know whether he is your father or your grandfather, but he seems to be right down in the line like that, either father or grandfather, you know what I mean?

(Yes, I know.)

And he is near enough for that, just as if it would be direct line right down to you.

(Yes.)

That is what he is. But he is awfully good, always keeps his poise, never seems to lose his patience or poise, that sort of a man, quite a student too. You know he knows a lot of things very well; I don't feel as though I am saying things in a very good way but he makes in-

---

<sup>346</sup> The paternal grandfather had hair that "was slightly wavy." The maternal grandfather "was heavily set, about five feet seven inches in height, had a full round face and was a pleasant man to talk to." Both grandfathers had white hair and were quite bald.

quiries about every single thing he sees. You know he is not a one idea man at all, but broad, knows everything. If he saw a book he would take it and look at it and if it was about a subject he knew nothing he would ask something about it, that sort.

(Yes, I understand.)

Do you know him any better now?

(I have an idea I might; I don't know.)

Well, isn't he your grandfather?

(He might be.)

I think so. He has been gone quite a little while, you know, but still he knew you all right and you knew him.

(Do you know how long he has been gone?)

I don't know how many years. He will probably tell you when he gets to writing it. But he knows about you, you know, I mean knows you as a man, as a boy.

(Yes, I know.)

Not just from spirit side, and he has got a very youthful spirit, interested in your people, always keeps up his enthusiasm,<sup>347</sup> and when he went away he went away quick to the spirit, you know, little sickness, but still it is rather quick to the spirit.<sup>348</sup>

(Yes.)

And he is very happy—just want to tell you that, as if you would want to know that he were. He loves you. It is more like a real devotion to you, and happy—oh, he is so happy to come here. I will tell you some more about him in a minute. He has got a watch that is not on a chain, but seems to be more like a cord or a—not exactly like a ribbon, but it is not a chain. It is like a small cord or some substance that is not metal, but it is—the watch is rather peculiar, because it is quite thick and open, I see just as it is put down here as though there is no cover to it, just like an open watch.

(Yes.)

And very [queer] letters on it. It is quite old fashioned, but it must be one he clung to, you know, carried a good deal.

(Yes, I know.)

And he puts it down here as if it were a thing he brought as evidence, and there is something about it, some other—why, it goes with a key, you know I wind it up with a key, because he puts a key right here. And there is some sort of a history to that. Whenever you

---

<sup>347</sup> The sitter writes me that the description of the characteristics here would fit both grandfathers and are too indefinite for identification.

<sup>348</sup> Both grandfathers died very suddenly of apoplexy.

would see the watch you would think of some connection with an event. It has got a story about it.

(Yes, I know.)

And he puts that down here and wants to tell me something about it, but there is a 1 and an 8—1800 and something, because there is four figures, and there is 1 and 8. He must have gone over, I think, oh, probably 14—a number of years ago, because there is two figures to it, you know, and I think the first figure to it is a 1, about his going, you know.

(Yes.)

And then another—seems to me—I don't know whether it is 14 years.

(Are you sure that means the number of years he is gone?)

No, I am not sure. Does 14 mean anything to you?

(Yes, in a way it does, yes.)

Well, I see 1 and 4, you know. You weren't 14 when he went?

(No. No.)

Well, I will have to leave it. I don't know just what it means.

(Yes, I understand.)

He is lovely, you know, he is—

(Yes; yes.)

He is a lovely man, and you know right beside him is this other man. This is your grandfather I am telling you about, you know.<sup>349</sup>

---

<sup>349</sup> The sitter's father contributes the following:

"In regard to the sittings that my son had at Boston on April 13, 14, 15, I was very much interested in some of the things which were set forth in his reports, but was surprised at the peculiar statements made to him in the first sitting concerning the watch, as it struck me as peculiarly fitting into a circumstance in the life of my own father, of which I had heard him speak on many an occasion when I was a boy.

"It seems that a friend and himself had been to the sea shore. The friend had gone in to bathe while my father strolled on the beach. The friend, taken with cramps, cried for help and sank. My father, without divesting himself of any other garments than his coat and vest, leaped to his rescue. By the time he had reached the spot of his friend's peril, the latter had disappeared. My father dived and searched beneath the surface for upwards of a minute—people who stood on the shore testified to this, and had begun to think my father, too, had perished—when he came to the surface, swimming safely to the shore with his friend in his grasp. His watch he always carried in the fob pocket of his trousers—a silk tape fastened to it going around his neck. The watch, which was an open-face key winder, made in the early part of the nineteenth century with date inscribed thereon, which I cannot now recall, was never afterwards the reliable time-piece it was before its salt water bath. My father took great satisfaction in recounting his adventure; but would always begin his story through some reference to the watch, saying it wasn't a good time keeper, but that he kept it in memory of the incident above referred to.

"The curious phase of my son's sitting in reference to this incident is that I had never mentioned anything of it to him, my father having died several years before my marriage, and the story had passed from my mind. When, however, I had read

(Yes, I know.)

And beside him is this other man. He is so pale and thin and a bit darker, you know, not awfully dark. He is medium complexion, but oh, there is such a fight for his life, as though oh, there is such a—I don't want to die, you know, I just feel I couldn't go. Not that I am not ready, but there is some things I want to do, you know, things I am needed for.<sup>350</sup>

(Yes.)

And he is right with your grandfather, you know, those two men together. Have you got an uncle over there?

(Not that I know of.)

You know anyone named Charles?

(Charles, I can't remember just now. You don't know the last name, do you?)

No, not yet. Well, are you coming again tomorrow?

(Yes.)

Well, I will find out something about these things and tell you again tomorrow. You know I can find out better in spirit than I can here. You understand? Good bye.

(All right. Good bye.)

Don't be discouraged, will you?

(Oh, no.)

[Sitter left room.]

[After sitter left room]

They didn't get much, did he?

(I guess not.)

Well, he is a hard sitter. He didn't mean to be. He is just as good and just as open as he can be, but I don't know what it is, I can't tell myself; it is a bit over-anxious. I think his father is over too. You

---

my son's reports of the sittings, this part of the report struck me as peculiarly fitting to the story related above.

"I want to say, in conclusion, that several other references in the report would seem to point to the fact that it was my father who was one of those who tried to communicate with my son at the sittings, and in all probability mistook my son for myself,—as I was but a few years the senior of my son at my father's death and must have looked very much like my son then, as he resembles me, at this time, in a striking way. In respect of the other references I allude especially to the general style of language used, which sometimes is strikingly like that used by my father. These places have been pointed out by my son.

"I would say further that I have been always skeptical of inter-communications of this sort, and had never given any thought to matters of psychical research; and had regarded spiritualism, etc., as delusions, snares and worse, which trap the unwary. But this incident has set me to thinking—I regard it as very remarkable."

<sup>350</sup> The sitter writes that "the pale thin" man, etc., would seem to indicate his paternal grandfather.



know his father is kind of anxious too, and I thought if we could get his mind off on to his granddad, it would help things. Talks like an Englishman, doesn't he?

(I don't know.)

I don't know either. It is never safe to guess on a thing like that.  
(No.)

All right. Good bye.

(Goodbye.)

You won't have so much to write out this time.

(You have talked quite a little.)

Oh, I tell you when. Tell him not to think hard about the names. They will come easier if he doesn't think about them. That is the thing he wants, you know. Of course everybody does.

[Pause and Mrs. C. awakened.]

Mrs. C. Mr. Seaman.

Tuesday, April 14, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitter admitted. Pause. Hand reached for pencil.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

I am going to try to write better today for I am anxious to get a few messages that will make my boy feel better and I want to make this a time of cementing and perfecting the tie between us spiritually I am as interested in the life and its affairs and its development as if I had been left [N. R.] in the old relation. I did not realize [Indian] that the spirit life would be so active and participate so uninterruptedly

(Uninterruptedly?)

Yes in the daily life of the ones left but the [pause] knowledge comes with no surprise that is it does not seem to surprise for it seems [moaned] so natural Father i Father i is here O R I am [moans Indian] not quite ready for the test [moans] I wish to try [P. F. R.] [Pause] You know me You know me and I want to say somewhat [Indian; P. F. R. as sheet is turned over] about mother and S—

(S—is it?)

Yes I am rather easier than [Indian] before [pause]

W W you know W and W [Indian] W W and You know W W i Wi Wi William do you re [pause; Indian; took stenographer's hand] I am trying hard to [pause; still grasping stenographer's hand] write my boy [Indian; P. F. R.; let go stenographer's hand; pause]

Have I got it down on the paper

(Who is this?)

I tried to tell you

(Well, I don't remember any William.)

I am not W but I asked if you knew who W—is <sup>351</sup> [moaned; Indian] I am [marks on paper not able to read] cannot get the name down yet will do it soon [N. R.] Boy do you not know me [moaned; P. F. R.]

(Perhaps I do if you could get the name; is it a relation?)

my boy you are my boy [pause] mother mother [pause] mother is with me

(Stenographer: I am not quite sure about that.)

My mother is with me [Pause; P. F. R. Long pause]

(Can you go on?)

[Long pause]

My love to you [Moaned; P. F. R.; moaned; Indian]

(Stenographer: Is this the same person who has been here?)

No no no I am another another [P. F. R.; Indian] F [scrawl] G yes G—Grandfather comes to help [threw away pencil; Indian; pencil reinserted] <sup>352</sup>

[Change in Handwriting.]

I am G. P. I will try and set some of these things right if I can but there seems to be some difficulty in the matter because there are several who are trying to write and they seem to be all trying at the same time but that is not to be wondered at I find two men who are rather earnest in an effort to approach the young man and two women but they do not seem to know how to do what they wish and the young man does not know how to respond and yet not give away his case and so there is a lack of complete union [N. R.] you will know what I mean The currents are not yet lost in each other. It is only a matter of time but time is the most needed [N. R.] factor in this work and yet it is the hardest to get for it is the very essence of energy [N. R.] <sup>353</sup>

(Tell all you want about them. I am anxious to hear who are there.)

<sup>351</sup> There is evidently confusion in the reference to "Father i" and the sitter can make no meaning out of it. The S is not significant, unless it be an attempt to refer to a sister of the grandfather. The sitter has a great uncle William living. Cf. Note 343.

<sup>352</sup> The sitter's mother is living, but his grandmother is dead. She gets "grandfather" through, which indicates a clearer idea of the situation.

<sup>353</sup> This explanation of the confusion by G. P. is interesting, because it recognizes what the notes show to be a fact, tho it is possible that the sitter's answers and queries may have betrayed the fact. There is a knowledge of the presence of two men, which fits the sitter's notes.

Yes indeed I know you are. They are anxious to tell for themselves I take one of the women to be a mother for there is a care and love expressed which is like a mother

(Are you sure of the relationship?)

Not quite but I will tell you more [N. R.] as I find out more. There is one woman who is younger much younger than the other and the two are very close together I think mother and daughter Have you a mother in law [N. R.] over here

(No, I have not.)

It is an usual unusual It is an unusual [N. R.] sort of interest which is so akin to a mother love that I felt it must be either mother or mother in law It may be Grandmother

(Can you get the name in any way that you may give me a better idea?)

I will do all I can It seems so easy to ask for the these things and really is easy when we are [N. R.] all [N. R.] in the same atmosphere of activities but when one is writing there is a submerged feeling much as a diver [N. R.] must feel when under water protected that he may do work and connecting with the friend who is in his natural element by signs and signals This will help you to understand just why we do not at once catch the names or relationships and communicate them to you

(Yes, I understand all you can do is the best you can.)

Yes, of course, and I understand your spirit and your honest endeavor to get something on [N. R.] which to build your belief [moaned] I hoped by [N. R.] changing [N. R.] the current to get a clearer connection for you with your dear ones for they certainly are dear and near I still see the older lady. Yes and she has a very happy and bright look on her face Is there an M connected with you

(Perhaps I do know. Tell more about her if you can.)

Is M the name of your grandmother

(No, it is not, but I think it might be another relation.)

All right. I see this M and the elder lady connected [N. R.] and I go a little farther and see that she has been gone a little time over here, and also that she did not live near here. She has a young boy with her a boy who is in some way connected and she also seems connected with your father

(I think I might place her; I don't know.)

Wait a little till I get a little more. She was a Christian lady and while [N. R.] not decidedly [N. R.] strict was a believer in the Christian tenets [Indian]

(Can you find out which of the churches she belonged to?)

I will try I see a small prayer book in her hand I think it is a book of prayer for on the outside cover is a cross She is a Pros Pros [crossed out each time] Protestant yes but still there is somewhat of form and and ceremony to her

(I can't just place her. Is this the older lady?)

Yes.

(No, I can't place her.)

Sorry for she is quite eager to come Have you an a [N. R.] Ha [Read] an Aunt Mary—

(Is that her name?)

Aunt Ma I think it best for her to write it herself but it looks M a r y a No it is somewhat longer than Mary—

(I think I can place her according to the name, but not according to the other description.)

The other description which fails [N. R.] is the church is not that what troubles you

(Yes, it is.)

I thought so for after I had written about the church she made a protest by but I could not get the right [pause] sect [N. R.] I will not give it up however even [N. R.] if I let it rest a little now It is strange [N. R.] how slowly this group gets hold but we will master it yet

(Can you tell anything about the two gentlemen that were there?)

Yes my friend try [N. R.] and not feel anxiety I know it is hard but it is best to keep as even as possible—The younger woman also is rather persistent Do you know anyone called Ann or Annie

(No, I don't. I can't place that, at least.)

It sounds like Ann.<sup>354</sup>

Now for the two men—One passed away rather unexpectedly and quickly [moans] He is most [N. R.; dropped pencil; moans; Indian]

[*Subliminal.*]

I keep hearing just one word in my ears all the time and that is father, father, father, you know. You know what it means?

(No, I don't know.)

---

<sup>354</sup> The "M," said to be a part of the name of the grandmother, is spontaneously corrected later to Aunt Mary, which is correct. The sitter has an Aunt Mary. The Ann given later is her middle name. She was a Christian but not a Protestant. She was a Roman Catholic. Assuming that the process was pictographic the vision of the cross on the cover of a prayer book might have suggested either Catholic or the Episcopalian branch of the Protestants. The sitter remarks that he was totally ignorant of the fact that the middle name of this Aunt Mary was Ann until his father told him of it after the sittings.

[Cf. Note 356.]

(Stenographer: Can you write more?)

I don't know. Have you got any brother or sister over in Heaven?

(No, I have not.)

Are you sure about that?

(Yes, I am sure.)

Because I keep hearing that—father, father, father, as though somebody calling to a father, you know.

(Yes.)

Well, don't you know anybody over there who would be anxious to get to their father back here?

(There may be several, but I can't place them at the present time.)

I don't know who it is; I can't do any more.

(Are you going?)

I have got to. I can't help it.

(Can you see anybody now?)

Is there somebody in particular you are most anxious to hear from?

(Yes, there is one person I would like to hear from very much.)

Well, is that a man?

(Yes.)

Because all I could see after you answered me the question was a man, a man's hand quite a—oh, quite a good sized hand, you know, it is strong looking hand and rather—I was going to say rather plump, it is not thin, you know, it is rather a strong, well made hand and—

(Yes.)

—and not old; doesn't look like an old hand, looks just like—to look at the hand I would think the person ought to have stayed here a long time longer, you know. Humanly speaking, they should not have gone out. It just comes just like going right out rather quick, as though first thing you know the whole plans are all broken in on and that one's gone.

(Yes, I know.)

That is what I see. Well, that man—he is something to you, you know, and he is—he is so anxious himself, that is what is making all the bother. He was—I was going to say he was impatient; it is not that, but when he started to do anything he wants to do it and you would know that he—he would kind of—if you know what I mean when I say he would get there.

(Yes, I know.)

Well, that spirit is almost overdone in this case, he oversteps rather than under-steps.

(Yes.)

He laps over. But I think he will be better tomorrow. I think he will talk with George and get better.

(You don't see anything of that elderly gentleman who came yesterday?)

Your grandfather?

(Yes.)

Oh, yes, he has been around all the forenoon. He is a good man. He is kind of philosophical man, just takes things in that philosophical kind of way. I was going to say he is a good fellow to have around. I will tell you more—wait a minute, do you know anything about an E, anything connected with you that begins with E?

(E—No, I don't.)

It looks like and sounds something like Ed or Edward.

(No, I can't place that.)

Would that be one connected with that man you want to hear from, because he is the one that put the E up.

(No, I don't think so.)

Is there any place like a location that begins with E that would mean anything to him?

(I can't recall any place just now.)

Like Ed Ed It is some—it is either a place or a person that commences with Ed and it is like Edr Edmoston or some name something like that, and it is connected with him, because he holds that up, that E Ed. He has not been gone so long as this old gentleman.

(Oh, that is not the old gentleman.)

It is the one that went out quick, that broke his plans. There are two men; it is not the same man; you know what I mean.

(Yes, I know.)

Well, one is younger than the other.

(I don't think I can place the younger man.)

One is younger than the other. They are neither very young; one is younger than the other and it is the younger one of the two that is E. I don't mean that he is E but this Ed is connected with him.<sup>355</sup>

(Yes.)

All right.

(Going now?)

I have got to. I am sorry.

[Sitter leaves room.]

---

<sup>355</sup> The sitter knows no Edward, Edmund or Edmoston. The asserted relation to the grandfather is not intelligible.

[But it was asserted *not* to pertain to the grandfather. Edmoston is a town in New York State. Sitter inaccessible for further questions now—1924.—G. O. T.]

I guess they will manage to get something tomorrow. They are making such a desperate effort. He is all right himself, but he don't quite know how, and they don't. First it looked just as if the father was over there. He said he didn't know anything about father.

(I don't know.)

He is a good—

(Yes.)

George likes him too.

(Yes.)

[Pause and Mrs. C. awakened.]

Mrs. C. Mr. Seaman.

Wednesday, April 15, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitter admitted. Pause.]

You see these people?

(No; can you tell about them?)

Yes. [Pause] In a minute [Pause] Did you speak to me?

(No.)

I guess they did then. What a sensitive boy this is. He doesn't show it very much, but he is;—you know what I want to call him—a reverential spirit and sensitive and responsive and all quite within himself, you know. You know what I mean?

(Perhaps so.)

I mean you know what the words mean.

(Yes.) What were you going to say?

(I was going to say there is an article here. Shall we tell you about it or wait?)

That is from the man, isn't it, the article—the man that has been trying to come? You know anybody begins with C?

(Yes, I know several.)

I mean over in spirit land.

(Yes, several.)

Well, wait a minute. I think I can see the rest of it. CH CH I don't know whether that is E or A CHARLES CHARLES That is the name I see.

(I don't know anybody by that name.)

Well, that is the name I see. I guess I had better move on, don't you—scribbler?

(Just as you say.)

[Put pencil in hand]

I don't want it. [whispers] Clark.<sup>356</sup>

[Hand reached for pencil]

I am going to try again to write a little to my boy for I have so much I wish to tell I am not as weak as I was but I do feel as if I had not done as much as I ought to have done It is with a sense of returning to a condition of unfinished work that I write to you I am not at all distressed only quite anxious to help you forward with your work and study. It is a new and wonderful experience to be here at all. I have something to say about your mother and I wish to recall a few things in my own life [Indian] to you There were many things we had in common, and there is a house where I lived which I have a great interest in now for there are so many [Indian] associations connected with my life and it. There are [moaned] three things—the people, the surroundings and the work which I did there. It is a place some distance away where trees and [moaned] outlook are attractive and [P. F. R.] [Marks on paper] [Pause] Put the article on the hand the left hand It may help [Article put on back of left hand; pause] I thank you I am more glad to come than you can think [Indian] My head is better yes better I can see better and I am over the state of unconsciousness I knew all at least most all that was said and done but I could not do what I [breathed heavily] wished to do for I had no power [breathed heavily] to make a move it was not as hard as it seemed F F F [scrawls. Change of Control.] He is still here Got in too far you understand not intentional He keeps saying my boy my boy Yes he keeps saying it over. It is a man of good power and good understanding of many things. I mean by that a man of capacity [N. R.] and there is much he ought to be able to say. He places [N. R.] before me—I am G. P.—

He places before me a —

(All right, I am very anxious to hear anything he has to say to me.)

long dark necktie rather plain [N. R.] like a string tie I should call it and I infer that he wore that style I see a number of papers also as if some unfinished business had been left and as if some affairs had devolved upon you since his passing, and as if there were a constant desire [N. R.] on your part to do just as he would wish you to

---

<sup>356</sup> In response to inquiries about a Charles mentioned in previous sittings the sitter replied that he did not know any one by that name. The persistence of the name leads him to think that it might be a mistake for Cecil, a cousin, whom he had never seen and of whom he had only heard. The fact that led to the suspicion that he may be meant was the reference to the young boy said to be with the Aunt Mary. Cf. Note 354. The name Clark may be an attempt to correct the name Charles. But there is no evidence of this or of any consciousness that Charles is wrong.



do and he has a desire to tell you that he is quite satisfied and pleased with you

(Yes, that is very good; I understand perfectly.)

and he also with the same strong noble faith in you that he would be sure to retain as long as his personal identity is retained

(Can you see what the papers refer to that he has, what business they refer to?)

Yes they are in connection with the affairs of his estate I think and are not quite fully [N. R.] settled as yet. In other words [N. R.] it [N. R.] is a matter still in process and the settlement and final arrangement will be settled to your satisfaction and to his. There were some slight false moves at first but that seems a matter now overcome to a great degree.<sup>357</sup> One more thing I see him in connection with another man still living not you but an older man who must have been in some way associated with him.

(Yes, I think I understand.)

A man whose knowledge of his affairs and his business gave him certain rights and liberties but who has not superseded [N. R.] those rights unless to be too deliberate and too sure of his right to take ample time Sometimes there has arisen a doubt in your mind about him temporarily only but a question It is as you think not really [N. R.] wrong but slow all

(Yes; is there anything said about this other man?)

will be fairly settled in the end It is hard to have the affairs in so [pause] I don't know just the right word but I think amicable complications but complications more complicated by the unexpected death [N. R.] of the communicator The communicator if he had a fault was too much inclined to be sanguine about the honor of those with whom he had dealings a fine flaw [N. R.] in a strong soul but making for slow settlement in your affairs I say this with his knowledge and consent

[P. F. R.] [Breathes very heavily again] [pause] Hor Hor [pause] oh my son I [P. F. R.] love you and will help in the business I am glad it is true that I can come [Cries; moans and throws up arms; pause] I fear no evil for Thou art with me unita Unitari C C Co [pause; many Indian words] I too want to come with him and tell you

<sup>357</sup> Of this passage the sitter writes: "My maternal grandfather wore a black four-in-hand necktie; my paternal grandfather did not. The reference to a 'number of papers' and unfinished business is correct of my maternal grandfather, as was the subsequent statement of my looking after some affairs. I was sorry that nothing could be gleaned as to the nature of the papers, except that they were associated with the estate, which was true of only a small part of them. If the nature of the business could have been obtained it would have been very evidential."

he is quite proud of the way you have done what had to be done—Do not distrust your own impressions for they are from him in most instances and when not from him are from those who are near him for he desires to stand by you in these trials Do you know anything about a railroad

(In what connection?)

a railroad case I think

(No, I don't.)

I see a railroad and some suggestion out of the ordinary about it Was he the body [N. R.] taken anywhere by train

(No. Is there any other connection with the railroad than that?)

Yes there is but I am not quite sure that I can get the solution We seem to be just making good connections but I do not dare hold her the light longer It is possible that he will be able to connect here again and send you a further message If possible he will do that Do you know any F—I think Fred

(No, I don't; in the spirit world do you mean?)

No It seems to be some one in connection with the life you are in It is a younger person I mean

(Yes, I know several by the name of Fred.)

a rather young man with dark brown hair and eyes and rather tall someone he knew<sup>358</sup> I also want to know if some one has used these glasses since he went away

(No, they have not.)

Do you know if some woman has not tried them on

(It might be but I am not certain about that.)

If you can find out do so for he insists it is so there is a wealth of affectionate care which he bestows on you

[Pencil fell; Indian]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Whispers] Harry Please take that away<sup>359a</sup>

(The article?)

<sup>358</sup> The sitter knows nothing as to the man who may be referred to in this long passage. The confusion is so great here that nothing can be made out with certainty. The letters "C C Co" are, the first two, the initials of his own name; and the last two [Co] the first two letters in his surname. He knows nothing of the meaning of the reference to a railroad, nor of any one by the name of Fred that any relative would mention. The description as far as it goes would fit a Fred, living, that the sitter knows, but he does not see any reason for the mention of that person.

Sitter's note: "The syllables you mention, 'Hor,' and the attempt to say something like 'nitarian' or 'Unitarian' have no meaning I can apply to them."

<sup>359a</sup> Sitter knows of no Harry or Henry that would be mentioned or who would try to communicate.

Yes [Took glasses out of her hand]

Goodbye.

(Goodbye. You are going, are you?)

Yes. Did he get through at last?

(Did someone try hard?)

Yes. Two—two all the time trying.

(Who were they?)

The woman and the man, you know, He is a good boy, isn't he; don't tell him I said so, will you?

(The stenographer: He is here.)

Oh, I thought he went out.

(Stenographer: When you want him to go, you say so, won't you?)

Yes, I suppose I will. He will go when I go, won't he? It is awfully funny, I see a—I see first a country place and then I—you know where it is all open and pretty and then I go to a—down a street, it is like a town. I don't think it is an awful big city, but it is like a town, small town, I think—I don't know whether it is suburbs or just a small town, but anyway I don't feel so crowded or unusual or rushed as you would in New York or Chicago or Boston, you know it is different from that, and that is where I go with that spirit, you know, more quiet place like that, you know.

(Yes, I know.)

And I want to go up in a building—I go into a building just a few steps in. Well, I am on the right, you know, as I go—this is when I am on the right of the street and looking out just as we are looking this way, and that is over there, you know, and I go in there and I see quite a number of things around and—but the first thing I see—it is so light, you know, I seem to be looking out towards the light; strange thing—it seems to be exactly this situation regarding the sun and all—it is so funny—wait a minute—I think there is something on the window, you know, like as you look out the window it seems more like—it is not all clear glass, as if something is put on the window—printing.

(Does the little town appear to be near any place like a mountain or a lake or river?)

Yes, it does, I was going to tell you that too. It is water because I can see a peculiar boat, not like a great big thing, it looks more like a—I don't know if I know about boats to tell you, but I saw this thing that goes up with a—it would seem almost like a small size steamer because this has got smoke coming out of it, there is a smoke stack, it is a little thing. If this is a lake I can see banks all around because I can look up high and see some height now and then like high receding places, and it is full of twists, you make twists, and it is very pretty, very pretty

view, and kind of broad, but I see these hills some like banks, beyond there are hills. There are mountains along different places, and is is very picturesque and pretty. When you are down on the water you are really shut off from a high view, because there is a high bank; you understand what I mean?

(Yes, I understand.)

But there is a bridge, I come to a place—I think I can go clear across it. It is a narrow place, oh, lot of bushes. If I was going to name it, I should say it was down on the narrows, because it is more narrow and more woody and they do something at that bridge, you know, like—somebody working there, and it is a peculiar bridge, it is up very high and looks like steel or iron, whatever they make them of, it is not just an ordinary wood bridge, that is what I mean.

(Yes, I know.)

And it is—I see it for a purpose more than for passengers, I don't feel so much like people, it is narrow, you know, rather a narrow one, but there is something done on it. You know that is awfully pretty water, oh, an artist would adore the place, it is so perfectly beautiful, especially in the fall, you know, when the colors come. The water is very black, reflects very plain. What I mean by black, it is so clear and deep and dark that all the colors are just like on a black background, you know.

(Yes, I know.)

It is beautiful, it is pretty. Now that man in the spirit knew about that place because he is showing it to me, and it is familiar to him.<sup>359b</sup> He loves out-doors. He is a poet in his soul. Perhaps he would not take it just the way I do, because he is not so talkative, but he would love it. He sniffs in the air you know, just like a pony that just loves

---

<sup>359b</sup> This long description of a place, bridge, etc., is not recognizable in any way by the sitter.

"My maternal grandfather often took pleasure in recounting his boyhood days to me; but I never heard him speak of anything answering to the lengthy description of the place pictured in such detail in the last sitting. He passed most of his early days in Philadelphia, which, while not built up as it is now, did not, however, agree with the description. During the summer months he would sometimes pay short visits to a relative (an uncle, I think) living in the country (or what is now the suburbs of Philadelphia). He often described these visits to me, saying that this relative had a farm. He also said something of a creek being on the premises. But such things as bridges, boats, narrows, etc., he never mentioned. In fact, even to this day, I know of no place in the northern sections of Philadelphia that would answer to all these attributes."

The sitter's father writes: "I am sorry to say that I can find no place in my memory for anything answering to the long description of the town in the last report. It does not correspond to anything I know of in the life of my father, whether in his boyhood or otherwise."

fresh air and sniffs it in. He does. He is a great sniffer in of the big things, you know, like when he is [undeciphered] You are like that too. You like to see things. Sometimes you would rather be alone than with anybody. It bothers you to have people talk too much, do you know?

(Yes.)

Aren't you funny?

(I hope not.)

I don't mean funny, but you are quite individualized. If somebody likes it just as well as you do you would love it, but if they didn't and talk to you, going on talking about the little things [rather] than the big ones—I will have to go. Do you feel better?

(Yes.)

Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

[Sitter leaves room and Mrs. C. awakened.]

#### Chapter XXI, Series XVII, Apr. 20, 21, 22, 1914

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mr. J. April 20th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sitter admitted. Pause. Sigh and long pause.] <sup>360</sup> Oh what is that? [Long pause.] It is so funny. I always see [pause] such a wonderful sky. [Pause and groan and pause again.]

I see Dr. Hodgson. [Pause.] Hm. [Pause.] Was Dr. Hodgson musical, do you know?

(I don't know.)

I see him take up a musical instrument. It's . . . I think it is a clarinet. It's . . . [pause] I can't see it plain enough to tell whether that is a flute, but it is a long small thing like that. He seems to be blowing it himself. He either had one or he had a friend close to him who used to play it. He used to pick it up sometimes. There is some one with him. It is funny. I got to go. [Pause.] Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

Oh! you are back, ar'n't you?

(Yes.)

[Pause.] Hm. [Accompanied by Starlight laugh.] I thought at

---

<sup>360</sup> The sitter had been present for sittings the previous spring, but he had never been seen by Mrs. Chenoweth, nor was he seen by her this time. I concealed his identity as usual.

first it was Miss Crawford I was talking to. [Pause and reached for pencil. Pause.]<sup>361</sup>

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[P. F. R. Pause, and sigh.] \* \* [scrawls] Enough to fee  
[‘feel’] that God is [pause] at the center and [N. R.] that  
(What is the word before ‘That’?)

and life and death are as steps toward [pause] a more perfect understanding of him. [Struggle.]

[Apparent Change of Control.]

I do want to write to my boy and not dream away the opportunity.  
(All right. I understand.)

I have so many times wondered and pondered over these questions that I find myself at the old task of trying to solve the riddle of the Universe but I am sure the better way [read ‘letter only’ doubtfully] is ... better way is to work out [‘work’ read ‘make’] work ... a few problems first.

I think I may be able to help my son to a life of usefulness and [pause] all that is best and when I can I will make clear my message.

(All right. We shall wait.)

I am not alone as you may guess for there are two with me who seek to communicate with [with] as much [mch] fervent [? ferient? N. R.] desire [N. R.] and love as I have. I have been here long enough to feel some freedom from the demands of the life that was filled to overflowing [overflowing] [P. F. R. and struggle.]

[Pause.] my son I wish to come so strong [strong] to you to say not to [both words not read] you ...

(Word before ‘you’?)

not to you but to him.

(I understand.)

I am not at all troubled about the problems that make up your life except as they blind or open your eyes to the real situation which is so wonderful and new to most of us. I father [pause]

<sup>361</sup> I do not know that Dr. Hodgson was interested in music other than as a man who enjoyed it. I never heard of his playing any instrument. Nor do I know of any friend of his so interested.

[His friend, Dr. W. D. Bayley, informs us that Hodgson was possessed of a fine singing voice and was interested in music and musical instruments of which W. D. B. owned and played several varieties, including those mentioned, but R. H. played none.—G. O. T.]

It is interesting to remark that the subconscious does not at first recognize or remember that I am present, though Mrs. Chenoweth's normal consciousness knew it well enough. The “Starlight” laugh might indicate that this stage of the trance is either helped along by “Starlight” or that the effect of her influence on the subconscious is to establish a definite cleavage usually between it and the normal.

(Yes, I understand.)

and it is with joy I greet you son. I am so happy and so glad to add a word to the [pause] expressions piling up before the world. I have so much to say so much that pours [read 'press'] in on my consciousness at this time. The thing that is most solemn and wonderful is that I am in reality so close to you [read 'your' without excuse] you ... to you. I can see and hear you and can see what is going on all around. I was glad to be free [struggle and distress.] from the illness [N. R.] i l l ... [read] but at that time I felt I must stay for there were so many things to be done and I thought I could [read 'would' and hand pointed till corrected] do no more when the end came but it is not true not true. Work just begins when we [P. F. R.] get here.

(Yes, I understand.)

Your mother I wish to speak of her too.

(Yes.)

and the child the child here with me [written with difficulty.] and one who is left to whom I would send all love from us.

(I understand.)

[P. F. R.] W—[pause] William William [Pause. Indian and P. F. R.]

You know [Neither word read aloud but two thought to be 'Johnson'] You know who he is.

(Not recognized yet.) [Sitter shook head.]

[Pause.] an old gentleman of the mother's family.

(He does not happen to know him, but his mother can be appealed to for information.)

yes I know and am after that sort of work.

(Good, I understand. Just the kind we want.)<sup>362</sup>

I have more to say than I know how to say but the excitement [excitement] will not last and I may then do all I wish for it is quite clear to me [groan] what is needed. I feel as young and strong [strong] and full of vigor as if I had not made the struggle. I do not like to return to the things of sadness and separation and the many changes [Read 'things'] that had to be made [?]. I know how brave [N. R.] you have been ... brave ... you have been and I have been proud and glad of some of the \* \* ['s' and scrawls] work done and yet I know that there is still so much to be done.

---

<sup>362</sup> The sitter's father is dead and his mother living. The fact that the latter is living is not indicated here, but is later. The William is not recognized by either the sitter or his mother. [But note: J. H. H. implies that sitter's mother is living, in his reply as to William.—G. O. T.]

I wish to return to some of the matters farther back in the life.  
(All right.)

One place where we lived and had [pause] s \* \* [P. F. R., pause and P. F. R.] C [P. F. R.] C [pause] \* \* ['C' or attempt at 'a' or 'o'] C [?] o [?] \* \* [Long pause.] tell your mother that I am trying to hep [help] her and she must not feel that she has been left alone to work out this affair which is so important to her. [P. F. R.]

(What affair?)

[Pause and P. F. R. Groan.] [Long pause.] C a ... [purposely not read, tho thinking it a starting of 'California'] [P. F. R.] (Stick to it.)

M M M M [P. F. R. twice and long pause.] <sup>363</sup>

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh! [Distress and very long pause.] Oh, who, who ... What makes me so dizzy? [Pause.] Do you know any one named Ralph?

(Mr. J.: Yes, lots of people.)

Lots of them named Ralph?

(Mr. J.: Yes.)

Any one in the family named Ralph?

(Mr. J.: No, it just happens that way.)

Well, I see R-A-L-P-H. Wait a minute. Take my hand. [I did so.] I mean alive you know. [Pause.] Just a minute. [Pause.] I see another letter following it an S.

(Mr. J.: I don't know.)

S S something like Sh... aw, Shaw, Shaw Shaw, S h ... [whispered] It is a short name something like Shaw. [Pause.] That is all I hear. [Pause.] I can't help it.

(No, I know.) <sup>364</sup>

It isn't a lawyer is it?

(Who?)

This man with you.

(No.)

Well, I see, I think this is alive too, see?

(Yes.)

I see a man with a lot of papers, taken out of a bag. It is like a lawyer's bag and it is some one so close to him that it is like his own. Do you understand? (Yes.) [Pause.] I hear another name Ned.

<sup>363</sup> Here it is implied that the mother is living, which is correct. She was in California at this time. It is not certain that this place was meant by the syllable "Ca." Cf. Note 362. "M" may be intended as the initial of "Mother."

<sup>364</sup> The sitter's father had a lawyer friend whose name was Ralph Phelps, not Shaw. He is still living.



(Yes, go ahead.)

[Pause.] There is nothing to go ahead. That is all I heard.

[Pause.] I saw some eyeglasses. They dropped down here. Is his father in spirit land?

(Yes.)

Did he wear eyeglasses?

(Mr. J.: No.)

I see them drop down here. Are you sure he didn't?

(Mr. J.: He may have worn reading glasses.)

They just dropped down. He is a nice looking man. He has many things to say to him, but I can't seem to get them and I see the letter J. That is so ordinary.<sup>365</sup> I got to go. Don't you wish you had a stenographer?

(Yes.)

Why don't you get one?

(I can't pay for it.)

[Pause.] You can by and by.

(Yes.)

I think so. Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

I could talk more but I hate to bother you so. Something hit me on the head. That father must have had an awful trouble with his head before he went. I am so dizzy. [Pause, sigh. Sitter left and Mrs. C. awakened almost at once.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mr. J. April 21st, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Groans and jerking of breath. Pause. Sitter admitted. Long pause and sigh, pause and reached for pencil. Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

\* \* [scrawl. Groan. P. F. R. Pause.] My boy I come to you with a desire to [pause] make clear to you that I am still your father

(Mr. J.: Yes.)

that death has not robbed us of the most blessed relationship that we may know. It seems hard at sometimes to find myself cut off from the many ways I wish to help but there are other ways constantly

<sup>365</sup> Ned is the name of the sitter's oldest brother. The sitter's father used a magnifying glass at times to read papers, but apparently did not use glasses. J is the initial of the sitter's and of the father's surname. It came in full before [at a sitting in an earlier series].

opening up to me and I am convinced that all we need is to keep as near as possible in thought and that will draw me with more strength to you in times of doubt or fear or need.

I do not need to tell you how glad I would have been to keep my place with you and do the many many things we have planned but do the best you know boy and I will understand and will always be within call.

Is it not quite wonderful after all. I see all at home and have seen the changes and the proposed changes and some I am glad of and some I must do what I can to help. There are so many who wish to advise your mother and yet do not realize the whole situation and I wish I could be sure of her peace and happiness just as she is now. That is not all I have to say. I feel my [pause] emotional [pause] side awakening as who would not at such an hour but I am trying to keep [keep] the clear headed spirit at work. Sometimes it seems that I must rush back to all and deplore what has happened and then I know it is not the right way. I must keep looking forward.

I am not as busy as I always was in the old life and that gives me much time to consider matters for you.<sup>366</sup> I want you to go on for the present at least as you are and after a time the right opening will come to you. I hve [have] in mind several changes which will give you the larger life you are eager for but the preparation is not quite complete yet. I speak of this because I know you have sometimes wondered about going on or making an immediate change. I believe that the change I hve [have] made that is the passing into this life has given me a little more wisdom. I mean a larger view which brings wisdom a more comprehensive view and I would give you whatever light I hve [have].

I am most glad for your study [N. R.] study and attention [N. R.] to affairs—I . . . attention . . . I am not alone. It would be very hard to be alone, but I find so many friends here.

I am not so religious as some here but I believe I seek only the exact truth. One cannot be exact and still be very religious. I use the term advisedly not in the large and real sense of pure religion. I must not talk so much of these things. I have a few points I would like to add to help prove my personal application to this work.

(Good.)

It seems to me it ought to be sufficient for me to say my son I greet you but I am told that this is worse than a police court and I must give my record or be cast out into outer darkness where the unsaved

---

<sup>366</sup> The sitter's father was always a very active and busy man. Some changes were going on at home at this time in preparation for moving to another home.

[N. R.] congregate— . . . unsaved . . . and gnash [N. R.] gnash their impotent teeth. Impotent [N. R.] because . . . Impotent . . . of no use.

(I understand exactly.)

When a man's appendix is of no use the surgeon says let's take them all out but perhaps the better [better] way would be to let the unused parts or outgrown organs atrophy. Perhaps my teeth will do that but they have not yet done so and I do not want to gnash them so I'll stay and try and do as I am told—

I had so many things that are exactly like what other men use that I find it hard to describe much in that line but I do want to speak of those left and my desires for them— I left some matters business— which had to be attended to after I left. Some have already been done some are still unfinished.

(What was the nature of that business?)

You mean what did I do—

(Yes.)

I will try and make it plain. I cannot do equally well over here the business I did before I came here [Difficulty in writing. Pause.] <sup>367</sup> I want to describe a place where I kept some things that had to do with my business—

[Pencil worn out and I had to insert a new one. It almost caused the loss of control. The hand had much difficulty in recovering it and did so only gradually.]

The old \* \* mahogany [P. F. R.] \* \* [N. R., but possibly 'table']

(Old mahogany what?)

\* \* [Indian.] desk [?] and case.

(Mr. J.: I think so.)

no not desk you know what I mean.

(Mr. J.: Yes.)

and where I kept so many things and so many that did not really belong there either. I always hunted there for everything. It makes me [sheet changed] me smile now but I spent long hours there \* \*

---

<sup>367</sup> Readers may note that I allowed the communicator to ramble along as he pleased, and though quite characteristic things are said they do not reach the degree of evidence desired, but the communicator becomes aware of it apparently at the suggestion of those with him. One wonders whether there is as much control of the mind and its associations as when living. If not, the dream state for communicating still may have its defence.

[An apparent disclaimer to being a preacher or teacher lies in the expression, "I cannot do equally well over here the business I did before I came here." After the preceding pages, this is in the line of correcting the tendency of evidence. He was not a preacher or teacher.—G. O. T.]

['too '?] — on deg . . . [N. R.] leg [pause] itimate work. [Indian.] leg . . . [read] yes yes.

(What you you mean by legitimate?) [Thinking he meant 'legal'] yes I know where you are headed [N. R.] headed—

(All right.)

I will get there— I feel your gentle pulling—

(All right.)

[Distress.] I want to refer to a book which was here [so written and read] there— a book wih [with] some records of my own kept by me personally and not done anything with by the help I sometimes used. Wait a minute till I get hold. Do you know anything about a glass to put a magnifying *a* [underscored] glass.

(Mr. J.: Yes.)

which I used sometimes to decypher something—

(Yes, go ahead.) [Sitter nodded assent.]

I had some tough old chirography sometimes you know. [P. F. R. Indian.]

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head.]

and then I want to ask if you know where all my pens used to disappear to yes [to delayed reading]

(Mr. J.: What kind of pens?)

The fountain pens were no good for me they disappeared. I thought he would know the joke about them.

(Mr. J.: Very good.) <sup>368</sup>

and I want to speak of one J [pause] a [pause] \* \* [scrawl] I cannot write it now.

(All right.)

a boy always in trouble— but pretty boy just the same.

(Mr. J.: Mother will probably know about him.)

I wish I could refer to a ring [read 'rug' doubtfully] ring of mamma's [N. R.] mamma's.

(All right. Do so.)

One of some time ago which she liked so much and wore so much not a wedding ring but one brought from another place long ago. I will look up some of these things for tomorrow.

<sup>368</sup> The communicator had an old mahogany bureau where he kept many papers and he was the only one who ever went to it. He spent long hours there, and kept many things there that did belong there. "Legitimate" probably means that they were important business papers and perhaps legal documents connected with the business. He used a magnifying glass for the very purpose indicated. The fountain pens were a standing joke in the family. The father could never keep one because some member of the family would borrow it and it then disappeared. Later a most important incident is mentioned which further explains the joke about them.

(All right.)

I do want to say tho that I am somewhat larger than my boy. I think my coat would not fit him yet H—yslop.

(All right.)

[Pause.] Many books I left too— you know \* \* [scrawl] sh . . . [pause] B [pause] l a c k [pause] B l a c k [distress] you know.

(Mr. J.: I think I do.)<sup>369</sup>

[Pause.] B o . . . [pause] B is it . . . [Hand seized mine and held it some time. Groan, and then released it.] Know all men by these presents.<sup>370</sup> [Pencil fell and hand would not retake it.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh dear, who took him away so quick? You see, see, see [probably meant C in last two instances, as finger was trying to write something on pad.] [Pause.] Wait a minute. C. [Pause. Distress.]

Isn't that heavenly? [Pause.] Who is Carrie, do you know?

(Mr. J.: What is the last name?)

[Pause.] I am trying to hear it. Just a minute. It looks like L [pause] All right. I don't think it is. Wait a minute. [Writing on pad with finger.] Yes it is L [pause] L-A-W [pause] I can't see any more.

(Try it if you can, a letter at a time.)

[Pause.] L-A-W [pause] stops right there. [Pause.] I will see more tomorrow.

(All right.)<sup>371</sup>

Just a moment tho. [Distress] I [pause] Do you know any doctor who would come to your friend?

(Mr. J.: What kind of a doctor?)

I think he is a minister, not a physician, but the name doctor is as if a prefix, but I don't see any medicine about. It is some one that has doctor as a professional name. Is that your father?

(Mr. J.: No.)

Well, he is with your father in the spirit land, right beside him.

<sup>369</sup> Mrs. J.'s Note: "The black covered books were records, they were books used to record happenings at our ranch in California and he may have thought that [son] would remember them." Mrs. J. did not survive until this record was prepared for publication in 1923, so further questions could not be answered.

<sup>370</sup> The expression "know all men by these presents" is a remarkably interesting one, especially as it came spontaneously and without inquiry from either sitter or myself and wholly unknown and unintelligible to me when it came. The sitter gave his father a fountain pen at his last Christmas and in memory of the standing joke in the family, wrote this phrase on the card. It was known only to father and son.

<sup>371</sup> The sitter's mother had an Aunt Carrie, who is dead. The mother's note did not explain the word Law in connection with it. It is evidently a mistake. [The first syllable of last name is Wal,—suggesting Law reversed?—G. O. T.]

He is so near that I thought it was he. I guess he will help him. Goodbye.<sup>372</sup>

(Goodbye.)

I will see you tomorrow. (Yes.) Just as I am going away I see a peculiar vase or an urn. It is something that comes down to a point on a little stand, a black iron stand, it is light colored. [Pause.] I don't know what you call it. It seems like porcelain with a greenish tinge. It comes to a point at the end, and is quite ornamental and fancy. You put things in them. It is something the man is familiar with. It feels like porcelain. It is smooth and has a little sound to it. It is not very big, but it is a peculiar little thing. Do you know anything about that?

(Mr. J.: Yes.)

Used it often. Wasn't he near it?

(Mr. J.: I think so.)

Because I can go by it.<sup>373</sup> [Pause.] Do you know that boy is quite psychic?

(No.)

He gets strong impressions about people and things. That is the reason he seems quite obstinate. He can't help it. He would be untrue to himself if he changed. I see a woman in spirit around him. She has been gone a long time. She looks like a grandmother. I'll kill you, won't I. (Yes.) [Refers to my writing] [Pause and sitter left. Medium awakened.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mr. J.

April 22nd, 1914. 9.30 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Jerky sigh. Pause, and sitter admitted. Long pause followed by a little distress.]

I don't like to see these things. [Long pause.] I see two clocks. [Pause.] Hm, do you know those round faced long clocks. I think they are named something particular like . . . Are there such things as fiddle clocks?

(I don't know, but shall find out.)

Hm, on the wall, you know, but round faced, then slender down. Square, I don't mean square, but oblong at the bottom where the pendulum is. It is quite old fashioned. I can't quite get hold of the name.

<sup>372</sup> The sitter's mother does not know who the professional man may be.

<sup>373</sup> Not recognized by sitter's family. "Yes" was said to encourage, in the hope of finding verification later.

It is a specific term, a name for it and the man keeps pointing to it. [Pause.] It's . . . I don't see the other surroundings in the room, but it is on a light wall, almost yellow it is so light. It is more like a cream color. The room is very light, and has very large windows more like a school room, but it is a big room, an unusual room. Shall I tell you what I see?

(Yes.)

Right next to that and taken out of the surroundings is a small clock. It is brown and stands on a mantel or shelf. It is the same sort and the sweetest little . . . . [long pause and reached for pencil. Pause.] <sup>374</sup>

[*Automatic Writing.*]

Time runs swiftly on [pause and delay in reading.]

[Possible Change of Control.]

My wish to help my spirit son help his son in your world has induced me to come [pause.] at this hour. Strange methods will often be used to accomplish a [groan] task. My son is very earnest about giving his wife a message. She needs the help which his word will give both for her health and [pause] business aside from love's desire which is strong. [Pause.] M [P. F. R. and Indian.] a [pause] r [pause] g [read 'y' tho realizing it was more like 'g,' but read 'y' supposing it intended for name of boy's living mother.] g a r \* \* [scrawl possibly for 't'] y [P. F. R.]

[Change of Control.]

M a r g a r e t.

(Good.) [Sitter nodded assent.] <sup>375</sup>

The other was a mistake.

(I understand.)

but the effort was all right as far as desire went [read 'could'] went—I am here now and want to try and do something more if I can. It all seems so real and easy when thinking about it but it is as elusive as the pot of gold at the end of the rainbow.

(Yes, I believe it.)

I have before me a scarf and pin which I have brought for identification. The scarf is a very dark green with a suggestion of gold in the

<sup>374</sup> The sitter's mother remembers no such clocks in the family, though "there may have been such."

<sup>375</sup> The communicator who broke down was evidently the sitter's grandmother, according to the implication, and the allusion to the father's wife implies that she is still living, which is correct. Her name is Mary, not Margaret. She does not recognize the name Margaret at all.

light and was one I had worn but little. It is not as sporty [read 'pretty' doubtfully] as it sounds... sporty as it sounds and my tastes were rather quiet. [Pause and distress.] so it was all right but I did not buy it myself. It was a gift. The pin was a knot. Do you recall it. [Sitter shook head.]

(It is not yet recalled, but if you can tell accurately what the knot is perhaps it would be.)

a small twisted knot unpretentious and plain and quite like some sleeve cuff links of mine—

(Yes, who gave it to you?)

I think one of the children gave me the scarf. I do not recall where the pin came from. I also want to speak of something which my son is to have later which was mine— D— I have been wanting to write D—

(All right. Go ahead.)

It has meaning D a v i d [P. F. R. Pause, and distress.] D T \* \* [T not clear and not read] T [read 'S'] T you know T— [Pencil fell and hand snapped like Jennie P.]<sup>376</sup>

[Change of Control.]

[Two of the old pencils rejected and I gave a new one never used before, the fact not being known or seen by Mrs. C. at the time.]

you got the best of me and did not let me have the fun of throwing all the used ones away.

(Good.)

I know a new pencil when I touch it. It is good to have you back again and just to show you how glad I am I will give you a little race for your health yes [to reading delayed] you may expect good work on our part when we get at it. The friend who is here begs [N. R.] me ... begs ... to just take a hand a minute. He speaks as if we [were] going to ... we were going to have a card [read 'curt'] game ... card [read 'court'] card... Take a hand is what he said and I forthwith proceeded to do so. He is gaining I think although it may not seem so to you but he is less nervous and wears out energy less quickly and that [change of pencil] that is a gain. Then [read 'there' and corrected as hand pointed] yes [to reading] He is trying to get along with few friends about him but his chief interest just now is in his son who has come [read 'time'] to ... come to help him get at some of the better evidences of his past. It is a man who lived 3 years in 1 right along and so you may as well reason he was much older [N. R.] older than his years when he came here. Whatever he did he

<sup>376</sup> "Scarf, pin, and links not recognized. We do not know any David or D. T.," sitter's mother states.



plunged into it with all his heart and interest and he worked steadily too when he worked and he is still at work. He would not know how to get along without that—

Do you know if he ever had anything to do with the Japanese [N. R.] or . . . Japanese or Chinese people.

(Mr. J.: Something.) [Whispered.] (Go ahead.)

I see a suggestion of their influence about him and he smiled [N. R.] smiled as if he knew somewhat about them. I think too he had some trinkets or curios from that far land [N. R.] far land. The ivory [N. R.] ivory carvings carvings Carvings [Not read each time] Carvings. Those fine balls or fine carvings that are so marvelous attracted him but I think the people as a race did not.<sup>377</sup>

I see also that he must have been a man who knew his [N. R.] his own country pretty well and he has [N. R.] has a great love for trees yes [to delayed reading] large wonderful trees— You know anything about that and he turned [N. R.] naturally . . . turned with interest to all kinds of woods I mean finished woods . . . finished . . . not the growing wood that of course goes with trees but I see [see] him take his hand and run it over . . . run it over any kind of wood with a half caressing movement.<sup>378</sup>

He puts on a small ['small' but read 'smile'] small plaid [read 'plant'] small plaid or checked cap and pulls [N. R.] it . . . pulls it down over his eyes pretty well and starts off across the country as if it were for a pleasure jaunt.

Did he play some sort of game out of doors

(Not recognized.) [Sitter shook head.]

You mean you do not know about this walking for pleasure. (If it was my father he had rheumatism and he walked with great difficulty.) This may have [N. R.] have been an earlier period but I see the cap drawn over the eyes a little and a stick in his hand and a sort of idle strolling around as if it were more for pleasure than for business and it is with this in mind that I asked about the game—I did not know but that it was a golf stick but it may have been a cane.<sup>379</sup>

<sup>377</sup> The reference to the Japanese or Chinese articles is most striking. The sitter's grandfather was American Consul General at Calcutta, India, for ten years and of course had much to do with orientals. He brought home many beautiful ivory carvings, including *balls* that fitted one into another. The children were all born many years after his death, but they all played with these balls.

<sup>378</sup> The sitter's mother says: "I do not think that Mr. J. or his father were especially interested in finished woods or trees, but *my* father was, and spent much of his life collecting woods and planting trees."

<sup>379</sup> The mother of the sitter writes: "I do not know anything about a 'plaid cap,' but knew that both he and his father liked to take long walks. Both carried

I see he has very I was about to say merry eyes— and I will state [so read] still [N. R.] still say that when he smiles his eyes are as merry as a boy's Quite [?] bright and a bit of suppressed fun in them but for the most part he is a busy man about the things that interest him for his own his love for his family was one of the dominating notes [real 'roles' and finger pointed till corrected] in his life. First time [so written and read] came his family and it is just as true today as when he was with them. No life over here is quite complete nor will it ever be until his wife is by his side— I speak of her first because there was a mutual [N. R.] dependence . . . mutual . . . on each other which was very beautiful.

Do you know any one who se [written 'who' and so read when 'se' was added.] name begins with I

(I?) [read with question accent because I thought it might be for 'J,' as I knew this was initial of communicator.]

Yes [to reading] I— It sounds like sabel.

(Yes, go ahead.) [Sitter had nodded head.]

Is it some one near to the father—

(If you can name the relation do so.)

Yes if I can but immediately following is another letter J— which seems somehow to be connected with the father— I think it is Jenne [Jennie and not read] J Jennie like mine. Is there a Jennie connected with the mother who is in spirit life—

(Not recalled now.) [Sitter shook head.] <sup>380</sup>

All right. I'll leave [N. R.] it . . . leave. I must because I can't take it. I think perhaps the father will write a little more himself.

Do you know anything about his watch Yes [to reading] the father's watch—the father's watch I mean.

(Go ahead.) [Sitter nodded head.]

Has the boy got it—

(What do you think?)

I saw the father walk over to the boy and then he held a watch up for me to se [see] and smiled as if in pleasure and so I concluded he had his father's watch and it was the wish and is the pleasure of the father to have it so—

It is a wonderful relation which exists between them. It is the father's wish that the boy go on as was planned. I think he knows what that is—There will be more help coming from the father—

canes for years. Mr. J. had his father's cane. He was fond of croquet. Did not play golf.

<sup>380</sup> The sitter's father had a sister Isabella. The reference to Jennie is not explained unless by the fact that "the sitter's wet-nurse, very much attached to him, was Jennie. Mr. J.'s step-sister Ginie, deceased, was very fond of Isabella."

Once more I get a name. This time F— yes F— I do not get the rest yet. Wait a minute. [Pause.] Two letters I see. F— R— Is F-R-E-D. I think there is more still but . . . F R E D E R I C K <sup>381</sup>

(Go ahead.)

Why go ahead. I told you all I saw.

(I supposed you had more to say.)

All right you wait I'll tell all I know and some of the things I guessed. It is what we have to do—

(Yes, I understand that perfectly.)

I wish the father could get his own name but as yet he has spelled very few— Wait— [Pause.] Who is L [pause] L [pause] Someone close to him. L [pause] Nothing more comes yet—<sup>382</sup> I will give him the hand for a moment but I want you to know that I am still at the task.

I wonder where my crown of glory is. I have not seen it yet. Perhaps my head [read 'hint'] is too big . . . head [read 'hand'] He a . . . [read] to wear a crown and I must reduce [N. R.] reduce [N. R.] reduce it to an ordinary size before I can be fitted or perhaps mine will be a custom [N. R.] made . . . custom made crown which I much prefer. If anything could reduce a head psychic research in a scientific atmosphere would do it.

(I understand.)

There is no [read 'one' and so written] room . . . no . . . for any big heads in that work except for the researchers themselves. They have a size most unusual and retain [N. R.] retain it through all kinds of assault [N. R.] assault. Yes [to reading]

(Yes, we have to or we could not get along.)

I wonder how much it helps you after all— Try a little of my kind [N. R.] kind of conceit and you might improve. There's a chance for improvement even in a psychic researcher but he would never believe it.

(We have to fight so hard that there is no time for improvement.)

All right. I'll take you as you are and wait for angelhood [delay in reading] . . . wait for angelhood to do the rest— [Pencil fell.]

[Change of Control.]

I ought to be exhilarated [*sic*] by that breeze and it does produce a good atmosphere.

['Breeze' is possibly reminiscent of 'Whirlwind,' Jennie P.'s *nom de plume*. The writing here in this new control was perfectly easy and smooth.]

<sup>381</sup> The sitter has his father's watch and has carried it almost always since his father's death. The mother has an Uncle Frederick.

<sup>382</sup> Mrs. J. says: "We do not know anything about the initial L."

I was beginning to feel the depression of not having succeeded as I desired but I do not want to go away with the feeling for I know that it is better for all of us that I have courage and joy and peace. I am not sure that I would return to the old life unless I could bring with me something of the strength and health which I so much needed and tried so hard to get. I did not want to go but now I see a great many things I can do for you both and I cannot be idle— I love you my son and I am glad to be able to even say that to you.

I wonder often if I were not impatient when I did not mean to be but I know you understand [delay in reading] and . . . un . . . [read] I am here to do all I can to bring you help in the burdens [N. R.] that . . . burdens that have fallen on you[r] young shoulders. I love you all. I am pleased and happy \* \* with the arrangement since. I go to \* \* [read 'church' but might be attempt at 'children,' tho doubtful] no since I came here— P a— [pause] P a [Hand relaxed hold on pencil and then recovered control.] G [P. F. R. and long pause.] [Pencil fell and hand reached for mine.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Indian.] Edith. Who is Edith?

(We don't know yet.) [Sitter showed perplexity.]

[Pause.] Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

I wonder if that man had any trouble with his heart? <sup>383</sup>

[Pause.] (Mr. J.: What man?)

[Pause. Sigh and then a smile and pause and a laugh like Starlight's. Opened eyes a moment and sitter left when medium paused a moment and awakened.]

#### Chapter XXII, Series XVIII, Apr. 27, 28, 29, 1914

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

April 27th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Long pause after starting into trance. Sigh, long pause. Indian, pause and reached for pencil.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

\* \* [scrawls. Pause.] \* \* [scrawls and P. F. R. Pause.] W [read as made, but not aloud.] Must I do the same thing over and over again. [Probably said to control.]

<sup>383</sup> Neither G nor Edith are explained by the sitter or his mother. But the father died from severe trouble with the heart.

(I suppose so in order to get it through.)

[Pause.] \* \* [scrawl.] I am a friend and an interested man who seeks the experience which comes here. I am not new to the idea but to this expression of it I am unfamiliar. I know the principle but not the demonstra . . . [read thinking it completed and word was not finished.] My head is swimming. [Nearly lost control and handwriting changed.]

\* \* [scrawls] Wallace [not read aloud, wishing it repeated.] W [?] \* \* [scrawl] A lfred [not read at time.] A R W. [I then mentally read it with assurance, but not aloud.] I seek the experience.

(I am glad to welcome you and shall be very happy to have you free your mind.)

I greet you and I [pause] make [read 'more,' pause and reading corrected.] effort to do what is called for to [pause] attest my visit to you. Patience infinite [distress and groans.] patience [distress and groan.] is rewarded at last in every instance.

How fine and subtle the blending of aura with aura and thought force with thought force until the marvel of dual action is in process [sigh.] A transfusion not a transsubstantiation as one might think. [Pause and groan.]

Liken the trance to anæsthesia [N. R.] ana . . . [read] produced artificially by chloral and then a transfusion of thought force in the manner in which transfusion of blood is performed and the identical [N. R.] identical operation is clear. Neither thought flow is pure but each [N. R.] contends [read 'contents'] each contends for mastery in control of the organ of expression.

the blood of a rabbit transfused with a frog will create a new species but temporarily. One or the other will be clearly defined in the reproduction. The cross breed or hy-brid must have similar native endowment [delay in reading] which . . . en . . . [read] which makes the perfected specimen possible. The freak is the result of the imprompter [so written and read] imperfect harmonial blending.

I think this whole matter of contact between the finer forces of man may be likened to the example I have given. The allied species more easily blend and the real alliance [N. R.] alli . . . [read] is not only intellectual but spiritual and the freak expressions are the mis . . . [pause and not read at time] mal [read 'most' doubtfully] mal [read 'much' doubtfully] unions . . . mal [underscored and not read] mal-the hybrids are the completer [Not read at time] transfusions producing the wonders of the world in art and literature and science and psychic phenomena. [Writing became difficult and indistinct and lost control.]<sup>384</sup>

<sup>384</sup> Mrs. Chenoweth had mentioned to me purposely her knowledge of the death

[Change of Control.]

[Hand grasped pencil with energy and difficulty.] He will come again.

(All right.)

[Handwriting in Jennie P.'s style. Hand seized mine and there was some distress and groans, and then a pause.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh how easy he went away. [Pause.]

[I mentally wished for G. P.]

[Pause.] How easy he went away. [Pause.] Do you know anything about a blue lily?

(No.)

I see one laid right down here. [Pause.] Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

You didn't get what you wanted, did you?

(No.)

Did you want a man?

(Yes.)

A man that wanted to say something particular?

(Yes.)<sup>385</sup>

\* \* \* \* [speaking too rapidly for me to remember it at time.]

(Wait a minute.)

[Pause.] Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

I guess he will come tomorrow.

(Yes.)

Something else was important.

(Yes.)

[Pause and awakened.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

April 28th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Long pause, sigh and long pause, followed by a groan with sound of 'Hm', pause and reached for pencil. Pause.]

of Alfred Russell Wallace at the time that it occurred, thinking that he might appear as a communicator, real or alleged. I made a note of it at the time. There is nothing in what comes from him here that would appeal to the Philistine as evidence, but the message nevertheless shows familiarity with biological and other analogies not at all natural to Mrs. Chenoweth. The doctrine of fused or interfused personalities here remarked is not her own at all and is quite foreign to her usual way of thinking about the subject.

<sup>385</sup> I had hoped to have another man as communicator and, though the subliminal promised him for the next day, he did not come, as the sequel shows.

*[Attempt at Writing.]*

[Distress.] \* \* [scrawl. P. F. R., pause, distress and groan.]

*[Return to Subliminal.]*

I don't like these rocks.

(What?) [I had not heard word 'rocks'.]

I don't like all these rocks falling on me. [Pause, distress and groans.] Please don't. [Pause.]

*[Automatic Writing]*

I w . . . will try to come to [P. F. R.] you soon [not clear.] I am glad of the opportunity to get to this place at last at last.

(All right. I shall be glad to hear from you and to hear just who you are.)

you are kind to help with your patience. I have tried and failed and tried again. all your friends here have given me greeting and gave me [sigh and groan] at last a chance to try the experiment. [Distress and groan. Uttered 'Oh to die'] I am Annie Bright and I know right well I am usurping. [N. R.] the . . . usurping the time which you have \* \* ['ampler' ?] use for but I am as interested in your department of this great philosophy as I was in my own and I miss the work and the interchange of thought and would establish relations if possible between other centers of [distress and groan] influence. I always appreciated the scientific side of the work and always hoped [read 'helped' tho 'l' was omitted as often] to . . . hoped . . . have some friendly experiments with you. I do not yet feel that I can [read 'am'] can make any report on the much discussed Bailey matter, but I am aware that you do not agree with my past experiences on the matter. I have more light on these things than I did and yet I was not as gullible as I was accused of being nor was I working simply to support my own undertaking either as a sensational test [?] to sell my publication or get bequests from the combination. I was always on the watch for an explanation and when some of B—'s accusers [N. R.] accusers made [pause] statements I [distress and groans] carefully made note of what was said and I think I weighed well the evidence but it takes time and money to feret [ferret] out some things. I am as firm for truth as you are and wish to have everything as near the exact and scientific expression as I can get it.

Perhaps I am not as keen to detect the ways of the magician as some who have made a more extensive [read 'exclusive'] study . . . extensive . . . of legerdemain but I will not admit that my belief in the miraculous was too strong. It is faith which produces results faith yes

I would have been glad to stay longer for I had some experiments of my own which I was quite some interested in. My good friend W. T. S—— is with me very often in the effort I make to give my friends the evidence of my presence.<sup>386</sup>

I have almost more things in the way of tests that I could give than [read 'then' and 'there'] than many of your friends and I expect if I am given opportunity that I may prove a good communicator in the personal identity contest.

(All right. That will be welcome.)

It is rather strange to feel the isolation of this sitting. everything is so strange and usual ['unusual' ?] to me but it seemed to be a time when I could come. I was an automatic subject myself.

(What type of it?)

Writing and impressional speaking [N. R.] never [read 'new' as it was partly superposed] speaking never trance never lost my consciousness. Is it important to do so.

(No, I think not.)

I understood [read 'understand' as it was partly superposed] that ... understood ... that some of the best work done by Mrs. V and Miss M— was done while both were in normal [N. R.] waking conditions ... normal. I tried and apparently my own hand [read 'kind' doubtfully] was ... hand was used but I see you Americans [N. R.] Americans have a penchant for the deep trance. I shall make a study of the difference. Perhaps it is because you make it a matter of business or professional work.<sup>387</sup>

<sup>386</sup> Mrs. Chenoweth knew that Mrs. Annie Bright, the editor of the *Harbinger of Light*, in Melbourne, Australia, was dead. She knew in general also her position on Spiritualism, but had only casual knowledge about her. She might have guessed her acquaintance with Mr. Stead. She might also have guessed or known Mrs. Bright's relation to Bailey and his mediumistic performances, so that the communications have not the evidential touch that is necessary to defend them.

The most interesting thing to note is the attitude she takes on the experiments with Bailey. She had been instrumental in the publication of accounts of them in her paper and in every respect appeared to accept them at their face value. She is apparently sceptical here, or at least in the mood of one who has found out something she did not see when living.

Mr. W. Britton Harvey, owner of "The Harbinger of Light," states: "Mrs. Bright was certainly convinced of the genuineness of the phenomena at Mr. Stanford's circle through the medium Charles Bailey. There is reason to believe, however, that she suspected Bailey might resort to deceit elsewhere if it suited his purpose to do so. She, however, was naturally very reticent on that point, so I doubt if she had anything more to go upon than mere suspicion."

<sup>387</sup> [Note omitted by J. H. H. supplied by G. O. T.] Mrs. V. refers probably to Mrs. Verrall, of England and "Miss M." to Miss Miles of England, both S. P. R. psychics.

Note of Mr. Harvey: "I cannot find out that Mrs. Bright knew of any medium named "Miss M." There is, however, in Melbourne, a well-known medium named Mrs. Morrison, whom Mrs. Bright knew well."



(I suspect that the guides are the ones that prefer the trance and it does have one advantage and that is that the normal consciousness does not know what comes through.)

Yes of my own experiments I was a part and an interested observer and my own critic and commentator.

(I understand.)

I had no [P. F. R.] colleague to assist as you are doing. It may be that the way you work there is less tendency [N. R.] tendency to perpetuate the ideas of the experimenter.

(I understand.)

I do not yet know but I assure you I am wide awake now to the situation its need its importance its significance and I am [sigh and groan] not alone in this interest for a little group of new born spirits who are less conservative than the old board of P. [pause] R. S. make lively times for some of those who held the fortunes of the British Society in their hands—

(I understand.)

Richard Hodgson usually stood with the conservatives tho he had a right to break away from severe restraint and make some new paths [N. R.] paths [read 'parties'] p a t h s ... for his phrophets [prophets]. I am beholden to him however for his [so written and read] this courtesy so I shall not be too critical of his methods.<sup>388</sup>

(Capital, capital.)

It is a joy indeed to be able to express so freely. Yesterday I was here also and one of the new borns with some slight scorn for the too conservative was here ... was [not read first time.] ... and I saw him make a record which pleased me but I think I am doing as well for myself as he did— For some of those tests I must return again but I want to speak of two pictures [N. R.] pictures which are in the Editorial rooms.

(All right. Go ahead.)

One of mine and one of W. T. S.— and one of me [distress and groans] rearranged since my transition. [Groans and 'Oh, Oh!']<sup>389</sup>

I do not realize that I make her groan. I feel very well and happy [N. R.] m ... happy myself but I hear those groans.

<sup>388</sup> This is a tactful and characteristic reference to Dr. Hodgson. It is possible that each had to undo some of their earthly convictions, though in opposite directions.

<sup>389</sup> Note of Mr. Harvey: "Portraits of Mrs. Bright and Mr. W. T. Stead were hanging in the editorial rooms of the *Harbinger of Light* at the time of Mrs. Bright's death. Mrs. Bright's son visited these rooms at the time of his mother's death and took these portraits away with him on his return from Melbourne to Brisbane, where he resides."

(Yes, sometimes a spirit produces unconsciously such effects.)

Strange is it not that effects are produced on snrive [sensitive and so read and not corrected] people and if it is true when we are working like this and have a trance [N. R.] band [N. R.] trance band to help what must it be in the world of untrained and unrestrained influence—

(Yes indeed.)

What sin [N. R.] sin. What sorrow what sickness must result from the impact [Pause.] So much to be done to enlighten the world. Oh it is when I realize the enormous amount of work to be done I long to be among my friends again working as of old night and day. I am working perhaps as effectively but one longs to feel the impulse of contact—

(Yes, I understand.)

This will help me very much—. I have become acquainted with the spirit you call Whirlwind—

(Good.)

I knew somewhat of her before I came here.

(Where did you get the knowledge?)

Read [written 'real' and so read] Read about her. I saw some of your reports, your printed reports. I knew you somewhat though [so written and read but hand pointed till read 'through' and did not change] your work and some correspondence which threw light on your plans.

(With whom was this correspondence?)

With [pause, groans, and Indian.] some of my American friends. I did not feel sure that I knew you but I gave some press notices to your work. Do you not recall it.

(Yes I do.)<sup>390</sup>

Some good notices I flattered myself I gave you (Yes, that is true.) for I saw what you were doing and was sure you would get the light on some problems which we were all stumbling over. We all have our own way of working towards a point [read 'joint' and hand pointed till corrected] and even if we disagreed in some minor detail what matter our efforts were united [N. R.] united on the same spiritual achievement—

(Yes, that is correct.)

I would like to stay longer but R. H. is hinting that I am over—

---

<sup>390</sup> What is said about Whirlwind or Jennie P. is extremely probable, as our *Journal* was on the exchange list with the *Harbinger of Light*. But Mrs. Bright never communicated with us personally and must have received the information mentioned as coming from American friends from others than ourselves. She did make mention of our work occasionally. It is not at all probable that Mrs. Chenoweth knew anything of this, though we may suppose it conjecturable.

staying but depend upon it I shall return when there is opportunity (Yes, do so by all means.) and I shall not forget not that I am to test my wit [N. R.] wit and memory and outdo if I can some of my male confreres.

(Good.)

I took my stand among them when living and I must fight my battle now that I am an [N. R.] arisen . . . an . . . spirit. [Indian and distress.] Very sincerely, Annie Bright.

(Many thanks.)

Aust . . . [Pencil fell. Distress and groans.]

[*Subliminal.*]

I don't know what dress to wear. [Pause.] I don't know what dress to wear at the reception. [Long pause. Hand reached for mine.] I guess I can't go to the reception, too ill. [Pause and sigh.]

Didn't you see the ocean?

(No.)

I can. [Pause.] I see a peculiar little tree. They seem to call it a thorn tree. I never saw one like it. [Pause and sigh.] I'm back. [Pause and opened eyes and shut them and reached hand into air.] What is that thing? Why it is just like a monument. [Hand points in air again.] It looks like an Egyptian obelisk [Suddenly awakened and remembered alluding to an obelisk.] <sup>391</sup>

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

April 29th, 1914. 9 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

(Cough, long pause, sigh, long pause.) This gentleman is trying to do something. I don't know what. [Pause.] I keep seeing his hand. [Pause and groan, with sound of 'Hm,' and reached for pencil.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

\* \* [scrawls like short hand.] [Pause and 'Oh I don't know this man' spoken.] I will ['I don't know him' spoken.] try ['Please take him away' spoken.] and come as I have been expected but have been kept away by the work.

(I welcome you and shall be happy to know just who you are when you can tell.)

Yes will do what I can as soon as I can. The demand for time here is very great. Each one feels his case most important and [Indian

<sup>391</sup> The allusion to a thorn tree and an Egyptian obelisk is not intelligible.

and pause] so little can be done at a time. [Period inserted.] I know how necessary [N. R.] the . . . necessary the evidence is but sometimes in the stress of getting a message through we fight even to give our cognomen. [Period inserted.]

I am with R. H. and the group of workers and I know that I am supposed to report this week. [P. F. R., distress and pause.] I am not new to the work for I have tried before but not very well done. [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] I keep on.

(Yes do so, and I shall help by my thought.)

I feel your help. [Period inserted.] I am not sorry to \* \* [P. F. R.] M [P. F. R.] be here for I had lived as most men and had to begin sometime to live this life. Do you know H [Pause and P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

H [pause] enry and no.

(Stick to it.)

not Henry but H [pause] H [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it. You will get it.)

[Pause.] H [pause] \* \* H [long pause. Indian.] a [?] [pause] H e r c [pause] I am so slow.

(All right. That makes no difference, if you get the name that will be the best start you can make, so stick to it.)

you are [pause] good to me H [groan and distress. Pause.] e [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] \* \* [short heavy line started like 'i' which would have been correct, but was not read.] H e r \* \* [possibly 'e']

(Spell it a letter at a time and do not try to give the whole name at once.)

[Pause.] I hear but do not understand.

(All right. I note that several letters have been given, but not in their proper order and so I thought you might have thought the whole name at once, and hence I advised that a letter at a time be thought clearly and it would then be spelled out.)

I begin to see what it means. [Period inserted.]

(All right.)

H is one and e and C and r and M [Not read but at once erased.] a [?] l [so read] no not l— but [long pause.] H \* \* [scrawl] H C E R I am trying hard.<sup>392</sup>

<sup>392</sup> I had hoped to hear from the deceased member of our Board of Trustees on the first sitting of this series, but, as if to eradicate the claims of telepathy, the

(Yes I know it and patience will bring it out all right.)

[Pause.] H C h a r e s [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

f l e s.

(Charles, is that Charles?) [Thinking of Mr. Jones.]

C h a r l e s.

(Yes, all right. Go ahead.)

and [P. F. R.] (Stick to it.) [Pause.] J [P. F. R.] J o n e s  
[written 'J s e n o' but with letters also in proper order on pad.]

(Charles Jones.)

is here.<sup>393</sup>

(Good, stick to it, you will get it all right.)

[Long pause.] \* \* yes so far all right.

(Yes I know that.)

and a friend at [Indian] core of being [N. R.] being. [Pause.]  
My friend I come to you to make good a promise and to prove myself  
able to overcome the [pause] difficulty of [pause and groans.]

(Communicating?)

yes.

(All right. May I ask a question?)

Yes.

(How were you associated with Mr. Jones?)

[Pause.] My own affairs brought contact [P. F. R., groan.] and  
business. We talked this as two soldiers inlisted [N. R.] in a com-  
mon . . . inlisted in a common cause. [Indian and pause.] I am  
more conservative than J but am as anxious to make the trial as he.<sup>394</sup>

(I believe it.)

I did not think it was so slippery. [Pause.] I am going to [dis-  
tress] tell you what a surprise it was to me to find myself here.  
[Period inserted.]

(I understand.)

I thought I was to do more work before I got through but the call  
came suddenly and I was gone. [Distress.] I have so many things to

powers that be ignored my mental wish. Evidently the attempt here is to give his  
name. All the letters that were given, except M, which was erased, are in his name  
But he did not succeed in getting all of them.

<sup>393</sup> Mr. Charles Jones was also on the Board of Trustees with him and Mrs.  
Chenoweth knew Mr. Jones personally and as on the Board. I had asked that a  
friend of Mr. Jones might communicate, so as not to reveal anything more of his  
identity. Mrs. Chenoweth never heard of this friend or knew that he was on  
the Board.

<sup>394</sup> This friend did have business relations with Mr. Jones other than association  
with psychic research. He was decidedly more conservative than Mr. Jones, who  
lost his head on the subject. But this friend never got beyond the sceptical stage.

speak of. My affairs money and the way things are being settled. I am consci [Pencil fell and hand acted as if Jennie P. would come. I gave a new pencil, but writing went on under same control.]

I am conscious and glad I did what I did but I am making an awful time of it.

(I understand the difficulty, and only hope to have on paper what will help me to say to your friends who it was that tried to communicate. If you could say specifically how you were associated with Jones in this work, it would tell.)

[Pause.] You want me to write about the office which he held and which I held.

(Yes, go ahead.)

I know about the board and his Presidency and my work with him at that time.

(Good, go ahead.)

You are S— He— P— and L—[?] I— [or T—?] T—[or 'L'] no you mine was two letters but I had a good many papers to countersign. [Indian.]

(You mean that you countersigned many papers in another office.) yes.

(Can you tell who the friend was at the head of that office or what the office was?) [Thinking of name and Tax Commissioner.]

I had a business aside from the American P. R. S. (Yes.) and yet I was associated on that board too and if I ever get through what I wish I will have both things written here. [Pencil fell, distress, long pause and sigh.]<sup>395</sup>

[*Subliminal.*]

I see a great big letter B. Do you know what that means?

(No.)

Don't you honest? ((No.) Well, I see it.

(All right. Get more.)

[Pause and groan.] Do you know anything about a bank. I see something that looks so much like a bank, a little iron grating, just like a bank. Do you know anything about that?

(It depends on what the relation is.)

Oh yes. Let's see. Don't you know anything about Broad Street? (Where?)

I don't know. I suppose New York. I didn't know any other Broad Street.

<sup>395</sup> The friend was a member of the Board, as stated. Mr. Jones was the President, but had resigned the place a few days before he died. Mrs. Chenoweth knew he was President, but not more. I ascertained from his superior in the Tax Com-

(No.) [Pause.] (Yes I do.) [Thinking of Philadelphia.] <sup>396</sup>

[Sigh.] I got to go.

(Can't you spell out the name of the communicator?)

[Pause.] I don't see it. [Pause.] I hear a name but I don't think it is the communicator. I think it is George, George P.

(Perhaps he can spell it.)

Wait a minute, perhaps he can. [Long pause.] Wait a minute. [Hand changed hold of mine and tried to write with finger.] I keep seeing letters now. I will tell you just what I see. Wait a minute. [Long pause.] Please show it to me. George, please, so I can see. [Pause.] H [written with finger on pad.] I don't think I can see it. It looks like a [pause] wait a minute. [Pause.] T [pause] I can't get it. S [whispered] I can't get it.

(All right.)

[Pause.] If I could get it, it would come plainly. Do you know any one that commences with H?

(Yes.)

[Pause.] Wait a minute. I hate to ask you to wait so long but I must wait till it comes. [Pause.] Horace [?] [Pause.] Well I think it is a W in that name farther away than H.

(That depends on who it is.) <sup>397</sup>

It isn't a Howard is it?

(I don't know.)

Well, I thought it was all right. [Pause.] Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

[Pause and awakened.]

missioner's office that this friend did have to countersign many papers. The letters S P L I and T are not intelligible. As spelling a word they mean nothing.

The meaning seems to be as follows: "You are S[ecretary] He P[resident] and L. [another board member] T = Tax Commissioner. . . . Mine was two letters [Assistant Tax Commissioner]." The countersigning of papers was done by him as such assistant from time to time.—G. O. T.

<sup>396</sup> The letter B is not intelligible. There was a bank-looking office with the iron grating to it next to the office in which this friend worked. There was a direct connection and it was in some way connected with the office. There is a Broad Street in New York and also Broadway. But whether the latter is meant is not determinable. We met on Broadway to transact the business of the Board. He may have been trying to indicate that fact.

<sup>397</sup> H is the initial of the man's name, but S and T are no part of it. Horace is not intelligible, even as a mistake or confusion for the name. Howard is nearer and might be a confusion, though it has no definite resemblance to the name. There is a "w" in his first Christian name, that might give rise to the name Howard, this first name being Edward. But he got no nearer to his name.

## Chapter XXIII, Series XIX, May 4, 5, 6, 1914

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

May 4th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Long pause.] Don't get the sitter yet. [Not heard.]  
 (What?)

Don't get the sitter yet. I'm not quite gone. I thought you had started. [Groan and pause.] [I had no sitter present to bring up.]

Do you know any one named John who would be with the people for any special reason?

(With what people?) [Thinking of a deceased person connected with the person about whom I wanted Dr. Hodgson to communicate.]

With the group around you. Wait a minute. Perhaps I can get the rest of the name. [Pause and distress.] M A C [pause]  
 (M—A—C.)

[Jerk in breathing.] F A R [pause] L A N I can't see the last letter. There is more. [I spelled it as given.]

Yes another letter. [Pause.] I don't know whether it is D or E. I can't see it. [Pause.] D.

(I shall inquire. Is Hodgson there?)

Yes.

(Do you know this John, Hodgson?)

No. [Pause.] No. [He did know something about the person I had in mind.]

(I can't tell anything about him unless you know something about his relations.)

Yes, C. J. knows him.

(All right. I don't.)<sup>398</sup> Yes. (If possible, Hodgson, I would like to have you today or some day this week.)

<sup>398</sup> I do not know any John MacFarlane. "C. J." stands for Charles Jones, who may have known a John MacFarlane, but I have no means of ascertaining whether he did or not. The name may be MacFarland, as the record gives us a choice of "d" or "e" at the end. [G. O. T. looked up article by man of this name:]

John Muirhead Macfarlane, evolutionist, 1855—. Author, amongst other works, of *Three Appreciations*: "III. The Legacy left us by Darwin and His Collaborators." Delivered before the Linnean Society, the Faculty and Students of Franklin and Marshall College, and citizens of Lancaster, Pa., February 27, 1909.

"The Appearance of Darwin's 'Descent of Man' caused Wallace [*italics mine*].—G. O. T.] to indicate his dissent to the conclusions on man's mental and moral sides. . . . Wallace considered 'that there is a difference in kind, intellectually and morally, between man and other animals; and that while his body was undoubtedly developed by the continuous modification of some ancestral animal form, some different agency, analogous to that which first produced organic life, and then originated consciousness, came into play in order to develop the higher intellectual and spiritual nature of man.'" (p. 58 of MacFarlane's address.)

These ideas would be consonant with those of Mr. Jones as known to G. O. T.



He smiles. [Pause.] He heard you.

(All right.)

It's time. [Pause.] Well, I don't think he is coming today. I feel so funny. [Distress, pause and reached for pencil.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[P. F. R. and pause.] I will come today. I did not think of it but it is as well now as any time and one is never sure of what may turn up in this work.

(I understand. There are many things to be talked about which I have not had time to bring up and as soon as you are ready I would ask questions to bring out what I want.)

Yes in a moment. I also have some things I have wanted to say. I did not make an attempt as I hoped some one else could be able to get through and do what was needed.

(All right. You have your say first.)

[Pause.] I do not want to use up the energy until I have answered what you have on your mind. there will be time enough for me afterwards.

(All right. Are you people, the Group, doing anything elsewhere that you want me to know about?)

We have made a few attempts at a former place but not yet do we want to have [N. R.] have you bothered about it.

(What do you mean by "a former place"?)

A place were [N. R. and erased] where we have seen work going on in the past. I do not refer to the Piper light but to a light not as much developed as that and one where the power is of another type by type I mean type of receiving the message.

(Specify the type.)

and again [N. R.] I ... again I do not mean that it is another form of our work for it is writing but the power of receiving is more of the auricular [probably 'auricular' intended] than visuel— It makes a vast difference to us in our work just what type of receptivity the light has for we must rearrange and modify some of our lines in order to have the message carry—

(I understand, and ask whether the light is entranced or ...) [Writing began without waiting for me to finish.]

no not as in this work here or as in the Piper light but a sort of [Pause and Indian.] unconscious activity [N. R.] activity in one direction while the other faculties remain [read 'within' and then 'retain'] remain normal. You know that type.

(Yes I do.)

Interesteste ... [read 'interested' and not corrected] us because

of the unusual and unnoticed [N. R.] unnoticed [Indian and difficulty in retaining control] manifestations. It is not here I mean not in this city— You know that we often try out a new light and some report of our work may reach your ears but if we find sufficient [neither word read] find suff . . . [read] power we will connect with you and urge you to take the case up when some very good evidence which may be only a spasmodic impression from us quite clear as to our identity but only a trial [read 'oral' doubtfully] trial to see what we may do. [Pause.] Have Have I made that involved sentence complete.<sup>399</sup>

(Not quite, I believe, but don't try. I want to ask if any one is connected with that case that you knew.)

Yes and though . . . [read 'tho'] that . . . through . . . knowledge we made more definite effort but you and I know that the steady and onward growth and revelation comes after definite knowledge and practice has been given to one case. I cannot help making the effort to get through sometimes any more than I could when I was in the place you occupy but I always or rather usually went with a mental protest and was accused of just that attitude and supposed to hinder [N. R.] hinder the work because of it.

(Can you do anything to identify that person you knew?)

I will try not because I desire you to take up the case but because the cross reference may be useful.

(Exactly what I want.)

I have never lost sight of the importance of such links [N. R.] in . . . links in the chain of evidence although I am not always as clear in the exposition of it. I refer to a lady of the past life who has some gift of clairaudience and vision and in the combination can be used at times but I am not troubled about anything unless it may be the troubled feeling of the attempt that always leaves [read 'lives'] leaves on the subconscious mind a sense of something incomplete [so read] incompleated.

(Can you tell anything about your acquaintance with her?)

I will try and make it clearer for it is not quite definite yet.

(Yes, make it clear by all means.)

A lady of rare discernment in some matters not old not large very—sincere having had experiences with her own friends over here with some knowledge by me of such experiences. I ought to be able to tell something about some of those friends

---

<sup>399</sup> The person I had in mind here is accurately described. She does automatic writing in normal consciousness with such abatement of it as to permit the automatism but to exclude knowledge of it until written. She is quite clairaudient and often gets the messages or supplements of them in that way.

(Yes, do it.)

who had given her help at another time and place and with some measure of assistance from me.

(Yes, where was that?)

At the old place where we worked together and because of a sympathetic understanding of the work and its needs, its beauty and wondrous helpfulness. I found myself in a sympathetic vibration.<sup>400</sup> It is quite easy to impress on her images of the past which are no more recollections of her mind than mine. I have association with two of her friends one a gentleman who came with R— R i c . . . R e c t o r

(Good.)

I do not need to tell the other name but do so almost without effort Emperor (Good.) and Emperor has also been with me to her at least I have been with him to her and I have sometimes felt if some of her other lines of thought and interest did not forbid [read 'set forward' doubtfully] not . . . ['forbid' read] she might have something of the marvel of the power. I shall try to report what I have been communicating here.

(All right. I shall not tell her of this at present.)

no it will be better not to. I find the word spasmodic a good one to use and she will clearly understand what I mean because there is not regularity to the work. Sometimes I am able to project a desire to write and she receives it and yet does nothing more until some time afterward. [Distress.]

I wish to say something about her mother. (Go ahead.) I will if possible for the work is suggested to her and to me—

(Explain why.)

Here with me.

(What do you mean by 'here with me'?) [Father dead, but mother living.]

Wait a minute. I mean I know her mother and I am with her often and will help her all I can. [Indian and distress.] Ask her if she knows one called Anna [read 'Annie' and apparently so written.] A n n a— yes [to reading] and I wish to refer to an evening episode not two weeks old when she darkened the room a little for better contact with us. It was too late she was too tired and the influence ded

---

<sup>400</sup> The lady conducting the experiments with this other psychic, a private person, is an old friend of Dr. Hodgson. She had many sittings with the Piper case under the Emperor and Rector régime. She is quite psychic herself and gets impressions much as described. He always trusted her discernment. She was not old and not large, and was especially sincere and interested in getting messages from her friends and interested in the work.

[for 'died' but read 'did'] died away in the effort but [read 'and'] we were ... but ... satisfied to have called her.

I have said your name to her on several occasions and I wish to say that I see the two rings on her finger.

(What rings?)

her own.

(All right.)

[Pause.] I think that is all and yet I am recovering a few more incidents as I write.

(Go ahead.)

I have in mind a conversation where sorrow was most evident to her. Early in our acquaintance but later the tears [N. R.] were ... tears [written 'Cars' and so read] tears. gone R. H. ['H' not clear and writing labored.] [Pause] H [N. R.] H. [Pencil fell.]<sup>401</sup>

[*Subliminal.*]

[Gurgling in throat as if trying to speak. Pause.] A beautiful lady. [Pause and groan.] I see the spirit of a woman with dark brown hair parted and down very low on her neck and low necked gown. She has most beautiful shoulders. It is a side view. She is looking at those pages of writing. It must be a picture of her taken in that gown and she is leaning forward a little and it is a side view. She is beautiful.

(Who is she?)

I don't know. She belongs to the one to whom this message belongs and she has been away sometime and she is so young, Oh, so lovely. [Pause.]

Wait a minute. [Pause.] The name sounds like [pause] Sophia or Sophronia. It is an old fashioned name and begins with S and I would think it was like Sophie or SSSS [hissing sound] Sophria, Soprhia. I can't ... Soprhonia. [Smile.]<sup>402</sup>

Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

[Pause.] You haven't been talking about horse cars have you?

(No.)

[Pause and hand reached for mine.] Who is Julia? [Awakened.]<sup>403</sup>

I have a suspicion that the allusion to "horse cars" was aroused in the subconscious by the absurd reading of "tears" above as "Cars."

<sup>401</sup> Note not made by J. H. H. and source not discoverable now.

<sup>402</sup> Note not made by J. H. H. and source not discoverable now.

<sup>403</sup> The name Julia here might have three pertinent interpretations, one of a deceased Aunt of mine, a second of a friend who died last spring and from whom I

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

May 5th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sigh, long pause, groan and long pause.] Oh! [groan and long pause.] We are going to have . . . . [pause.]

("We are going to have"?)

[Long pause.] Oh yes. [whispered.] If we can keep steady we will have some strong and clear and definite work by and by, won't we? (Yes.)

The best work the world has ever known. [Pause.] Hm. [Pause.] If I can keep my own personal [pause] self out of it all. I can lose myself in the great work. That is the only thing to do, isn't it?

(Yes.)

That is what I try to do. [Pause.] Not at all important. [Sigh.] How they do gather around here. Do you remember a spirit who came to talk. I think a spirit named Hayes.

(Yes.)

Has he gone over?

(Yes.) [Answer equivocal because I did not know whether person suggested had gone or not, but knew that a person by that name was gone.]

Well, I see him here now. He used to go to sleep a lot.

(Yes.) [Medium in trance at earlier sittings took this sitter as one named "Hayes." He was not so named.]

Well, he is awake now. They never got that settled up, you know, did they?

(No.) He is with her. You must have known he had come. (No.)<sup>404</sup>

He couldn't keep away. Do you know any one named Adam?

(Lots of them.)

---

have hoped to hear, and lastly the Julia of Stead's book and automatic writing. The last came through the psychic above described and without any knowledge of who she was by the psychic. It may be due to an attempt at cross reference here. Mrs. Chenoweth knew of Stead's Julia, but not of anything that was happening in New York.

<sup>404</sup> Hayes is the name of a lady who had communicated two years ago in the effort to give a certain special message. Her husband is dead. The sitter at the time of the experiments was an Uncle of hers and his name was not Hayes, but the subconscious of Mrs. Chenoweth got the impression at the time that this was his name. Her subconsciousness knew that he had slept constantly at the sittings, but her normal state knew nothing about it.

It is implied here that he is dead. I did not know whether this was true or not and so played an oracular part until the implication was clear.

[Pause.] Hm. [Pause and reached for pencil. Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

G. P.

(Good morning, George, glad to have you.)

You are not any more glad to have me come than I am to come. It seems good to be here at work in this clear atmosphere. We tried to take care of you and now you come back and expect [N. R.] expect us to repeat the dose but I think we shall not be able to send you away yet.

[I was quite ill with much the same difficulty as before when sent away by them, and while Mrs. C. knew I had a cold, she did not know how serious it was.]

(No, I have some work that is imperative, tho I feel rather badly this week. Will I have to rest any before the summer?)

I do not think so but still we must not let you get down for you are our main stay just now. Imperator is at work and will try some of his methods on you tonight [read 'brought'] tonight when you are sleeping. You see we are obliged to use some energy of yours. You have [pencil changed] have been working together [N. R.] together so long that we find it quite easy to use the combined force to good advantage but do not intend to overdo it. It is a temptation when things are going well to keep on but we will try and keep [keep] our heads [read 'hands'] heads. Do you like grapes [N. R.] grapes.

(Not very well.)

Imperator suggests that you eat some of the Malaga.

(All right. I shall.) [Found later in day they were out of season.]

We think your bronchial tubes will be helped by the juices. yes [to delayed reading] Try it and see—

[Mrs. C. does not know that my bronchial tubes are affected, tho she might have inferred present trouble from my voice.] <sup>405</sup>

I think R. H. full ['felt' but written and read 'full'] fell [so written and read when hand crossed an 'l' for 't,' showing it intended for 'felt'] pretty [pretty] good yesterday.

(Yes, he did well.)

He has been planning to do several things here but there have been so few opportunities that he has not been able to carry out his plans—

I am much relieved that you told the light not to take the offered engagement. They offered her a big sum and it was somewhat of a temptation especially when at the end that little plea for [read 'on']

<sup>405</sup> I finally secured some Malaga grapes, though they were not easily obtained. I do not know any reason for their superior beneficial character. Even if they have, the subconscious of Mrs. Chenoweth is exposed to the suspicion of being capable of advising them.

doubtfully] for help was tacked [read 'harked'] on . . . t . . . [superposing] tacked.

(I understand. I want to ask what the exact meaning was of the appearance of Hayes.)

He has been asking for a chance to come and write a word to you and he was in the room but no one expected the light to see him.

(Now, if the man I have in mind is the husband of Mrs. Hayes who communicated the last year or two, I want to be clear who it is.)

Yes we know who you mean and the light knew the spirit who came before. There was always a very thin veil between the conscious and the unconscious power in that case. If you remember some good things came through to the normal. It was one of the rare instances when the same vibrations seemed to permit the wave messages to reach the normal of the light.

(Yes, she referred to his sleeping much. That was the living sitter.)

Yes but that was also referred to by the subconscious at the time of the other sittings and came along as a tail [read 'bit'] tail [N. R., tho clear] Tail to the kite.

(Yes, what I wanted to know is whether that man is on your side as was implied in the way the message came.)

I do not know. I will find out. It was the group of Hayes communicators that I referred to—

(All right.)

It is possible that the old gentleman is here. I mean in this country.

(I understand.)

Do you know yourself anything about him.

(No, I don't.)<sup>406</sup>

I will report tomorrow.

(All right.)

I cannot well tell you now. It does seem so good to be having a visit that I am not downright eager to release the hand but I think I must.

(Can you tell me whether the group are doing anything in New York besides what Hodgson talked about yesterday?)

Yes I have been conscious of some efforts made at another place and one where Jennie P— made an effort to put in an appearance. It was at a place where a younger lady was the subject and we all went there and tried. I do not know as that is the place or time to which

<sup>406</sup> I wanted the matter of this reference to Hayes cleared up and I merely signified that I did not know whether he was dead or not. The reader should note that G. P. is correct about what took place with the subconscious at the time of the man's sittings, and one important piece of evidence, the name Hayes, came through in Mrs. Chenoweth's dream state and was remembered.

you refer but it is one of the attempts. It was evening [delay in reading] night [and pencil pointed back at word 'evening'] but there were lights and some confusing conditions at first but later things were better.

(I think Jennie P. appeared at one place, but I had in mind another kind of work and it is important that we get into cross reference about it.)<sup>407</sup>

You mean the more physical.

(I am not certain of what you mean by 'physical'.)

I mean a demonstration oral and more lively— not in writing. Wait a minute. I have not made it plain enough just what I mean—I do not mean any tamborine [N. R.] tamborine [N. R.] banjo [N. R.] tamborine banjo business but still there were some more physical demonstrations than here ['th' written first and then 'h' alone superposed] and I saw another man present.

(I know nothing about such things. The work I refer to is one we are undertaking for the sake of impressing certain people with the power of . . . .) [Writing started.]

Healing.

(Yes, that is it.)<sup>408</sup>

Yes yes I did not catch the drift of what you were trying to have me refer to— But of course I know of that movement. I am a part of it as indeed we all are and also there is a formation of a regular staff there. I mean from spirit spheres.

(Yes can you tell me the nature of the case we have been working with?)

I think so for it has been of great interest to us because it has been taken up under close spervision [supervision] and careful inspection on your side and no loopholes left for the philistine to shoot through—

(I understand.)

I refer to the case of one very nervous and depleted which left a bad [N. R.] bad head and [pause] no not head as one of the definite only incidental but the trouble was lower. yes s t o m a c h [written slowly and painfully] yes and \* \* '[probably 'I'] cannot do it yet.

(Get it by all means.)

---

<sup>407</sup> The name Jennie came in New York at the case to which Dr. Hodgson referred, but the friend whom he described so well, having never heard of her, mistook it for John, the name of her friend, and spoiled it by preventing further development of the name.

<sup>408</sup> We were working at spiritual healing in New York on some cases of obsession, one case in particular I wanted to get into cross reference. Mrs. Chenoweth did not know that we were doing anything of the kind, as it had been kept very quiet.



yes— l u n g s [written slowly and painfully] [P. F. R. and erased.] I am still here but [read 'not'] but do you notice that when I release to think there is a sort of automatic action of the [pause] brain (Yes.) which is very like the galvanic reflex action on a frog—

(Yes, and very like guessing also.)

That is what a reflex action would do to the brain to a frog's leg it would simply excite the normal [N. R.] normal activities or habits and this is just the same as I released my thought. All the diseases in the category would naturally find expression in the writing and that was why I rushed to take the pencil again. I would rather turn [read 'than'] turn the train [read 'brain'] of thought . . . tr . . . [read 'train'] entirely than to have the action proceed and the writing reveal what might seem like my own guess. I am not able to write what I wish just now, but I know the case perfectly have been there have been [superposed 'on there' and not read] been interested and a part of the plan and the performance and expect to stay and do all possible to make clear the utilization of the power which a well organized band may wield yes [to delayed reading.]

(When you can I would like to know just what the matter was with that case, for the sake of identity and also to protect my treatment of it.)

Yes I understand and now that the subject is incorporated into the work here by this effort I am sure we can make the suitable and clear references that will show our definite connection with the work here [so written and read, but pencil pointed till read 'there'] yes [to reading.] I am not going because I want to but because it is best just now. I will return again and get at this more definitely you know. [Pencil fell, groan, long pause and distress.] <sup>409</sup>

[*Subliminal.*]

[Cough and pause.] What are they all going away for?

(I don't know, unless they do not want to work me too hard.)

I think that's it. Somebody tried to take the pencil and they just pulled him right away. All right. I won't talk if that will only make it all the worse. [Hand reached for mine.] I'll give you some strength. [Long pause and awakened.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

May 6th, 1914. 9 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Cough. Long pause, groan of half distress and relief. Pause.]

Who said I was a frog?

<sup>409</sup> The attempt to specify the trouble with the patient that I had in mind failed, but there was consciousness of the failure, without my hinting that it was so.

(I know what that means.)

Well, I am not.

(George was explaining something yesterday in which he compared a certain act of the brain to the action of a frog's leg.)

[Sigh.] George is too smart. [Smile on face. Pause.] Do you know a woman who is [pause]

(Go ahead.)

[Distress.] sick [pause and distress] with a [distress] It makes me sick. I'm so . . . [pause and cough.] It isn't a cough at all. I'm so ill [pause] in my head. [Distress and pause] It is all right. [Distress gone, and reached for pencil.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

B [pause] ennie's mother.<sup>410</sup>

(Good, I shall be happy to take your message.)

Please do. I have often wished to come here and send a message to my dearest of husbands but have been restrained by my fear of a recurrent [N. R.] attack . . . recurrent of the trouble on the light but today G. P. and Prof. [period inserted] Hodgson stood by me as I came into contact [delay in reading] in . . . [read] and I think I am going to get along all right. I am most happy to add this little bit of evidence to the report of our work which has been of such long duration. I am often at the home with you all my dear ones although the separations of the family for the lives of work and study [N. R.] study do not permit those old united evenings when together we watched our little ones. I find great comfort in going where they are and then at last finding you and joining [N. R.] joining my spirit with yours realizing that all the truth of the peace of this life has not yet been made plain to you. Sometimes I feel as if I must in some way break the silence for you as you do for me for I frequently hear you speak to me and I make effort to reply but your ears do not catch the words.

Benny [struggle in writing 'y' as if 'ie' were intended, which would have been correct, as in first instance above.] is such a comfort at times when I think I must do something for he insists that we do something for he insists that we do make some impression. He says the law business is not exactly a refining process for a spiritual life. I do not know but I think it grinds down some points yes [to reading] and gives a clear understanding of the difficulties some people have in coming to a clear and precise statement. F a t h e r sends love and I

<sup>410</sup> The first sentence in the automatic writing showed who was present, and this ill feeling of the psychic as she was going into the trance is the same feeling she has always had whenever Mrs. Junot tried to communicate. This has occurred for three years.

wish I could say something to my little girl to assure her that I am conscious of what she has been going through. I mean in a social relationship [last N. R.] ship and I write E and M as initials of friends I have seen. I do not want to forget the past nor do I but sometimes the present is so vivid that I am only conscious of it.

(What do you mean by the "social relationship" of the daughter?)

I mean to refer to it in distinction to the family. It is among her own personal friends. I know the plans Papa has made for her and I think he has been wise and I am pleased.<sup>411</sup>

I want if I can to speak of a memorial to me. It is not a new matter but something I have long thought I would refer to. It is about the cemetery and the shaft [N. R.] shaft [struggle and distress] I do not mean that.

(All right.)

I mean a memorial for me erected in my memory which I love not at home.

(Describe it if you can, and if you know what it is like.)

yes I do know and the simplicity of it is what I most like. It is not entirely personal for there is room for him. The base is plain the figure in relief is beautiful. I prefer it to others. There were 2 rejected similar but this I like.

(What is the figure like?)

A large and poetic play of fancy Light [written with effort] stone [read 'alone'] at base . . . stone. I am trying to be explicit because I realize the importance of it.

(Yes, I understand, and that is why I am holding you to it.)

I know and thank you. I have had experience before.

(Yes, I know.)

[Groan and pause.] I am [distress] trying to recall the inscription [N. R.] inscription which would be good work.

(Yes, it would.)

[Pause.] A [read 'O'] S [finger pointed to letter read 'O'] no A [still made like 'O' but read 'A'] soul [Long pause] M [Long pause, and catalepsy seized hand which I had to rub for some minutes.]

---

<sup>411</sup> Bennie is the name of Mr. and Mrs. Junot's deceased son. He had communicated through Mrs. Piper and also here. Last fall, when her husband was present, she was asked to give a special message and evidently she has come to try it. The husband is a lawyer, a fact mentioned before and one which Mrs. Chenoweth normally does not know.

Mr. Junot writes that he has "the impression that Mrs. Junot did sometimes call Dr. Hodgson, Professor." Also of the incidents regarding the daughter, he says: "I have no plans concerning our daughter except to improve her health, as she is not very strong."

\* \* [scrawl.] [Distress and groans and I had to hold my hand on medium's head. Sighs, groans.] <sup>412</sup>

\* \* \* \* [Pencil fell and long pause.]

(I believe that your husband wanted a certain message that would be suggested by the name Columbus. Do you remember that?)

[*Subliminal.*]

[Long pause and no answer to my query.] She's dead. She's dead. [Pause.] Do you know any one named Kate? Do you know a Kate?

(I am not sure.)

[Pause and sigh.] Oh! [Long pause. Reached for my hand to come out.]

(I want George a little.)

Take hold of my hand a little. It will help. Were you afraid they were going to bring me out?

(Yes.)

[*Automatic Writing.*]

Yes yes I must come. I thought she would get through her ['the' ?] thing she had on her mind but it took longer than I supposed and used up [N. R.] used up energy like the Dickens.

(Yes.)

I know how much it would mean to him to have her come with the answer to his questions.

(Yes, if she can give it to you and you put it through it will be the best you can do.)

What do you want [N. R.] want of me just now.

(I want to have you bring Mr. T—— first next week and then following him the person to whom this package belongs. Do you get what I said?)

[I placed package on table wrapped in oiled silk. Nothing visible even to me about it.]

First next time you want Mr. T—— the gentleman who is to send a message to his wife. Is the marriage question still on the docket.

(That is what we wish to know about.)

I understand and will try and have him study to write intelligently and after he is gone you want one to whom the open package belongs.<sup>413</sup>

<sup>412</sup> Mr. Junot's comments on the monument are: "The 'memorial' is not understandable at all. We have nothing in mind in any way connected with a shaft or monument or memorial to her *at home*. We have had some slight discussion within the last year about the erection of a family monument upon our family lot in the cemetery. But nothing whatever was agreed upon either as to character of the monument or the inscription. Indeed nothing at all was said as to the inscription."

<sup>413</sup> I had received this article from the widow of the person I wanted, and re-

(Yes, exactly.)

I will do the [all superposed and not read] (Superposing.) I will do the best I can. Hodgson is watching [N. R.] watching the package . . . w a . . . [read] Hayes is *not here* [underscored and pencil fell. Long pause, and hand reached for pencil again.] <sup>414</sup>

c a n c e r c a n [pause]

(Finish that.)

be cured. [Pencil fell and sigh.] <sup>415</sup>

[*Subliminal.*]

Kate is gone. Kate is gone. Do you know Kate?

(I think so.)

Just the next time she can. [Pause.] I see some figures 1 9 0 and 3 or 5. I can't make out what it is. Do you know when she died?

(No.)

[Pause.] I think it is 5. Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

[Pause.] You will rest, won't you.

(Yes.)

So you will be all right. Mary don't want you just yet. She wants you to finish your work. It would be lovely to have you, but it is better to wait till the work is over. You understand.

(Yes.) <sup>416</sup>

[Pause, rubbed face and awakened.]

---

solved to try an unusual experiment with it. I have not tried systematically such experiments, as was done by Dr. Hodgson in his work with Mrs. Piper, and though this lady who sent the article had had three sittings a year before, I did not wish to mention the name of the husband, because it had never been given and Mrs. Chenoweth did not yet know either normally or subconsciously who had been present or who was wanted. Even if she had known, she could not know under the circumstances who it was that I wanted. The article was not opened or touched and not even I knew its contents. After the sittings I opened it and found a pair of gloves and no name on them.

<sup>414</sup> Hayes is the name of the man implied as dead at a previous sitting. Cf. Note 404. After receiving this message that he was not dead I wrote to the gentleman and received a reply from him, showing that he was still living.

<sup>415</sup> The friend who was on our Board of Trustees and who had died recently, died of cancer and he appealed to Dr. B. for psychic treatment, as the last resort. It was tried, but as he expected sudden magic results and the family as well as himself had little faith in it, the matter was dropped. There is no reason for this message unless it refers to the man mentioned and the trouble with which he died.

[The physician from whom the cancer patient asked psychic treatment is the same one who was in charge of the healing referred to in the preceding sitting.—G. O. T.]

<sup>416</sup> I took it that "Kate" referred to Miss Kate Field. But I know of no reason for an allusion to the supposed year she died. I do not know what year it was, but as Mrs. Chenoweth knows much about her through contact with Miss Whiting no

## Chapter XXIV, Series XX, May 11, 12, 13, 1914

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

May 11th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Normal.*]

I can smell roses. I don't believe there are any out. I think it was floating in the window. I don't think there is any sign of any anywhere yet. [Pause.]

[It is possible that the allusion to roses has coincidental significance, but there was not enough said to indicate this with any assurance.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sigh and distress. Long pause. Distress and groans and twitching of hand. Reached for pencil and pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

\* \* [scrawls and hand relaxed hold on pencil a few moments and then renewed its grasp.]

I am going to write what I can to my darling.

(You are, indeed, welcome.)

I am possessed with the old love of life and a desire to be actually a part of the life of my dear wife and children. It comes over me this morning as I enter this room and the soft spring air and the hush and stillness of the country is evident to me and to the group who attend me. I did so enjoy the out of doors when I lived with them and the recollection of those happy days pours [N. R., looks like 'pairs'] pours [read 'forms' and not corrected] a flood of thoughts such thoughts as make it hard for me to keep calm

(I understand.)

and give the sane and sensible advice I am disposed to give. I thought I had said all I needed to say to my M a r [long pause] M a r y ('Mary.')

M a r g [pause] a r e t [pause] yes you . . .

(Margaret is not right, you know.) ['Marian' is correct name. Margaret is name of older daughter.]

yes my wife.

(No, Margaret is not the right name.)

I know it. I will not try

---

value would attach to it if correct and meant for Kate Field. [Bennie's mother was "K. H. J.," deceased as is also Mr. J. "Kate" is her name. Cf. *Proc. S. P. R.*, Pt. LXI, p. 565. 1910.—G. O. T. 1924.]

Mary is the name of my wife [deceased] and no evidential value attaches to the mention of her here.

(That is right.)

but will try and give what I have.

(Yes, you said you thought you had said all you needed. The last message on the matter simply said it should be dropped for the present and she did not know whether you regarded it as final or not.)

Can you understand how my whole attitude is [pause] somewhat uncertain because of the relationship which is still so real and vivid [read 'broad'] vivid to me

(Yes, I understand, and I suppose the best way to clear it would be to simply say one way or the other whether it is to be left to time and her judgment.)

Yes that seems wise to me. She is not my sister nor my child but my wife and to think of the re-establishing of relationships that are not at all necessary for her happiness but may help her in the responsibilities of the [pause] care of the childred [children] and affairs that is what bothers me— I cannot see quite far enough ahead to know whether she will need the assistance.

(You remember that you had chosen a certain person whom you favored. Is that at an end. I refer to W. A.)

No not at an end and still favored by me. It is her own indecision that is quite hard for me to overcome. I do not think she ought to be [pause] advised to do a thing like marrying unless the impulse is definitely [pause] for it— I see its advantages.

(I imagine that the serious difficulty is the undertaking of motherhood which W. A. wants and it is a rather dangerous thing for her at her age, is it not?)

Yes and I think that when she once drops it out of her thought she will be at peace. It is strange but the problem itself has helped her for it called for thought and it gave a less hopeless loneliness to the life. It has served a good purpose in any event. I feel strongly that at all hazards there is to be no affirmative answer yet.

(Do you feel how the other members of the family feel about it?)

You mean my family.

(Yes, your family.)

all right. There is no desire to change the present mode of life. [Pause.] I am only concerned about the responsibilities which come either way. But she is all right as she is with some more freedom than she would have. I say No. Does that not settle it.

(What do you mean by the short word 'No'?)

Negative to the possible plan. Yes [to reading delayed.]

(What plan?)

marry [read 're-marry' doubtfully] yes [to reading]

(You mean that you would prefer her not to remarry again.)

[Pause.] Not if she found love I would expect her to marry then—

(I understand. Go ahead.)

but this is not so much love as a possibility for a larger life in some particular. I cannot make it quite plain to you.

(Let me talk a little. I understand that her love for you is so great that she would like to preserve it intact and that is the most lovely feature of her character and should be preserved by all means, but you refer to thoughts in her mind about a larger usefulness that might weigh in this matter, do you not?)

Exactly.

(Can you specify more in detail?)

service to others who need her care children.

(In what way would it better their lives?)

I am not sure that it would better them. I think she is perfectly able to do what is necessary for them and she will not leave them.

(Can I be of any service in helping her?)

You have been. She sometimes thinks of what would happen if she were to die but she will not die yet. [Distress and groans.] I can see that far ahead—

See here No man can be their father any more than a man can be her husband. If we keep in contact spiritually I can advise and help and be on guard and do for them from this side as much as any two men.

(Good.)

I am not impotent and I find every day new power and new opportunity. Jennie P— tells me to brace up and not let any nonsensical ideas of chivalry keep me from the place where I belong and I think she is right. I had a feeling that I was a sort of a dog in the manger

(No indeed.)

but I see now that I underestimated [N. R.] under estimated my growing spiritual power. Tell my darling to let the whole matrimonial question go to the dogs. I will take care of her and the children and grow stronger every day. \* \* \* \* [possible attempt at 'B' or 'R' and then scrawls.]

(Can you come tomorrow and give the name she used to call you?)

Y . . . [written while I asked my question and intended for 'Yes'] I will try hard. [Pencil fell and hand reached for mine, held it a moment and dropped it.] <sup>417</sup>

---

<sup>417</sup> The whole passage that comes from Mr. T. is clear and apt to the situation. It needs no explanation, save that some of the things that are true and could not be guessed are too personal for me to tell the facts.



[*Subliminal.*]

Who picked all those lilies of the valley?  
(I don't know.)<sup>418</sup>

[Pause and distress.] I guess she did. [Pause, sigh and distress, seized my hand and awakened.]

The influence of Jennie P. was probably present from the moment the communicator began with "See here," etc., as the writing seems to favor that view.

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

May 12th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Article placed on table. Pause, sigh, distress and labored breathing. Pause, distress and heavy breathing repeated, followed by calm and pause for some minutes, when hand reached for pencil and began at once to write.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

We have been trying to have the subconscious [N. R.] see . . . subconscious . . . and hear less for we feared that the quickening of the subconscious activ. . . [pencil ran off pad and word read 'action'] activities awakened rather than put to sleep the power of the light and brought into play the recollections and theories and brain attractions which are in the aura of the normal woman and our desire is to eliminate all of that action leaving free the tools so to speak for the use of the communicator without any of the attractions of the usual [pause] powner [read 'power'] owner [delay in reading] owner of the tools. I do not know how far we may succeed but shall continue the process in the hope that the communicator may step into a furnished shop without any of the previous occupant's influence to p. . . [erased] interfere with perfect freedom.

I am Father John.

(Good, I understand.)

This is the first time I have ever written and I am trying out for myself the [pause] theory I have in regard to the occupying [occupying] of the body of a living person by a spirit. I would be glad to see the spirit free to express freely and definitely and will help all I can.

---

<sup>418</sup> The reference to lilies of the valley is not intelligible, save that they were referred to in earlier communications and had some relation to the wedding of Mr. and Mrs. T., if I remember rightly. [Yes, her wedding bouquet.—G. O. T.]

(Thank you.) [Correct that it is his first appearance in writing.]

It may be that the time that the body can be held in this manner will be less but there will be no preliminary stages of contact with the scenes and people in the room.

I know the gentleman who will follow me now. I felt I ought to give you this light on the plan

(Thank you. I am very glad to know it.)

and your old friends find [so read and pencil pointed and re-read.] and group are in the plan and will make effort to keep themselves apart while the experiment procede [so written and read.] *procedes* [*sic.*] <sup>419</sup>  
[Pencil quietly laid down and no disturbance. Pause and new pencil reached for.]

[Change of Control.]

Yes I am here.

(You are welcome.)

T—— [Surname correctly written.]

(Thank you. I have heard from your wife and the article on the table is from her.)

Yes and I feel strangely real and so light and as if the [pause] writing were very easy. I also have been to my wife since seeing you yesterday and I know she is very eager about this communication and will feel better to go into the summer after she has my word about the matter which annoys her because of the desire of the suitor. I [pause] am writing well am I—

(Yes, perfectly.)

I do not feel as if I were \* \* making an imprint [N. R.] an imprint on the paper.

(Yes, you are.)

I can hear you very clearly and can think fairly [fairly] well. I know that you desire me to give a test of some name I was called and I will attempt it.

---

<sup>419</sup> Mrs. Chenoweth knew normally that a personality by the name of Father John claimed to be one of her guides, and after this sitting when I purposely told her he had come she remarked that he had never come before. The sitting marks another advance in the development of Mrs. Chenoweth's trance. I had not suggested it, though my quarrel with Jennie P. a little earlier may have unconsciously suggested the need of it. However that may be, it was all spontaneous and unexpected to me here, and involved deepening the trance. It did shorten the time of the trance and the amount of the record, just as the abandonment of the "tandem" control and pictographic process involved the same shortening of the time and records. This new advance was simply carrying the deepening process still farther. The sequel showed that proper names could be obtained more easily. But at first the condition was unstable and it may take a year or several years to develop it to its perfection.

(Good.)

I promised to do so. I have seen the children too and it is hard sometimes to see them and not get the response from them but I am glad it is as clear as it is—

I have seen Emma over here in this life <sup>420</sup> and I did not mean to write Margaret yesterday.

(I know. Go ahead.)

I want to write about a place where my dear ones are planning to go and I want to assure them that I will go and be a [pause] happy partner in their life. I have so much that crowds in upon me this morning. I do not care at all about the past as a thing to dwell upon especially the affair that took me here. It was too sudden and too unexpected to be very deeply impressed on my mind. I think it quite remarkable that one can remember at all about one's own last moments. I had to look up my last hours afterwards for I was not fully alive to the situation.

I have F F r e . [pause] F [pause] E d w a r d . Yes Edward is a name I wish to write. You know about it do you not. [Cf. Notes 278 and 307.—G. O. T.]

(No, not unless more is given. Perhaps others will recognize it. I do not.)

I [pause due to superposing and pulling hand down.] thought perhaps you knew it.

(No, I do not, and it is one of those things that it is well to complete if you can.)

Yes Edward [Long pause.]

(Is Edward any relative?)

Yes. (What relation?) a ? . . . [P. F. R.] Edward a cousin of one of us. [P. F. R.]

(Go ahead.)

[Pause.] I am not going to give up this chance yet.

(No, that is right. I will help.)

I have too much to do to let it go now. I [long pause.] cannot express what I feel but I [Distress and uttered: 'Oh my God'!] [Long pause.] Prince [N. R.] P r i n c e [P. F. R.] a name of a friend.

(All right. Go ahead.)

Edward Prince.<sup>421</sup>

(All right.)

---

<sup>420</sup> Mrs. T. does not know of any Emma to whom Mr. T. would refer, living or dead.

<sup>421</sup> There is no cousin Edward Prince of either Mr. or Mrs. T. [There is a recurrence of the familiar confusion of "Fred" and "Ed" in this passage.—G. O. T.]

[Pause.] \* \* [scrawls.] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Long pause, perhaps for five minutes.] \* \* B \* \* y [read 'B J'] [Pause and P. F. R. Long pause.] My son is a good boy.

(Yes, which one.)

my \* \* [evidently attempt to make 'E'] \* \* B o [read 'a'] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

B o \* \* [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Long pause.] B a ['a' so read] no no B o h [or scrawl] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

B o f ... [pause] B o u ... B o f ... B o ... [Pause and P. F. R.]

(Stick to it. You will get it yet.)

B o [long pause \* \* B o r [pause] r o k e r [or 'Bowker'?] B o o .. [P. F. R.] My boy is the image of me and is a joy to his mother because of that I want to write about him because he is so near me in his desire for his life work.

(All right. Free your mind.)

I have no fear for him but I know he needs the advice [N. R.] advice of a father now and again and I can [read 'am'] can impress him I know B o [long pause.] o B [erased] I am so [Pause and P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

slow I cannot I [P. F. R.] I M [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

B [pause] Mama [read 'Mamie' doubtfully] knows. Mamma knows. I know Mama knows. I \* \* ['I?'] [Heavy writing.]<sup>422</sup>

(Keep calm.)

Bill [P. F. R.] [Cf. Notes 191, 289.—G. O. T.]

(What are you trying to write?)

[Long pause, pencil fell and hand rubbed paper, and then pencil reached for.] Do not be too hard on me.

(No, I shall not and shall only help by keeping quiet and shall try to have you explain what you are trying to do.)

[P. F. R.] I have 3 names I want to write my own my boy's and a name I called her.

(All right. Stick to it.)

[Distress.] I want C— [distress.] [P. F. R.]

<sup>422</sup> Possibly attempts at "Borden," a friend. Not the pet name, according to Mrs. T.'s note thereon.

(Stick to it. You will get it.)

\* \* [scrawls.] C a . . . [?] \* \* C h . . . [erased vigorously.] <sup>423</sup>  
[Pause and P. F. R. Distress and Indian \* \* M [P. F. R. Long  
pause, groan and distress, and pencil fell.] <sup>424</sup>

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh I shall not do it. I will not. [Firmly.]

(What?)

[Long pause.] When we were in Paris.

(Who?)

[Pause.] I bought the locket.

(Who did?)

I did.

(Who is I?) [Pause.] (Who said that?)

[Long pause.] I ride no more.

(Who rides no more?)

I

(Who is I?) <sup>425</sup>

[Pause.] I'm dead.

(Who?)

[Pause.] No I'm alive.

(Who says this?)

[Long pause. Sigh, opened eyes and stared about and then closed  
them again.] Dead. [Long pause.] Darling I'll come to you and the  
babies and I'll help them. [Long pause. Awakened.]

[*Normal.*]

Goodness, my head!

(What is the matter with it?)

I don't know. [Pause, slowly shakes head as if trying to right it.]

I guess it is all right now.

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

May 13th, 1914. 9.30 A. M.

[*Normal.*]

[Sigh and cough.] I keep hearing the name Fred. Do you know  
it? [Cf. Note 421.]

(Yes.)

<sup>423</sup> No pertinence in "C, Ca, or Ch" known to Mrs. T.

<sup>424</sup> M. is the initial of Mrs. T.'s first name.

<sup>425</sup> No pertinence to Mr. and Mrs. T.'s trips to Paris in the references to a locket  
and rides.

Do you know any one in particular by that name who would come? [Pause.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Letter placed on table unopened and sealed. Long pause. Groan and long pause. Reached for pencil and pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

Eugene [pause] Eugene one who \* \* [Pencil fell and reinserted three times between pauses and then Indian and pencil fell, hand relaxing.]

[Change of Control.]

I will try again please put me in contact with the parcel.

[I placed parcel, which I had on the other table, in hand of medium.]

I am so glad of the help you have given me and after I went from here I knew what I had said about the changes which are possible for my beloved wife and I felt a gratitude to you that you put the situation before me in such a way that I saw the wisdom of direct advice to remain as now. I had a feeling that I must not demand any sacrifice because of sentiment and I thought perhaps a companionship which would enlarge her sympathies and give her new associations and create a new world might make the losses of the past less evident to her but I see that one may suffer more by discarding a high and beautiful ideal for a present peace and I am glad to reassert my advice to remain as she is and to make as real as possible my presence and attendance through her life. The children will make association for her and the freedom of life with expectentley [so written and read purposely] cy [read as 'expectancy'] about my ability to return in clear and sure way will give her a joy.

I am conscious of her love and I am able to share her life in a much more definite way than seems possible. For instance I am able to hear what she says to the children and I see what she does where she goes. These things are not deeply impressed on my consciousness but are a part of my knowledge. When I come to repeat them they are not as clear as some things of the past but I would be most unhappy if I were not able to know about them. I . . .

(I happen to know that she wished you to report a certain thing here which she wrote out and spoke about and it is enclosed in the letter on the table. If you know what it is it would be a pleasure to have it written out here.)

It is just in answer to that wish that I wrote as I did about hearing

and seeing. I do not know whether I am particularly dull about this business but I try to do all the things that I know will help her and yet oftener fail than succeed. I was amazed yesterday to find the sensation I had when I first came here. That sense of being dead and not realizing what to be dead meant. It was a strange repetition of the first sensations in this life but it was succeeded by a reality and vividness which was impressive and which made me much clearer in mind as I came today. [Hand turned as if distressed.]

(I understand.)

It was probably produced for that purpose as I understand the spirit who produced it has hypnotic [written 'hypotic' and read 'hypoth . . .'] Hand pointed till corrected.] power and desired to use it on me to release me from the idea of the unreality of death and to awaken me to activities as I wrote. Is that plain to you.

(Yes, it is.)

It seems like a good idea and if I can be helped it will reduce the fear of mistakes which would [pause] might throw my evidence out of court.

(Do you know what it is to be earthbound in any way?)

I think so. It is that state where one through intense desire to be near some one still in the earth life hinders the spirit in its life over here.

(Did you suffer any from that condition?)

Yes but I was not aware of it and certainly would not have called it suffering for it would have been pain to go away.

(I understand, and has this man's hypnotic effort helped you in that respect?)

I am certainly better and clearer today and feel an impetus and stimulus to bring some spiritual light to my family. The whole of life looks clearer. I see in perspective and retrospective as never before and I shall go forward with the treatment if that is what it may be called. Is it not glorious to feel this sense of peace.

(Yes indeed.)

and I must make my evidence much clearer. I am to come again and I will see what I can do.

(Yes, I shall be glad to have you come any time.)

I know it and I shall make good I know I wish that the light that shines for me this hour might shine always. You see the shock of the death the unexpected and tragic end

(Yes, I understand.)

all had a part in the work. Each time I came I was overwhelmed with the tragedy of it and my friends were no help whatever because of their like feeling. It was so far from right. Dear wifie yes [to cor-

rected reading of word as 'wife'] I love to think of the blessedness of this spiritual relation which is but the flower of our beautiful life together. [Pencil fell and hand became cataleptic for some time.] <sup>426</sup>

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sigh and groans.] Oh, Oh. [Sigh, face twists and distress. Pause and finger pointed in the air. Long pause, smile, sigh and smile and puckering of mouth.]

Hm. Do you know Louis?

(Louis who?)

[Pause.] L-O-U-I-S. [Pause.] Wait a minute. [Pause.] There is more. [Pause.] L-O-U-I-S [pause.] I can't tell till I see it. [Pause.] B-L-A-I-R B-L-A-I-R

(I don't know him myself. For whom is it?)

I think it goes with [pause] the sitter. [Normal knew no sitter was present.] and I hear [pause.] Do you know if the communicator lived in a place where he (Blair) was and if he ever went to California. It looks like that wonderful country out there.

(No, I do not know.)

It is some country not here. It is a beautiful country and scenery, and not across the water. Possibly it is Colorado. It begins with C. I can't tell whether it is California or Colorado. That is where I place this other person. [Pause.]

Do you know any one named Will connected with the communicator.

(No, go ahead.)

Why?

(I shall find out.)

Do you know anything about his will [Will?]

(I don't know.) <sup>427</sup>

It really has something to do with him. The word I catch is "will" and I think it has something to do with his will. Is he coming again?

<sup>426</sup> This long message from Mr. T. does not get anything evidential through except characteristic statements and relevance that would be recognizable only to those perfectly familiar with the facts.

<sup>427</sup> The name Louis Blair has no relevance to Mr. T. and his affairs. Inquiry of Mrs. T. supplies this information. Besides, the subject matter which is not entirely clear has no pertinence to her or him. It is possibly a prediction of more funds to the Society. I can attach no other meaning to it. Through another psychic in California a prediction was made that we should get more funds during this month of July, 1914. The month is near its end and no word of any such windfall has come. It is the 25th.

It should be noted that on May 16th, 1914, three days after this séance, there was a special business meeting of the Board called by J. H. H. in connection with the settlement of the W. B. Field will and estate.—G. O. T.



(Yes.) Next week? (I don't know.) All right.

(I want some one else next week and if he can slip in at a time that this other person cannot use the energy it will be all right.)

Well I think that George or Dr. Hodgson will arrange it, don't you?

(Yes.)

They know what is right. We have to trust them. It is a peculiar case. I'll tell them. I don't need to tell. They know what you say. [Suddenly awakened.]

### Chapter XXV, Series XXI, May 18, 19, 20, 1914

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

May 18th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Article laid on table wrapped in oiled silk. Pause, cough, long pause. Groan, sigh, pause and reached for pencil and pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

\* \* [scrawls and pause.] Little by little the web of evidence is woven by unseen fingers and the import of the contact is made clearer to the minds of the world. The hearts of the world have felt the truth of it but the day [N. R.] has . . . day has dawned and the full light must come and the unproved facilities [N. R.] of the . . . facilities [N. R.] facilities of the midnight be verified by the clear vision [read 'reason' doubtfully] vis . . . [read] of light and reason place vigil after midnight. [P. F. R.]

I know somewhat (Write a little larger, please.) of the difficulties which beset the path of the communicating spirit. There are so many chances for leakage in the contacting of thought that there is often imperfect vision or hearing when dependence is placed on a third party and when the communicator depends on himself he must learn to eliminate his own memories from the well equipped store house of his borrowed organism or use the contents freely as if they were his own.

That last proposition is rather new and has been a subject [Indian] of discussion among us. The eliminating process having been the one ordinarily used. But why [read 'they' and pencil pointed till corrected] not use the outfit [read 'artful' doubtfully] out . . . [read] as well as the vehicle. [Pause.] It would at least save [pause till read] the concern of the discrimination during the activity of the work.

I am sure that Mr. T—— [full surname written] would have gone forward more readily if he had not been so fearful of [pause] making

the mistake of using something already lodged in the mind. I have been trying to tell him that he could make clear statements if he forgot his place in the effort and accepted [N. R.] it is . . . accepted it as his own to use completely vocabulary and all and before he was aware the vernacular would be T——'s [full surname]

I think you desire him again.

(Yes, sometime I do, and can leave it to you to decide. But . . .)  
[Writing began.]

yes and will you consider it settled about the message to his wife.

(Yes I can, but I am not sure of what it is except that the last message was for her to remain as she is. Is that correct?)

It is. Is there a Benjamin in the family group?

(She does not know of any, but I shall have her inquire. Can you explain why he is mentioned here?)

yes. It is one who was connected with him I . . . in earlier life. Was the name given before.<sup>428</sup>

(Yes it was, and I would be glad to know who is giving it now. That is who is doing the writing?)

I am a member of the group.

(It was a member of the group that gave it before.)

Yes I thought so but I am one who has worked with R. H. before he came to this side and I do not feel quite ready to tell all about myself but I am and was identified [N. R.] identified with Moses and his work. I used to help the spirits get ready for the writing and acted as a sort of prompter when the work lagged.

We have to take some time to clear away the conditions after the work of another description which goes on in your absence and that accounts for my presence here today.

(I understand.)

A serious group of sittings has been carried on by another and I find a change of key necessary. [Distress.] I am [pause] sorry to have been unable [N. R.] unable to let the other work proceed at once. [Distress.] I [pause] \* \* [evident attempt to make 'P'] P [struggle.]

(I understand. Go ahead.)

P r u d e n s .

(Thank you. I am glad to hear from you.)

<sup>428</sup> The message to Mrs. T. explains itself. It merely adds the testimony of the present control to that of Mr. T. himself earlier.

This is the second time that the name Benjamin has been given as relevant to Mr. T., and it is the second time that it has been given by one of the Emperor group. At first Mrs. T. said she knew no one of this name, but in conversation with me she recalled a Benjamin Bullock whom Mr. T. might mention.

Never before have I made so long a statement here.

(That is correct.)

I have been sure that you knew I was Sometimes present. I could not let the others come and be [pause] exempt from the tax on my time. [Head raised, thrown back and forward and great distress apparent. P. F. R. twice, distress again and head thrown back and forward.] \* \* [evident attempt to write 'P. r.' P. F. R. and Indian.] <sup>429</sup>

[Apparent Change of Control.]

M [partly made and groans.] M o s e s [N. R.] M s e s.

(I understand.) <sup>430</sup>

[Groans.] \* \* \* \* [scrawls.] [Fingers snapped à la Whirlwind.]

[Change of Control.]

[Three pencils rejected.] Good morning Hyslop. I think I will manage a few things but somehow they are afraid [N. R.] afraid to resume the old method of tandem [N. R.] team [N. R.] Team tandem . . . because they wish to keep the individual work as it is and when I come I make so much trouble for you and use up so much of your old paper and I am blacklisted I am around [N. R.] around just the same and if G. P. & Co could [read 'would'] get hol. . [read 'but tell'] could get hold of some of these spirits they would feel feel new energy. I think there is still another [N. R.] another plot [N. R.] plot against G. P. & me and that is that they do not like the looks [read 'works'] of . . . looks of our records in print and maybe they are expensive records to get out so many breaks and beginnings and all that and so much more material [read 'natural'] material. Go on with the stupid [N. R.] stupid economy [N. R.] economy. I will go out into the world and touch [N. R.] touch [read 'break'] touch the brain of some rich [N. R.] rich old man who wants to leave good record behind him and see if I cannot get an endowment called the G. P. & Co endowment and to be used *exclusively* [underscored three times.] by u s. If I cannot work one way I will another. <sup>431</sup>

<sup>429</sup> This is the first time that Prudens has tried any lengthy message. The explanation of the failure of the person to come whom I wanted first is interesting. There is evidence that sittings with others under the "Starlight" control affect those which I take in the deeper trance for automatic writing. (Prudens is one of the Emperor Group.—G. O. T.)

<sup>430</sup> This is probably Stainton Moses, the man whom, when living, the Emperor group controlled. I know of no reason for his giving his name but that.

<sup>431</sup> Jennie P., or Whirlwind, evidently came in to relieve the tension produced by the Emperor group. She is apparently aware of the effect of the change of method, as it will involve less of her intrusion and perhaps an abandonment of the rambling process for the communicator.

I wonder what you think of this apport business. It is creating [N. R.] creating almost [N. R.] as . . . almost as much of a furore as Carrington's Physical Palladino. We are watching [delay in reading] \* \* [scrawl for 'w' and word read] vents ['events' but not read] on this . . . events on this side and are sometimes tempted to take a hand in the discussion. Take a hand is a well timed expression when you remember how we talk ['lk' fused and word not read] talk . . . We are not deaf and dumb but we use the hand for conversation [N. R.] conversation [read 'consecution' doubtfully] conversation. Perhaps a sign language would be simpler but you could never keep up with that.

I will leave now and not write so much that you will have to stay in all day. I will try and help the communicator tomorrow.

(All right.)

Whirlwind.

(Thank you.) [Pencil fell. Pause, sigh and pause.]

[*Subliminal.*]

I would like to go to New York. [Pause.] Who is that king? [Distress. Pause and hand held in front of face. Opened eyes, closed them, rubbed face and awakened.]

[*Normal.*]

I just see, I suppose it is a library. Nothing but rows and rows of books. I guess I am back. It looked like a man with a crown on standing in the library.<sup>432</sup>

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

May 19th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Article placed on table. Pause, sigh and long pause.] Hm. [Pause.] Who is that woman?

(I don't know. Tell.)

[Long pause.] My mother.

(All right.)

I didn't know her. I only know her now from the picture. That is who it is. I am going away with her. [Pause.] I shall go away with her. [Whispered.]

[Pause and reached for pencil and pause again.]<sup>433</sup>

<sup>432</sup> The reference to New York is not clear. It may be a reminiscence of her former visits there for sittings or it may be something more not determinable. The allusion to a library is not intelligible.

<sup>433</sup> The appearance of Mrs. Chenoweth's mother is an indication of the deepening of the trance. Soon after the first effort to deepen it some years ago she saw her grandfather.

*[Automatic Writing.]*

May I come

(Yes, certainly.)

and try to write.

(You are welcome.)

I am here to give a message if I can and I am so glad to come I am somewhat excited, for I have a great respect [struggle to keep control.] for the evidential side of this work. I think I am [struggle] going to get [struggle and pause.] it down though I am expected here. My friends are anxious. [Struggle.] Yes.

[Spoken: "If I can only write."]

If I can only write. Did I speak.

(Yes, you did. You spoke the same thing.)

How queer but I guess I am pretty deep in the brain if that is where I am.

(Yes, I think that is it, and if I can help you, please to say so.)

[Spoken: "Yes, yes, yes. If I only know."]

Yes, yes, yes if I only know.

(All right.)

I have so much to say [groans.] I am

[Spoken: "I am happy, I am happy."]

happy, I am happy but I would have stayed in the old life if I could.

[Spoken: "So strange, everybody wants to live, isn't it."]

Strange everybody wants to live isn't it but that is taking the sure evil or good as being better than something unknown. [Groans.] I am ...

[Spoken: "I belong to the article."]

I belong to that article. I belong to that article.

(All right, when you can tell ....)

[Spoken: "I belong to that article. She sent it to me."]

She sent it to me.

[Spoken: "I want to get to them."]

I want to get to them.

(All right.)

[Spoken: "Yes I do. I am making a fool of myself."]

Yes I do. I am making a fool of myself

(Tell me what you can to prove who you are.)

[Long pause. P. F. R., pause and cough and struggle with heavy breathing. I had to hold my hand on medium's forehead.]

[Spoken: "This is no fun."]

This is no fun. [Heavy breathing and pause.]

[Spoken: "Father, Father, take me."]

Father father.

[Spoken: "I can see \* \* [*my* or *the*] father."]

[Pause and hand became calm and after a pause writing began in easy style.]

Do not worry I must have been too forcible but did not know it. I am easier now. How it must annoy you to have us make such mistakes. I am [pause] I am [long pause] \* \* [scrawl.] I am R. They tell me to give my name first.

(Yes, do so, if you can, by all means.)

I am \* \* [mentally read as 'J' possibly, but may be a scrawl.] [Long pause.] \* \* [scrawl and pencil had to be pulled down as it was superposing.] \* \* [resembles 'W' but probably a scrawl.] C [pause.]

[Spoken: "Name first, name first, name first, name first, name first."]

Name first.

(Yes, by all means.)

[Spoken: "Yes by all means. New regime. No more fooling, name first."]

[Long pause.] I [or 'J' and superposed.] G \* \* [scrawl.] [Pencil fell and new one given. Long pause.]

E [long pause.] M [Indian.] E is not right.

(All right. Stick to it.)

[Pause.] \* \* ['e' or 'a'] f [or 'b'] [pause] \* \* ['c?'] C [long pause.] \* \* [scrawl like the larger part of 'J'] [Groan.]

[Spoken: "Name first, name first, name first."<sup>434</sup>

[P. F. R.] A B C D E F G H I J [Pause] J [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

J K L M N O P Q R S T U V W W W [groan and pause.] I thought I could stop when I reached it but I did not do it.<sup>435</sup>

<sup>434</sup> "Father" evidently refers to Father John, who had been the chief agent in starting this new method. The most interesting incident of it is the trace of echolalia in it. The reader will notice that the automatic writing often repeated what the voice had said and once the voice repeated what I said. I have always contended that an echolalic condition was the best for getting accurate messages and perhaps for getting proper names more readily. At any rate this first real effort to institute the new method resulted in tendencies from which one might anticipate better results.

<sup>435</sup> The giving of the alphabet was evidently experiment with the new method and not an effort to do a particular thing, save that it was possibly the intention to stop at the letter wanted, as we do in table-tipping: for the communicator remarked that he could not stop when he thought he could. The sequel suggests that it was the intention to stop at J.

(I understand. Stick to it and you will get it yet.)

I must. I am told they are planning a new method which includes announcement first and then further evidential [read 'incident'] evidential work.

(I understand. I shall wait.)

It will [superposed and not read] It will strengthen all the work.

(Yes, it will.)

and answer some arguments but it is not easy to start in exactly. It has been a drifting method so long—

(I understand.)

[Groans and long pause.] J [?] Jh... [?] [N. R.] [Pause.] \* \* [scrawls] [Pause.] \* \* [scrawls.] [Indian.] F [Pause and pencil thrown away but I reinserted it. Indian.]

[Long pause.] R R R \* \* ['o'?] [P. F. R.] R [P. F. R.] R R \* \* [P. F. R. Struggle to keep control and slapped hand on pad.] \* \* [scrawls quickly written and superposed on previous writing.]

My name does not begin with R.<sup>436</sup>

(I understand.)

What is the matter with me.

(I do not know what is the matter, but I am willing to be very patient, especially as this is a new method.)

You are good and I suppose it is all for the best it is mighty inconvenient [N. R.] inconvenient to be unable to produce your own identification [Not read at time.] pas ... [N. R.] paste [N. R.] passport [groan.] I am J— yes that is right.

(Go ahead.)

J o [pause] h n [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

John [pause] John.

(Right so far.)<sup>437</sup>

<sup>436</sup> The letter R is not intelligible here, but as the communicator spontaneously remarked that it was wrong we may suppose that it is one of those peculiar and phonetically unaccountable mistakes which occur in this work. Of course, it is the last letter in the man's name, but there are no analogies in the work to explain its occurrence. In a pictographic process it might be the only letter caught, but I do not know examples of this sort of error.

<sup>437</sup> John was the first name of the person I wanted. Readers must remember that there was no sitter present and no clue whatever except my own mind as to who was wanted. The article had nothing about it to suggest even a man unless seen, and it could not be seen normally. It was still wrapped in oiled silk and the contents of the package unknown by me and untouched by the psychic. [John B. is the name and middle initial of the communicator with whom this one was confused in earlier communications.—G. O. T.]

I know it after I write it. I feel easier. *I* [underscored] yes but I must get the rest.

(Yes, stick to it.)

John [pause] J I . . . I'll get it.

(Yes, I know you will.)

[Pause.] John [pause.] J J is for J [pause] ohn J [pause.] I suppose I must have another siege now.

(Yes, go ahead.)

Time is of no account to us is it.

(I know that.)

and I am really setting a pace that all the rest must keep or I shall return and make a fuss.

(I understand.)

John J [pause and apparent attempt to erase the 'J'] [Pause.]

R R [P. F. R. Pause and Indian and pause.] I am John R [pause and distress.] ob [?] [P. F. R. and pause.] \* \* [scrawls] B [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

B B a . . . [Pause and Indian.] John B. Must I give it up.

(Just as you think best. You can try it tomorrow. If you can tell some incidents by which I shall know who is present, it will do, and the name may come easier tomorrow.)

I have not got the name yet but pretty [pretty] near. [Distress and pause.] neither B nor R is right.

(I understand.)

[Long pause.] \* \* [scrawl and pencil fell and picked up.] You know that I am most anxious to do what is expected of me not altogether because I am most desirous of communicating but because I have some interests in the work itself. It is of moment to me that the establishment of the fact is sustained [N. R.] sustained. I have some friends to whom I would send a definite [N. R.] message . . . definite . . . because I have still in mind the [P. F. R. and groan.] old life and the [P. F. R. and struggle.]

[Spoken: "She is coming back, she is coming back, and I got to go."]

[Pencil fell, pause and finger snapped like Whirlwind.]

[Change of Control.]

[One pencil rejected.] G. P. I want to assure you that this is all in the interests of more complete and clear records in the end.

(Yes, I believe it.)

It is a plan of Father John to have her spirit taken far away and



the body left as nearly deserted as possible and after a little time you will see. [Period inserted, but looks like figure '1' and read with next word as 'The'] we [pencil pointed till read correctly.] hope that the identity of the communicator is more quickly established.

(Yes, that is what I want.)

We see the need and work toward the issue [N. R.] issue. I give you this much [read 'truth'] simply....much ... simply to let you know that we have a plan.

(Yes, I understand, and may I ask a question?)

Yes.

(Have you anything clear to say about that healing?)

Yes I have much to say as soon as I can get at it. We are conscious of what has been left unsaid [read 'usual'] left ['unsaid' read] but we cannot take it up now.

(All right.)

I must see what is to be done for tomorrow. [Pencil fell and hand reached for mine.]

[*Subliminal.*]

I don't want to go. I want to stay. [Long pause.] Got a ... [pause.] Do you know my head feels so big. It doesn't feel natural. [Pause.]

Who was this great big G? Do you know?

(No.)

I see a great big letter G.

(It might be ....) [Thinking of George, but she spoke up before I finished my sentence.]

It's George. Might what?

(I was going to ask if it was George.)

Yes. I wonder why they left that G there. [Pause.] I can see Dr. Hodgson. [Smile on medium's face.] He told me not to be afraid, that everything was all right and if I would be good I would probably get a reward in heaven. Then he laughed. [Smile on medium's face.] Goodbye.<sup>438</sup>

(Goodbye.)

Are you disappointed?

(No.)

Is the work failing?

---

<sup>438</sup> The George is evidently George Pelham. Mrs. Chenoweth speaks of him in the way manifested in the record and Dr. Hodgson is said to be present, he being usually associated with G. P. This sitting was nothing more than experiment with the new method.

(No.)

All right. [Pause and awakened.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

May 20th, 1914. 9 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

When a word keeps ringing in your ears is it best to say it?

(Yes.)

It has absolutely no meaning to me. It is pabulum. [Pause.] It is always possible that it may be connected with some other place and that's why . . . [Sentence not finished by psychic, and pause.] <sup>439</sup>

I'm going away. [Pause.] Hm. [Long pause and reached for pencil and pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

I am so glad of this chance to try again. I am trying to keep steady and make a better witness than I did yesterday.

(Very good.)

You are a friend [pause] to me and mine in this matter.

(Yes, I hope so.)

I am John J [pause] J [pause.] a [N. R. and erased, tho I knew it was correct.] J [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] J [pause] \* \* [possible attempt at 'a' but not completed and so not read.] Two js

(Yes, I understand.)

I am John J [Indian] \* \* [scrawls in which one sign may be attempt at 'a,' but purposely not read.] [Pause.] J [pause] a ['a' erased] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

\* \* [scrawl] c c [apparent attempt to erase.] o b ['b' not completed and so purposely not read.] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it and you will get it clear.)

b J a c o b.

(Go ahead. "Jacob.")

You know you know now but there is more to follow.

(Yes, I know. Go ahead. You can finish it.)

[Long pause. P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

---

<sup>439</sup> The word "pabulum" has not known significance to me, but the remark about it immediately afterward rather suggests that it is intended for a cross reference.

A [sigh.] s t o r [last four letters purposely not read aloud, as they were not clear enough for any one but myself who watched the writing.]

(Now write it again and I think it will be right.)

A s [made like 'o' and not read.] t o r ['tor' not read purposely.]  
(Please to write it again. I know who it is, but write it again.)

A s t o r.

(Capital. That is right.)<sup>440</sup>

I am very willing to be the first to come under this new regime.

(Yes I am also glad that you could do so, as I know one who will be glad to hear from you.)

It is a great joy to feel that I am definitely attached to the world I so [read 'see'] so much loved. I cannot say that I was happy to go but I am sure that I tried to be philosophical about it and not mourn too much over an event that could bring me so much of progress if I could [struggle for control.] but accept my fate. [Pencil fell and psychic choked and had much trouble with her breathing, as if dying.]

(Keep calm. I will help.)

[Long pause and the breathing heavily again, sigh and trembling. I placed my hand on her forehead.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Poor little girl. [Pause and choked again.] Oh how can I say what I want to say? [Trouble with breathing again.] Keep calm, keep calm, keep calm. [Pause.] Horace, Horace. [Long pause, and then a calm. I removed hand from brow.]

My son [Not heard.]

(What?)

My son.

(What about him?) [Recently married.]<sup>441</sup>

[Pause and twisting and puckering of mouth as if trying to do or say something. I placed my hand on brow again and removed it when face resumed normal appearance.] Oh [distress and rubbed face.] It is so cold.

(What makes it so?)

---

<sup>440</sup> This is the correct name in full of the owner of the article, and I refused to read it aloud, until the writing was so clear that any one else would recognize it, though I saw the first time what was intended.

<sup>441</sup> The name Horace is not intelligible to me here. The communicator has a son who was recently married, but his name is not Horace. It did not occur to me at the time of the sitting that the reference might be to the son that was born after the communicator's death. Evidently there was an allusion to this child at an earlier sitting. Cf. p. 404 also.

Oh it is so cold. [Distress.] Oh. [Mrs. C. took her face in her two hands, rubbed both cheeks, patted them, then clapped hands.] Oh. [distress.] Stop that noise. [Hand reached for mine.] Oh, so cold. [Pause.] She will freeze, she will freeze. [Pause.] One could have chosen a sweeter death.

(Yes, what kind was it?)

[Pause.] I don't know. I feel so cold and so wet and yet I don't know what it is. I don't know. [Hand put on article.] What is that? I don't know who I am. I think I am drowning. I am not drowning. I am freezing, I am freezing, I am freezing, I am freezing. I am paralyzed, I am paralyzed. [Pause.] Where is Mr. Stead?

(Why mention him?)

Well, where is he? He hasn't been here for a long time. I can't stand it.

(Yes you can. You have done awfully well.)

[Half crying.] Oh. [distress, and pause.] Everything is so green. What is that green light shining in my eyes. [Pause and awakened.] <sup>442</sup>

The writing was unusually slow today, tho the break down made the sitting a short one.

### Chapter XXVI, Series XXII, May 25, 26, 27, 1914

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

May 25th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Article of Mr. T—— put on table, but not seen by psychic. Long pause. Sigh, and some breathing as if approaching distress. Long pause. Shaking and rolling of hand for some moments. Groans and distress. Long pause and reached for pencil. Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

J \* \* [N. R.] [Hand relaxed hold on pencil, pause and made a scrawl showing difficulty in getting control again. Distress and pause.]

No danger I will not be far away but go and [pause] I will follow. [P. F. R.] I have been [P. F. R. and groan] here before but you cannot tell that I suppose until I give you some intimation of it. I am most excited over the possibilities of this work for I see it the power

<sup>442</sup> Evidently the allusion to the cold and the wet is to the manner of his death on the Titanic. The water was full of ice. It is very pertinent to mention Mr. Stead in this connection, as he, too, lost his life on the same occasion. The reference to a green light shining in his eyes is not intelligible.

[Possibly an allusion to the starboard light on the ship.]

[Mr. T——'s article removed, as I saw it was not he.] which may revolutionize systems and forms objectionable to that inner sense of right and justice and God. [Period carefully inserted, turning the pencil on the point, as if to emphasize it.]

I do not care to moralize. It is out of my line but I do wish before I begin on the strict evidential work to give one word in answer to any question which may arise as to why I come.

(I cannot tell what I should ask until I know who it is, so that my question might be relevant.)

Not alone for personal satisfaction does one come here but the impulse of the effort is to leave a [pause] definite [read and pause.] ly clear thought which shall help all humanity. I am J. J. A. [Mr. A.'s article put on table.]

(All right. Thank you.)

I was so much impressed with the real importance of the work that I begged a chance to come once more.

(I am very glad you were permitted, as I know some one who will be glad to get some good evidence of identity.)

Yes I know to whom you refer.

(I understand. Go ahead.)

I am not inclined to waste your time. I desire to be definite and to let no disappointing memories haunt my visions of this time. I know quite well how easily the mind is turned from its course for I was much addicted to the themes regarding psychological and occult matters. I think few of my friends knew of the real purposes of my life but that is neither here nor there. I care not a whit for that. I do wish to send the [distress, pause.] message I have planned.

(Yes I hope you can give it.)

[Pause.] Yes [pause] Kindly wait a moment.

(Yes, I shall.)

[Pause.] To [pause] W ['W' crased] to [groan] \* \* [scrawls, but probably attempt to start 'M' as this was possibly the original intention with 'W' above, for the first stroke of it was made as here, like an incomplete 'J'] [Pause.]

M [Purposely not read, as I saw it to be the initial of wife's name.] [Pause] M [pause] M \* \* [scrawl and hand relaxed hold on pencil. Pause.] M [P. F. R. and Indian.] r Mr. [P. F. R.] M a [Indian.] M a [pause] \* \* [scrawl starting 'd']

I am still pursued by the insistent command that I name the one I wish to send my message to. [Period inserted.]

(Yes, take your time. I hope you will get the name.)

I must do so. [Medium began to choke or struggle for breath. I

held my hand on her forehead. There was a pause and choking again, with very difficult breathing. Then a hard struggle and exclaimed: "Oh dear." Cough and groans as if dying. While this was going on the writing began.]

Ma [pause] d [pause] Made \* \* [possible attempt at 'i' but not read] M [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] M a d e l \* \* [apparent attempt at 'i' but ended in scrawl and not read.] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

M a [P. F. R.] (Stick to it.) M a d e l e e n ['een' erased.]

(Stick to it.)

M a d e l i n e [erased.] M [imperfectly made. P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

M a d e l i n e

(M-A-D-E-L-I-N-E.)

y . . . \* \* [scrawl] no not quite.<sup>443</sup>

(All right. Take your time.)

[Pause.] My wife (Yes, go ahead.) and I so much wish to counsel her and aid [read 'did'] aid her now.

(What. . . .?) [Writing went on.]

you may know why.

(No, I do not. If you can give the counsel to me I shall see that she gets it.)

I know you will. William will know why. [Pause. P. F. R.]<sup>444</sup>

(Stick to it.)

I must stick to it.

(Yes, finish your message.)

It is important for my happiness and for hers and for our darling son my son. [Great difficulty in writing and struggle to keep control, uttering: "Oh God! Oh God!" P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

My brave little girl. I have known all that has happened and am glad that you have been so wise and am proud and happy \* \* [scrawl. P. F. R.] I have some very personal things to say some [pause] plans.

(Yes, what plans?)

about the future for [P. F. R. and struggle for control.] you. Do

<sup>443</sup> The W given before the attempt at his wife's name may be either the initial of a relative, William Astor, or a mistake. But Mr. is evidently for "Mrs." Madeleine is the name of his wife.

<sup>444</sup> William is the name of a relative, but there is no special reason for the mention of him in this connection.

not think that I can or am unaware of the responsibilities that fell on you when I was taken away but I am trying in my way to do whatever I can to share the care. I watch the growth. I love you both. Oh yes and I am so glad you did [read 'and'] did not go when I did. I know you wished it had been so. That you had stayed with me and gone with me but no Q [read 'I' and P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Catalepsy occurred and I had to rub the hand and arm. They were quite cold and head and neck were also quite stiff. After some minutes hand relaxed and after pause showed signs of wanting to write. Pencil was adjusted.]

Q u e e n [Pause and pencil fell.] <sup>445</sup>

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh my! [Groans. Long pause and distress and long pause. Distress, groans, long pause, distress and long pause.]

Ina [pause] Madelina.

(Madelina who?)

[Pause and sigh. Opened eyes and closed them again.] Don't let the \* \* [not caught.] (What?) Don't let . . . Don't let the light know.

(I won't.)

We don't want any suggestion. [Pause.] I don't know who any one would be named Jacob, Jake, Jake, Jacob, Jacob.

(Yes.)

Jacob is Jacob. [Pause and awakened.] <sup>446</sup>

In her normal state Mrs. C. remarked that she had felt her mother so much the last week. A previous record, May 19th, shows that her mother accompanied her going out in the first attempt to change the method and to deepen the trance.

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Miss P.

May 26th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Cough. Long pause. Sitter admitted. Indian. Pause.] Hm.

<sup>445</sup> I had supposed that "Queen" was a pet name for his wife, but the sequel shows that it was not.

<sup>446</sup> Madelina is evidently an attempt to get the name of his wife correctly. I supposed it was Madeline, but her own statement to me was that it was Madeleine. The avowed ignorance of the subconscious as to the meaning of Jacob in this connection is interesting as removing the objection that it knew all along who was meant.

[Very long pause. Hand spread out flat on pad. Struggle as if choking. Pause and reached for pencil. Long pause. Difficulty in holding pencil as hand did not take it in a natural manner, fingers being flattened out as if cataleptic, and then straightened up, but still did not hold it easily.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

\* \* [scrawl.] My dear [Pause and P. F. R. Pause and P. F. R.]  
 \* \* come I come to you to [distress] give my evidence of my survival after death. I am not conscious of so great a change except that some perceptions are intensified [read 'interfused'] intensified and some are less persistent. I am not glad that I came here but having come I am glad that I found life so like the life I had left. I [struggle to keep control and pencil almost fell.] must give some name I am told. [P. F. R.]

(I understand. Stick to it.)

\* \* [scrawl.] [P. F. R.] \* \* [scrawl like a 'J' and line across page due to difficulty in keeping control.] [P. F. R. twice.]

I can and will do so in a minute but I get confused.

(I understand and we shall be patient. Take your time.)

I hear your voice. [Pause.] She is here. [Pause, P. F. R. Pause.]  
 I am so glad she is here at last at last. [P. F. R. twice.]

(Yes, and if you can tell who it is, it will be a good point.)

[Struggle for control and distress. Long pause.] \* \* [scrawls]  
 [Long pause.] I am \* \* [scrawl or small letter 'p'] J [erased.]

(All right.)

\* \* [scrawl.] Wait a minute.

(Yes, I shall. Take your time.)

B B [P. F. R. Pause.] I am so slow you will leave me I am afraid.

(No, I shall stand by you in all your efforts. The new development in the case makes it a little harder and slower to get through.)

I have been here before and had not such hard work with another member of my family.

(Did you communicate?)

Yes I am sure I did. [Pencil thrown down and fingers snapped like Jennie P.'s action. New pencil given, but control did not change.]

Why must I stick to one point.

(If you cannot make that point go on to what you can do and after a little practice you can do better.)

You know B do you not.



(I personally do not, but perhaps the friend present does.) [Sitter shook head.] (No, not yet.)

B [long pause.] rather of A [read 'A' or 'O' as I was doubtful.] \* \* [scrawls tho one seems like 'C'] [Long pause.] A You know who.<sup>447</sup>

(No, I am not sure of the meaning of A.) [Thinking of communicator in yesterday's sitting.] [Pause.] (It takes more to make that clear. There are probably many A's in my and the friend's acquaintance.)

[Pencil fell and finger snapped in Jennie P.'s manner. Two pencils rejected.]

[Change of Control.]

J. P.

(Yes, I knew it.)

and I will try and help a little bit [none of this read.] will try and help a little. Father John is here and he has tried to help but it looks as if the old method would have to be resorted to this time but you will [N. R.] understand [N. R.] will understand that it is only a temporary return to the methods of the philistines.

(Yes, I understand.)

It is so hard sometimes to make new tracks through a forest [N. R.] forest. There are so many things to be said here today that an [read 'we' and 'are'] an [N. R.] an ordinary spirit who cares [N. R.] m... cares more to get a message through than he does [N. R.] for ... does for all your scientific work that he loses [new pencil given, when old one was thrown down.] his patience and says Give me a chance without any of this nerve [N. R.] wracking ... nerve ... business of J. H. H.

(All right.)

It is too funny to see the way some of the old communicators look on the new regime but J. J. A. took it all right.

(Yes, he did.)

He is a fine sport yes that's right [to delayed reading] he will be heard [N. R.] from . . . heard . . . yet and the weight of his message will help some.

---

<sup>447</sup> The letter B is not intelligible here except that it is probably intended for the initial letter of the word "Brother" which finally comes. This mistake grows out of the impression either by the control or the subconscious of the psychic that a proper name is being attempted. I refused to recognize the meaning of A because the meaning of B was uncertain. The sequel, however, showed that B was the initial of a deceased Uncle of the sitter. She did not recognize its possible meaning here.

I want to tell you about this man who comes to your friend  
(All right.)

and he is laughing with Hodgson and G. P. and says after all he is glad enough to be here. Just think of the coward [N. R.] coward [N. R. except mentally.] C o w a r d to drop the pencil and let me explain for him but he says she will understand that he just hated [read 'needed'] hated anything too systematic. I will not say too much only that he is quite excited to be here once more. There are 3 here together. 2 men and a lady who each have [read 'here'] have some message of love for your friend. I might add a word [new pencil given] a greeting for myself—but one the mother I mean the mother in the spirit land sends greetings and a young man and another man. These three are most in evidence just now and the older [read 'other'] older man has much to say— Is there not also beside[s] these a father of the lady present who is in the spirit

(You should tell that.)

Indeed now don't put on airs with me just because you have a new regime at your back. Don't you know the place I occupy a sort of a go-between.

(Yes, I understand, but I am trying to have the record so my critics would not say it is guessing; only, if it is this, that you are doing it.)

Oh those critics make a good lash for you to use on us. What do we care. We know the limitations and they do not. But seriously I will try and get some more definite message. It was because there was a sort of a stumbling between the new and old methods that I came but if I stay and talk [N. R.] talk as I have you won't get back tomorrow for your typewriter will be singing all night. I think it is a scheme of yours to save work as well as material that you keep the communicators hobbling along on one [neither word correctly read] foot on [N. R.] one . . . on . . . so long but I do not help you in any such mild [N. R.] mild deception.

I go now to let the friends speak for themselves. I have cleared the way. Goodbye now. Whirlwind.

(Thank you.)

[Change of Control.]

[P. F. R. Pause.] I am going to try and use [N. R.] use some of this surplus energy to get to you. I [written above and hand pulled down] am not quite as opposed to the new plan as our swift friend may lead you to suppose.

(I understand her.)

It was \* \* [Sitter interrupted with statement.]

(Miss P.: I wish to say something. I was asked to come here. I came hoping to be greeted by my friends on your side. You and others have been using all the valuable time with what seems to me words. Kindly sit up and give me some good material and evidence.)<sup>448</sup>

(J. H. H.: I understand the difficulty. Don't worry about that.)

[Pause.]

(Miss P.: Make a stagger at something.)

[Pause.] How can one refuse such a stirring appeal. I was just trying to start in all right. you . . . [Pencil fell and pause.]

[Change of Control.]

Is that a slur on me. [Jennie P.'s writing.]

(No, the friend present does not clearly realize the type of work done here. I understand.)

My only purpose was to help her friends to come. J. P.

(I understand.)

[Long pause.]

[Change of Control.]

[New pencil given when hand signified a desire to write.]

Too bad little girl for we are here and as eager to give as you to receive. [Losing control.]

(I know it.)

Mother [pause] mother. [Pencil fell and very long pause.]

[Subliminal.]

[Groans. Pause, sighs. Pause and apparently sought pencil but disregarded it when offered. Long pause and sigh, pause and groan.]

Can't help it. [Pause.] Can't help it. [Pause.] Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

[Pause. Opened eyes and closed them again. Sitter left room. Mrs. C. awakened with a headache, which I helped by holding my hand on forehead. She complained of dizziness after awaking.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Miss P. May 27th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[Subliminal.]

[Sitter admitted. Pause and sigh with slight distress. Pause and reached for pencil and pause.]

<sup>448</sup> The sitter had come with high hopes of getting some good cross references with the case with which she was working. She was the lady whom Dr. Hodgson identified so well along with the psychic in her experiments. But there is not a trace in this record of recognition or of evidence of the presence of the person from whom she was anxious to hear.

*[Automatic Writing.]*

\* \* [scrawl and pause.] I want to come and write  
(You are welcome.)

to my [pause] own little girl and not be dependent on another. I know somewhat of the work and the care it is for I have communicated before at another place. I have much to write much I desire to express if only I can get hold right. She is so mediumistic [N. R.] much of a light herself that the impressions are often given F a t h e r [pause.]

(Good, go ahead.)

I know [distress] better perhaps than many just what is needed and how much the spirit philosophy and association sustains you dear but often the way is so clearly marked by impressions direct that we do not see the advantages of the inter [N. R. and new line begun.] course . . . intercourse until it is made plain by some sign from you. [struggle.] I know [distress] how \* \* [apparently started to make 'h' but erased] often you need the uplift [pause] so temperamental so spiritual. I have R [P. F. R. and struggle.] R near.

(Who is R?)

R i c h a r d [P. F. R. Indian.]

(Stick to it.)

H o d g s o n

(Thank you. I knew that from the writing and wanted to see that my inference was right. Now you said a moment ago that you had communicated elsewhere. Can you tell anything about that?)

He knows about it and that is why he helps me now. I ought to be a good communicator and I think I could be but it \* \* [erased] is like learning all over again. It is easier now than yesterday. I am getting accustomed to [distress] the state of prohibitive action. I am not idle when away from here for I learned that the way to be happy over here when cut [read 'out' and hand paused till corrected] away from the old methods of association was to find some new and expressive way to connect the life with the dear ones left. I am and have been glad of all the help which has come from you to me dear by your steady and unswerving help and the possibilities of my contact and knowledge.<sup>449</sup>

It was not hard to go at [read 'out' and hand paused till cor-

<sup>449</sup> The sitter's father had died recently and had evidently communicated through the psychic she was working with. There is apparent allusion to this in the last line where "contact and knowledge" are mentioned. It was quite pertinent to have Dr. Hodgson present, as he knew the sitter so well in life. The use of the name Richard is not the custom of Mrs. Chenoweth's mind. She always speaks of him as "Dr. Hodgson." The note at the end of the sitting calls attention to an important circumstance in the mechanics of the work.

rected.] last but the idea of a man being cut away from the life he has known and loved is not as easy as one might think but I have so many many with me who have made it a pleasure to be here. I want to write about [distress] her.

(All right, go ahead. Take your time.)

It is one dear to us both who is here with me today. [P. F. R.] I will get it yet and did I say one there are 2 [N. R.] 2

(Miss P.: Quite right.)

and I wish to give you some word from each as there is so much love and constant and abiding affection. It is a [struggle and distress, with some signs of choking.] I am still here. Do not fear for me. I have hold now and I hope to stay till I get a few points but one's affections sometimes [pause] produce a sense of desire to say more of what is in the heart than the head—

(Good, I understand that.)

I try to hold to both principles. \* \* ['I' or 2 in answer to delayed reading of 'both'] Just a minute. He is also here.

(Who is?)

a [pause] one [P. F. R.] I [possibly for 'J'] I I am I am ... [difficulty in writing begins] My darling \* \* [scrawl] [Indian and pause.] M [pause] \* \* [scrawl] [Hand rose in the air and fumbled pencil as if trying to secure good control.] C C C 1 1 [two 'lls' read as 'H.'] no.

(All right. Stick to it.)

C 1 ... C l a r ... C l a r [pause] ke. \* \* [scrawl.] P. F. R.] J o s e p h Yes. [to reading.] Joseph Joe [distress and Indian.]<sup>450</sup>

I am not ready to give up to any one else for I am not half through. I want to speak about some plans for the summer which are already in the air and which are fairly way underway but I just wish to put a seal of approval as I see them being [pause] carried out to [pause and tapping pencil] good and helpful end.

(Can you tell what the plans are?)

I can tell somewhat for there is another who is concerned in these plans who is still in your world and who has to be thought of and for whom some concern is felt. I do not mean a serious [serious] concern but a desire for the best to come to that one. You understand what I mean.

(If you say who it is.)

Yes I expected that. You know I will say all I can but it is one in

<sup>450</sup> ["Clarke" and "Joseph" not identified by sitter or J. H. H. in notes. —G. O. T.]

whom I have an interest also but who is not really ill but is of some concern to my child here present today.

(Miss P.: Father ...) Yes. (I am listening and will carry any message you send to ...) [I waved hand to sitter because I saw she was going to say "Mother."]

Yes I know and I will tell you in a moment. It is a message of devotion to her [pause] to [pause and pencil tapped pad.] have the assurance that every step of the way is but a path to me— to me for I wait for her coming as if it were the joyous reunion.<sup>451</sup> (Yes, what ...?) Just a minute. It will not be yet dear child for I cannot see the event as near as I myself could wish but I know your peace will be assured if [distress and groan] a longer time is yours for sweet companionship. I love you both I love you and care for you and try to make conditions from this side will [erased] which will make a peaceful end. Not the end for me however [forever? N. R.] I stay by a little longer. Have I made a stagger at it.

(Yes, you have.) (Miss P.: Father, I am delighted.)

One could not help taking up the cudgel after that appeal— I am quite happy to know that my life and name is still a part of your life and always yes always as long as you stay. I shall be near you and in any hour of doubt or uncertainty you may know that I am as close to you as spirit can be to m...

(Miss P.: Father, come to me tomorrow when I am with the other light.)

Yes I know and I will make effort to refer to this effort here.

(Can you ....?) [Writing began.]

You mean to ask me if I can tell where she is going.

(No, can you take a word to say there?)

I will try.

(Take the word "Cat.")

Cat (Cat, yes.) Easy enough. I know cats enough to remind me. I mean real cats not the human ones.

I wanted to refer to your grandmother your mother's mother who passed over [P. F. R.] so long ago.

(Miss P.: Yes.)

a woman of rare sweetness but of very strong determined makeup who has found it hard to make her beliefs fit up with her experiences but who sometimes visits you and wonders at the great variety of interests which you entertain. She is not one of the 3 whom I referred to but is an extra.

<sup>451</sup> Sitter's mother was living, but not in robust health. Plans for the summer must have included arrangements for her.—G. O. T.

I want also to speak of the *little* [underscored twice] girl over here you know a wee one. I cannot write more. [Pause.] E E E l ... [Distress and heavy breathing.] E l i ... Z a beth [Pencil fell and hand reached for mine and was cataleptic. Rubbed for some time and recovered.] <sup>452</sup>

[*Subliminal.*]

[Long pause.] I want to speak. I want to speak.

(All right.) (Miss P.: Go on.) [Long pause.]

Hm. [Half groan. Pause.] Hm. [Pause, distress and long pause.] Yes. [Pause.] Who are these people?

(Friends, I imagine.)

Yes, who is this B. You know B.?

(Miss P.: Yes, it is my uncle.)

Does he begin with B?

(Miss P.: Yes.) <sup>453</sup>

Well, do other people begin with B in your family. Is it the only B you got in it?

(Miss P.: No.)

Is it a family name?

(Miss P.: Yes.)

\* \* \* \* \* [Not caught.]

(Miss P.: Perhaps it is a lady.)

It is. Wait a minute. [Pause.] She had such a dreadful headache before she went away. She holds her hand up and says it was a weakness, not so much intense agony. It was a weight like ... She can't open her eyes. She is not awful young, nor old. [Pause.] Her hair must have been brown, light brown, not very dark. Do you know any one named Lou. It sounds like the first part was Lou. It may be Louie.

(Miss P.: No. I don't know.)

Do you know Lucy. Have you got an Aunt that begins with L? • Has she got a B after it?

(Miss P.: No.)

Honest and true? She is young, not awful young and not old. L. B. initials. She was something to you. \* \* \* \* \* [Two or three sentences not caught as medium was speaking too fast.]

<sup>452</sup> The sitter had many interests—a fact not known to the psychic, as she did not know sitter. Points as to “cat” test and “Elizabeth” and maternal grandmother were not annotated at the time.—G. O. T.

<sup>453</sup> The sitter has an Uncle B recently deceased. She should not have given away the relationship here, as it spoiled the whole case.

(Miss P.: I have a cousin on this side.) L. B.? (Miss P.: Not on this side.)

Has she got any one close to her in spirit?

(Miss P.: She had a brother.)

No a woman. \* \* \* \* [not caught.] Am I speaking too fast? <sup>454</sup>  
(Yes.)

She was more material than you. [Pause and smile.] There is a pet name. I can't give it. It is not Birdie, is it?

(Miss P.: My uncle always called me Birdie.) <sup>455</sup>

I thought it was your father. \* \* \* \* He is a good fellow. Free in everything, big and free. He says Birdie dear, I have heard from her. Isn't that gladsome to her.

(Yes.) (Miss P.: My uncle must come and speak to me some other time.)

Yes he wants to.

(Miss P.: Perhaps tomorrow.)

Yes.

(Miss P.: At my meeting with the other light.)

You will have birds and cats together. He will be there, and I see a great big H. Goodbye, Birdie.

(Miss P.: Goodbye.)

[Long pause, sitter left and Mrs. C. awakened.]

Near the beginning, while the writing was going on, I recognized the style of Dr. Hodgson and wrote the words "Hodgson and father" on a piece of paper and showed it to sitter to indicate that I saw Hodgson was helping. The sequel showed that I was correct. Then later the style of Jennie P. appeared but not so marked as normally and continued to the end. The first signs of it appeared with the words "Not the end," tho it is possible that it coalesced with that of Dr. Hodgson for a little while before.

#### Chapter XXVII, Series XXIII, June 1, 2, 3, 1914

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

June 1st, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Mr. T——'s article put on table, wrapped up in oiled silk, while Mrs. C. was still normal. She never had any knowledge normally to

<sup>454</sup> [Note not supplied, probably owing to confusion and omissions.—G. O. T.]

<sup>455</sup> This Uncle B always called the sitter Birdie. Again she should not have indicated this. As a sitter she shows a very marked disposition to give herself away.



whom it belonged. I put it there purposely while she was normal to help bring him more certainly. The sequel showed it had no effect unless to influence the subliminal at the end. Before the sitting was over I removed it and replaced it with that of Mr. Astor, but not till long after he had identified himself.]

[Cough and long pause. Cough and pause.]

[Starlight.]

Hello, you know me.

(Yes.)

You don't mind, do you?

(No, exactly right.)

Goodbye.

(Goodbye, thanks.)

Yes. [Long pause.]

[Prior to sitting Mrs. C. had told me of a sitter last week she wanted to help, Starlight having had the control at her sitting. It is an important case requiring treatment.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Groan and slight difficulty in breathing. Pause and groan.] I can't see. [Pause and rubbed face with some distress. Pause.]

It is dreadful to be blind. [Long pause and reached for pencil and pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

\* \* [scrawl in form of line.] \* \* [scrawl tho apparent attempt at a letter, as if starting an 'M.' P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] \* \* [scrawl like starting an 'M.' Pause.] \* \* [scrawl like 'h' or possible attempt at 'M' again.]

I am trying to get hold of the pencil.

(All right. Take your time.)

There seems to be a muscular [N. R.] action which precedes mine and hinders my freedom. I am better now [pause] I mean I have better hold.

(I understand.)

I come as desired and must make some points in my character or career plain. I have so many matters of interest and so many friends to whom I would give a message. I [so read tho it may be an attempt at 'J.' Writing became heavy and labored.] \* \* [scrawl.] yes [possibly to reading of 'I'] J ast [purposely not read aloud at

the time, knowing it might be for 'Astor'] a... [P. F. R. twice.] [Pause.]

My father is here with me and has a curious influence over me.

(Let me be certain just who you are yourself.)

I thought you knew I was expected.

(I expected a certain person, but nothing has come on the paper to make me sure who it is, and I ask only that I may know how to follow the writing and to help make you clear.)

I see it all now but do not think me unreasonable that I did not at once see your position. I was taking up matters where I left them last week. no I do not mean last week but before when I tried to come to you y o u [writing heavy and difficulty in keeping control.]

[P. F. R.]

(All right. Stick to it and I shall find who you are.)

[Pause.] yes [pause] In a minute.

(All right.)

\* \* [scrawl.] [Pause.] J o h n J a c o b again.

(All right. I know who it is.)

It is not presumption for I am vitally interested in the subject from a larger standpoint than the personal satisfaction which comes from connecting with my own dear ones.

(I understand and would ask what the word 'Queen' meant before which you gave at the end?)

I had in mind an affair of another period of my life and had meant to refer to it earlier but it came without volition just as I was about to retire. It might have been subject to another interpretation which I did not have in mind. I did not intend it as meaning a special name for my wife. [This was exactly what I had supposed it actually to be, a pet name for her.]

(All right, explain exactly what it did mean.)

Yes if I am able I will do it. [Period inserted.] I do not like to be too sure of what I can do for I am on unstable ground as yet.

(I understand.)

I had an experience some [read 'come' and hand pointed.] years ago English associations. Queen Victoria which I had thought I would refer to but on reflection could not see how it could be verified as it involved people who would not make reply to questionings.<sup>456</sup> I had seriously thought of it and suppose it was on my mind. The whole

---

<sup>456</sup> This is a voluntary explanation of what the reference to "Queen" meant and before I knew that it was not the pet name of the communicator's wife. Evidently it came involuntarily the first time and the reason given here for its uselessness is certainly correct.

thing was about this subject for I was not ignorant of some power which enabled men to know and express what normal people knew nothing about.

(When you are ready tell me to ask a question. Go ahead.)

I knew much more about this [this] thought than I was supposed to know and had I lived would have known still more. ask.

(Do you remember a clergyman who was interested in this subject?) [I had R. Heber Newton in mind, who was in some way connected with Mr. Astor. Dr. Savage would have been the person that the subliminal would most naturally think of in this connection.]

Yes and I think he knew of my interest too. I did not make as great a noise as our friend Stead but in my own mind I had convictions [read 'connections' and hand paused till corrected.] and only needed more proof of the value of the power.

I do not want to get into a philosophizing mood for I have a desire to be a good communicator for real black and white evidence. yes [to corrected reading, having been read 'coincidence' doubtfully] I wish to refer to the clergyman more directly and definitely for some of his statements have helped me since I came here and more—I have tried to place myself in such a light that he should see me. [P. F. R. and pause.]

H e [pause] is [pause] I will write it soon.

(All right.)

H e b c ['c' purposely not read, as I did not wish to confuse.] [Pause.] N [Long pause and P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] H e b e r [Pause.] Heber [P. F. R. and Indian. Pause.] Heber [Pause and gritting teeth in struggle.] N [pause.]

I will do it if you have patience.

(Yes, I have patience. Go ahead. You will get it.)

Episcopalian Rector.

(Yes.)

[Pause.] E H o r b e r N e w . . . \* \* [scrawl, but possibly attempt at 't'] [P. F. R. Indian.] Newton.

(Good, that is capital. Tell what you can to identify yourself to him.)

Yes that I will do. [Period inserted.] Do you know him.

(Yes, I know him well.)<sup>457</sup>

---

<sup>457</sup> Dr. R. Heber Newton was pastor of the church which Mr. Astor used frequently to attend. Mrs. Chenoweth knew of Dr. Savage's interest in psychic research and her subconsciousness would most naturally have guessed him in this

Glad am I to send much to him. [Period inserted.] Am I doing as well as the average.

(Yes, perhaps more so.)

I intend to be p [N. R.] Premier (Good.) if will makes [pause] good [pause] stuff.

(Will is essential.)

Some little sense I suppose enters in. [Period inserted.] I have in mind some things our fearless friend preached on this theme the reality of the life hereafter.<sup>458</sup>

(Yes.)

I am weakening.

(I understand. I shall be patient.)

May I come again.

(Yes, you certainly can. I hope to have Mr. T—— tomorrow and perhaps you can come next week.)

[Pause.] a week from today June 8.

(Yes, that's right.)

I will return and in the meantime pardon my seeming intrusion and accept my heartiest greetings for yourself.

(Thank you.)

[Pencil fell and long pause. I mentally wished Mr. T—— to take control.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Groan.] Isn't it lovely up the Hudson. [Long pause, rubbed face and smiled.] Whose toboggan is that?

(I don't know. Tell if you can.)

[Pause.] I think it belongs to [pause] the son. You know another man who got the bad head?

(Who is that?)

I don't know his name. He went out so quick. I don't know whether it was an automobile or an accident, but it was awful quick. Has he got a boy left? I guess he is in college or school. I think it is his toboggan. [Pause.] It is funny we always called him Jack.

(Yes, Jack who?)<sup>459</sup>

[Pause.] We thought he was Jack T—— [full surname], didn't we. But he isn't, is he?

---

situation. She knew nothing about Dr. Newton's relation to the subject and nothing about his relation to the communicator.

<sup>458</sup> Many persons saw in Dr. Newton's preaching disguised references to this subject, but there was never any avowed interest in it publicly.

<sup>459</sup> Mr. T.'s son had no connection with the toboggan slide on the Hudson, and no accident at all, that his mother knew of.

(Why not?)

I don't know. [Pause.] I see a pretty little concrete house, something like a bungalow effect. [Pause.]

(Where?)<sup>460</sup>

I don't know. [Hand reached for mine.] I got to go, sorry. [Long pause and awakened.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

June 2nd, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sigh, long pause.] \* \* [Something like Indian gibberish, but not caught.] [Long pause. Sigh, pause and slight movement of hand across pad. Reached for pencil which fell and was reinserted twice and then pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

I am here and my desire is as strong as hers to have only the clearest word. If you could know the life of sincere affection and admiration for her which was mine you would understand how [pause] I am [pause] a [pause] partner in her experiences now. I am not content to go on and make new associations here but insist on the [pause and pencil tapped] privileges of life as I now see it and only wish I had been better [better] prepared for this temporary separation by a knowledge of the laws governing the spiritual contact.

I am making an effort to [N. R.] forget . . . to forget the sorrow and enter into the joy. It should not be a shadow over her life and the life of the children for there is so much still to live for. They have each other and they [great difficulty in writing.] still have Papa [delay in reading] papa to watch [N. R.] watch over them. I am J T— [full surname] [Losing control.]

(I thought so, and am ready . . . ) Yes. (to receive any message you can send. And I believe your wife wanted you to catch certain things and repeat them here.)

Yes I know it and am going to try to repeat them. I heard Are you happier and better satisfied now and I repeat and answer yes and there was a question about him wait a question about my son

(Yes, tell that.)

and [pause] I answer to that "I do." [Quotation marks and period inserted by communicator.] Oh why is it so hard to say the exact words which would mean so much to her. [Period inserted.]

<sup>460</sup> Sitter's note: "Our own" concrete house.

(May I ask what it is about the son? Do you know?)

Yes about a plan for the future near at hand for him.

(What particular future?)

[Pause.] I do not understand your question.

(I mean, what special plan for the future?)

The one I refer to has to do with his Summer. The future of his work is another question. That must be decided [N. R.] decided soon but was not what I had in mind. I know that the study [N. R.] study and opening for his career will come through an introduction which [pause] reverts to my own life.

(Which son . . . . .?)

Older.

(All right.)

There is a clear and definite line for him. The other boy more boyish and unsettled [Read 'consulted' doubtfully] unsettled but the school plans are such as to bring out [pause] definite results. [difficulty in writing.]

I wish I could get help for this stage fright.

(Before, some time ago, you referred to some advice for this younger one and can you tell what it was about and intended for?)

[Pause.] Yes I am not worried or alarmed about him. I see that his mother would like to have a clearer conception for him and I would urge her to let some questions about his future wait until he is a little more developed. I mean that his associations will awaken a new current of thought. He is very responsive and psychic and somewhat dreamy but it is not lack of application [pause] nor is it negligence but a tume [time] of unawakened purpose. One day he thinks he will do one thing and is quite enthusiastic and the next day he may change entirely. Don't worry Manr ['Mine' or 'Mama'] ain. It is only youth and temperament. He will be all right and take a course which will adapt itself to him. a [struggle for control.] course is just what I want to write about not a scientific course that would be too grinding [N. R.] grinding for him but a \* \* [scrawls and pause.] phiosophical [philosophical] and preparatory course for a foundation Classical is what I mean is it not.

(That will cover the idea.)<sup>461</sup>

yes I thought so. You see it is hard for her to advise when she feels I may know more than she does.

---

<sup>461</sup> The older son is evidently referred to here first, as there was a definite plan formed for him for the summer. The younger, "more boyish" son is also alluded to, and what is said about his education is very pertinent, as he was debating with himself what he should decide on for a career.

(Could I help any in that situation?)

Certainly your experience is of value and she would welcome your [pause] suggestion.

(I shall be glad to help and anything further you wish to say will be welcome.)

I have a further message. Yes I know how you try to see me and I am aware when you sit for my coming and it helps me when you concentrate on me. [Difficulty in writing, pencil fell. New one inserted.]

I do feel that I am a factor in the lives [N. R.] lives of you all of you. I want to speak of a small picture

(Yes.)

which I have seen in her hands an . . . [pause and pencil moved in the air.] and I want to refer to a guest who had something to say about me and about this kind of work which was a surprise [surprise] and a pleasure to me as to her <sup>462</sup> I wonder if she has a recollection of my love of certain kinds of pottery [N. R.]

(Certain kind of what?)

p [pause] pottery yes [to reading] <sup>463</sup>

(I shall inquire. Go ahead.)

and I also want to write about Harvard a Harvard a Harvard friend.

(Yes do so, and tell all you can.)

I know she will recall him and something else about Harvard too.

(Yes, tell exactly what that thing is.)

Associations and [distress] friends and a connection [struggle to write] of a k . . . [superposed and pad moved] kind rather unusual. [struggle.]

(Stick to it.)

You know something of what I am trying to write.

(All right. Get it if you can.)

[Pause.] A l u m n u s [pause] and 1 8 [relaxed hold on pencil.]

(Stick to it.)

[Indian.] 1 8 [pause] 9 [Long pause.] \* \* [scrawl.] 1 1

8 [pause] 9 0 [Uncertain, but so read] no later.

(All right.)

1 8 9 2 [Pause and P. F. R.] not quite right.

(All right, stick to it.)

1 8 9 \* \* 8 better. [Groan and hand came to me to end séance,

<sup>462</sup> Sitter did not annotate this at the time, in reply to J. H. H.'s question. It is now too late.—G. O. T.

<sup>463</sup> Refers possibly to the copper and glass chandelier in his home, of which he was fond, according to J. H. H.'s note made at the time.

and I refused to take it.] \* \* [probably attempt at 'M' and distress.] M o [or attempt at 'a'] \* \* [scrawl.] e [or 'c'] [Pause and P. F. R.]

(Stick to it and you will get it.)

[Pause, distress, pause.] C [mentally so read, but not aloud.] C a m b r i d g e A place of memories [hand tried again to give up but I refused to take it, and P. F. R. Pause.] V V [Not read either time.] E Veritas. [P. F. R. and pause.] E Veritas. E Veritas.

(I know the word 'Veritas.' Why do you give it exactly?)

H . . . [P. F. R. and groan.] Truth. [Pause, P. F. R., Indian and long pause.]

(I shall expect you tomorrow also.)<sup>464</sup>

[Hand reached for mine.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Indian, pause, distress, and groans.] Oh, Oh, Oh. I see jiggly letters.

(Get them if you can.)

[Distress.] It is Josiah. [Pause.] J o [pause] Josiah, it looks like.

(Josiah who?)<sup>465</sup>

[Pause.] It is gone. It is gone. Do you know Fred?

(What Fred?)

Has there been a Fred communicating? (No.) Well, then there is a Fred he knows. That is what I hear, Fred. [Pause, opened eyes, stared, closed them and awakened.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

June 3rd, 1914. 9.30 A. M.

[Mrs. C. in normal state, article placed on table, wrapped up and not visible. I myself did not know what was in it, save that I had been told it was a pipe.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Distress in face. Long pause, reached for pencil and paused.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

\* \* [scrawl in which an 'o' was apparently made.] I am J. T.  
(Thanks. All right.)

<sup>464</sup> Mr. T. lectured at Harvard, but was not an alumnus. "Veritas" is the word in the center of the Harvard seal. No alumnus whom Mr. T. would be likely to refer to. No pertinence known for 1892 or 1898.

<sup>465</sup> Josiah ("Josh") R. was Mr. T.'s chief clerk.



and hope I have learned to save energy by making no false moves. I have sought to understand that law. I am very happy today. The joy of being in communication with my family is great. I help all— [pause] five five of them you know.

(Yes, that is right.)

and it is somewhat of a loss to be deprived of the privilege of constant physical contact with my sons and my little daughters as they grow into men [N. R.] and women ... men. I do not need to say a word about my brave beloved wife. That separation can be well understood. I loved my family and you must know something of the hope it gives me to find I am able to send even a brief and imperfect message to them but the greatest is in the influence which I see I am able to have over the boys. They do not fully comprehend the significance of my communication but it will come in time when they need the word and advice they will feel safe to seek it and without this effort on your part and fidelity [N. R.] on ... fidelity on the part of my wife I might not be able to do even as good work as I have done.

The spasmodic [pause] expressions of spirits seeking to communicate have led to many wild theories about our wanderings through space but this orderly [N. R.] effort ... orderly ... will do much for the world of spirits.

I want my dear wife to know that I am going with her for the summer that I am gradually losing [N. R.] th ... losing the sense of horror over the accident and that I want her to have some pleasure which has been denied her by the mode of my death.

(Can you say for evidence where she goes for the summer?)

I had that on my mind to tell this morning and I hoped it would come out. I wonder if you caught the message about [N. R.] the ... about the mode of my death and the subsequent loss of some pleasure [N. R.] pleasure to her. She has never taken the same recreation [N. R.] recreation in the same way since and yet I wish her to do so and I have something to say about another member of the family a lady who has much to do with the girls [struggle to write.] who is rather [N. R.] rather sensitive also and \* \* [scrawl, and almost lost control.]

(Keep calm.)

\* \* \* \* [scrawls and again almost lost control.]

(Wait a minute, please.) [I held hand a few moments.]

yes I got twisted [read 'worked' doubtfully] up... twisted ... there. I have S t ['t' read 'l' and it was then crossed and correctly read.] [Long pause.] S t [long pause.] \* \* [scrawl which I thought might be an attempt at 'a' or 'o' but not read.] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] It is to the old familiar place I refer. [Indian and pause.] S t [pause] a [so written and read] no not a [Indian.] I [pause] S t. [period inserted.] for Saint.

(All right.)

S t. [period inserted.] [Long pause.] S t [dimly written.] [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

S t [pause] o [pause] R. [Hand relaxed hold on pencil and long pause.]

(You say it was the old place. What was it for?)

[Pause.] I do not understand your question.

(You spoke of its being the old place. I asked my question only that you might say something about it other than the name....) [Writing began.]

I understand. thank you. I mean a place where we all went together for summer and where associations are connected with me. You know I think that last [read 'test'] year ... that last year some [struggle to control.] difference in plans were [*sic.*] made but this year there is a plan to renew some old [struggle] some old times and I greatly approve of it. [P. F. R. Pause and struggle to keep control.] I am glad of the arrangements. I am glad of the arrangements.

(Yes, go on.)

sea [read 'I see'] [Distress.] S e a s o n ... seasonable arrangements. Oh yes I want to speak too about a little church not very fashionable a little quiet country church where we sometimes went.

[Catalepsy in arm and shoulders occurred and I had to rub arm and hand for some time to recover proper conditions. The pause was some minutes.]

[*Subliminal.*]

John, John, Do you hear me, John? [Very long pause.] I call you. I call you. [Long pause and then tensing of muscles in face and another long pause.] What Harbor? [Not caught.]

(What?)

What Harbor?

(You tell.)

[Long pause.] Do you know anything about Bar Harbor?

(A little.)

Do you know why I hear that?

(No.)

[Pause.] There is a little short name. I haven't got it quite right but there is Harbor to it, you know. I don't think I am up so far as

Bar Harbor. It is . . . still I am going up by a lot of islands and moving by the prettiest place on the coast but I am in a vessel cruising around, cruising around. [Pause.] I can't get anything more. [Long pause.]

I see a figure, I get some bronze, it looks like a cemetery and there is this bronze figure and it is [pause] a stone about it, but a bronze figure. Oh it is beautiful thing. It is more like the figure of a woman as if it represented sorrow. It is almost like an allegorical thing, you know what I mean, and I see a lady, some one looking at it as tho it had been lately set up, lately adjusted, a little panel of bronze and something . . . [pause] I can't read the letters. Some day I shall read them, but I see a 4 and a 7. [Pause.] It seems to be more the age, 4 and 7. [Pause and sigh and pause.] [Mrs. C. then sat up and eyes remained closed and a long pause, and then she slowly spelled:] A-p-r-i-l. [Then she fell back with a thud on the back of the chair. Pause, sigh and pause.]

Please don't \* \* ['let' or 'whip'] me. [Pause and awakened.] <sup>466</sup>

#### Chapter XXVIII, Series XXIV, June 8, 9, 10, 11, 1914

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

June 8th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[I placed the article on table during the normal state purposely, tho Mrs. C. has never seen the contents of the package and does not know what is in it or for whom it is. There was a long pause before the trance began.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Slight groan. Long pause, hand shook and distress shown in face. Catching of breath. Pause and reached for pencil.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

V [purposely not read. Pause.] in. [N. R. purposely. P. F. R.]  
 (Stick to it.) [Pause.] (What is that word?)  
 V i n [Pause.]  
 ("V-i-n"?) [Spelled merely.]

<sup>466</sup> Sitter states that she used to take a recreation which she has not been in the habit of taking since Mr. T.'s death. "Sto" is the beginning of the name of the place to which they went by rail on the way to their summer home. The little country church they sometimes went to was St. David's. They went to Bar Harbor for August, 1893, not by boat. But they spent time on yacht at Newport. The bronze figure suggests to Mrs. T. the well-known Rock Creek Cemetery (Washington) Statue by Saint-Gaudens. No pertinence noted in the date.

[Pause and twisting of the mouth and face.] J. J. A. [Period carefully inserted in each case. Letters purposely not read aloud.]

(Good, I understand.)<sup>467</sup>

I come as you permit me to use the hour.

(You are welcome.)

Many memories crowd into my mind and yet I feel the force of contending emotions as I rush along. It is not for lack of interest that we do not return in full capacity but because of overwhelming interest. [Period inserted.]

I would be glad to forget everything for ten minutes and stand face to face with my own and say what is in my heart. I have studied this problem over here and it is much deeper than I dreamed of but I did have some idea and some experience before coming here. I will tell you soon.

[I cannot tell whether the sentence: "I will tell you soon," indicates a consciousness of what I was wanting to ask or not, but it is pertinent to that hypothesis. I put the question in mind at the end of the sitting. I had had the mention of his name in connection, probably, with Father John, in New York, since the sittings last week.]

I had my own ideals about the personal life which few understood but that is neither here nor there. It is past and I survive the wreckage of such mistakes as I may have made. This is not a confession but a statement. I had [so written and read] have no confession to make. I [pause] am [pause] as clear about my own duties as I always was. Those who knew me best knew my desire to do my duty as I saw it and no personal [read 'person at' because the two parts were separated by a new line.] [Pause.] personal [pause] regard [pause] conquered that instinct born in me and the inheritance of [pause] parentage my father still with me. Our family bonds most close still—

You spoke of a friend of yours a clergyman.

(Yes, I understand.)

whom I knew. You recall it.

(Yes, I do, and I shall be glad of any little incident that he may recall to prove your identity.)

Yes R. H. N. [Periods inserted in each case.] [Pause.] so I recall it.

(Yes.)

E was for the church.

---

<sup>467</sup> "Vincent" is the name of the communicator's son who had been recently married. Mrs. Chenoweth may have seen it mentioned in the papers, as some prominence was given it. But she did not know that his father had been communicating.

(Yes.) [Episcopal was word written in message of June 1st.]

His avowed interest in this subject called my attention to a new phase of it. [Pause.] Ask him about enter [pause and hand pulled down to prevent superposing.] tainment a moment. I have more to say.

(Yes, go ahead.)

[Pause.] Some books we talked of.

(What was the nature of the entertainment?)

a visit where we were free to talk of the things which were of most interest to us and right here I want to mention my mother. I think he will know why. [P. F. R. and sigh. Pause.] Do I seem to be losing my hold.<sup>468</sup>

(No, it is all right. Why did you mention your mother in connection with that visit?)

Association and N— [Pause.] There is a place somewhat like my friend's name. N e w . . . [Pause and purposely not read.] not Newton but Newport.

(Go ahead.)

which has relative meaning to us. And I would not have you think all our talk was about religion or Psychic phenomena for we had various themes of common interest. H a v a n a [read 'Harvard' doubtfully] H a v a n n a.

(Yes, go ahead.)

Havanna [pause] l e a . . . [read 'too'] l e a f [so read and erased.] I'll get it through yet.

(Yes, stick to it.)

[Pause.] I brought some Havanna [pause] product to [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

\* \* [scrawl.] the occasion no [to erroneous reading, and then I corrected it.] c [N. R.] cig . . . [N. R.] cigars.<sup>469</sup>

(Good.)

[Pause.] I wish to recall an experience on water but my sea [N. R.] Sea experiences were so many and so varied that it is difficult to select the one I want— [may be 'wait']

<sup>468</sup> Mr. Astor was interested in this subject and had some books on it. I knew nothing of this fact and obtained my information from his widow. But inquiry of Dr. Newton resulted in the information that he "knew Mr. Astor very slightly." He does not remember ever having any conversation with him.

<sup>469</sup> Mr. Astor had a home in Newport, R. I. But Dr. Newton never saw him there. Inquiry of other clergymen in that city, who might have known Mr. Astor, resulted in the information that none of them knew him or had any such experience as is described. It is quite probable that Mr. Astor was familiar with Havana cigars.

I want to speak about [pause] the lec ... [N. R.] [Pause] lec  
[N. R.] lectern [so written and read.] L [read 'h'] L e c t e r n.  
[Indian.]

(Stick to it.)

Lectern chancel [read 'channel'] no chancel. Lectern. [Groan.]

(Stick to it.)

You bet I will. I am not to be scared by failure.

(I do not happen to recall the word 'lectern' and it may ...)  
[Writing began.]

no Lectern ('Lectern'?) church term. You are not an authority  
on church form perhaps.

(No, I do not know the parts of a church because I was brought up  
in a very humble church and there were no names for any part of it but  
the pulpit.)

I am sorry for your neglected youth.

(Good, thank you.)

You may yet receive vicarious education.

(I hope so.)

I have another word. Does R H N recall a portrait [read 'pas-  
toral' doubtfully and after delay.] of my father ... p o r t r a i t.

(Go ahead. I shall ask.)

a large one which has significance.<sup>470</sup> I will come again. [Writing  
difficult and heavy and pencil fell.]

(All right. What have you been doing since you were here the last  
time? If you cannot answer this question today, you can do it  
tomorrow.)

[Pencil seized.] Yes.

(All right.)

[Pencil fell and long pause.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Hand moved across page. Long pause and distress in face. Sigh.]

Oh dear. [Long pause. Distress and trouble with voice. Long  
pause and sigh.]

Perhaps I can talk. [Pause and sigh and pause again and hand  
reached for mine.]

Oh I should die. Oh so cold, so cold. [Shivered twice with a pause  
between.]

Oh it is an awful sea to swim in. [Pause and shiver.] Sinking,  
sinking. She is gone. She is gone.

---

<sup>470</sup> No significance that is discoverable can be given the reference to the  
"Lectern," and the portrait referred to is not recognizable.

(What has gone?)

The ship.

(What ship?)

[Pause.] Steamer.<sup>471</sup>

(What steamer?)

[Pause, smile, rubbed eyes and awakened.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

June 9th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Article placed on table.] I'm not gone yet. [Long pause. Fingers moved and hand reached for pencil and short pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

J. J. A. [Period inserted in each case and slight pause between letters; purposely refused to read them aloud.]

(All right. That's good.)

At first the change in life was not apparent to me. I knew a terrible thing had occurred but the separation was no . . . ['t' omitted because pencil ran off pad.] a conscious one. I expected to be picked up and my concern was for my wife and I soon found her. The pathetic scenes of the drowning are more real to you than they were to me.

(I understand.)

My realization was dulled by my contact and battle for life. Those in the small boats and those who went down without contest have clearer vision than I. I had no chance at all in the water no one could live in such a sea swimming was impossible.

(What made it impossible?)

cold and suction frozen were some all one could do was to float and even had there been enough to provide for all life belts would have been useless in the cold water.

I have only referred to this that my friend may know that I did not suffer as keenly as he might suspect. I suffered afterward when the loss of life was revealed and my own broken hopes became vivid to me<sup>472</sup>

---

<sup>471</sup> The reference here is again to the incidents of the communicator's death on the ocean in the "Titanic" disaster.

<sup>472</sup> The allusion is evidently to the circumstances of Mr. Astor's death in the water. Mrs. Chenoweth knew the general features of that disaster, but it is not probable that her subconscious would think of what was so probable an explanation as the reference to "suction." The allusion to "those who went down without

(I understand.)

but as you know I have some philosophy [philosophy] in my make up and when the inevitable . . . [catalepsy and chattering of the teeth, with signs of distress. I rubbed the hand and held one hand on forehead for some minutes.]

occurs I face the inevitable.

(I understand.)

I must refer to one personal matter the changes socially which were involved by my [P. F. R.] death and the absolute freedom from the responsibilities [struggle] as well as privileges of wealth over here.

(Tell all about that social standing.)

[Pause.] I am at [pause] a loss to account for some movements made by those who should have been better guided by better mo . . . [struggle to keep control and catalepsy followed which I soon corrected in the usual way. The hand began to write while I held it.]

you see I . . . [Mrs. C. rose and sneezed violently, falling back into chair and catalepsy followed again, with the face much contorted.]

I have so much feeling about the direct insult [read 'result' and hand pointed till corrected.] you know what I refer to.

(No, I do not. Please to tell it.)

[Pause.] a social rebuff of her. I would not have let it happ . . .<sup>473</sup> [Pencil fell and long pause, followed by chattering of the teeth and choking. I had to hold the forehead and throat with my hands, and, after a long pause and a sigh, the subliminal began.]

[*Subliminal.*]

I'd like to go.

(What?)

I'd like to go home. [Pause.] I would like to give the watch that was on my body to my boy. [Pause and distress. Put her hand on back of her neck and rubbed it as if pained.] Something hit me there.<sup>474</sup>

(The communicator did not answer the question I put at the end yesterday. Can he do it now?)

---

contest" as being clearer in their vision than he is interesting, as it consists with what came from Mr. Stead when he first communicated and also with what is apparently a law of death. The same thought has come through other sources.

<sup>473</sup> The passage here is pertinent, but not evidential. I do not know of any specific incident illustrating it, though the general events which represented it were public property at the time of his marriage.

<sup>474</sup> "Something hit me" can be surmised to be pertinent to communicator's experience, but cannot be verified. Nor can the reference to the watch, at the present time. Note not supplied by J. H. H.



I don't know. I don't know what it was. [Pause.] Oh yes, it is about his communicating somewhere else.

(Yes, where was it?)

I don't know. I can just see him making an effort to communicate at another place. It was a man communicator was it not?

(Yes, who was with him?)

[Pause.] That's funny. I see Jennie P. just the minute you asked that. I don't know whether she was there or not. I think she was, whether you know it or not. I think Hodgson was with him. I don't know. They are trying to write. [Cf. sitting of June 10—G. O. T.] I'm dead tired. I'm just dead tired. [Long pause. Then opened eyes and seemed awakened, but described a vision and then drew the figure.]

I see something like a stone. It looks like . . . . [Pencil given and figure drawn, consisting of a circle with wings and a door under it.]

There is a monogram in it. It looks as if it were over a door, but it is cut in stone. I can't do it. [Closed eyes as if returning to trance.] That is granite. If I could get in that door there would be a lot of things in there. It is a tomb door. That is the reason it is out of proportion. These are wings [pointing to sides of figure.] That is like a winged head. There are letters in there, but that is a tomb door. [Opened eyes and awakened.] <sup>475</sup>

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

June 10th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sigh, pause and article placed on table. Long pause. Sigh and groan and long pause when hand reached for pencil, with another short pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

J. J. Astor [periods inserted and name purposely not read.]

(Thank you. That is all right.)

[Pause.] J. J. Astor [periods inserted and purposely not read again.]

(Good, that is correct.)

[Pause.] My desire to be a good witness was not strong enough to subdue the recollection of the disaster and I found on withdrawal that I had missed the point in question. I will say now that I have been conscious of the truth of the spirit explanation for some strange experiences for a long while and have planned to experiment carefully

<sup>475</sup> The reference to the tomb has not been verified by J. H. H.

and faithfully and to make sure that I was not being pressed into some expression which was not the result of my deliberate effort.

(I understand.)

That must not be interpreted by you as meaning that I do not welcome your aid at the points of contact where you are interested for I hasten to assure you of my earnest co-operation but the thousand and one annoying messages which half fledged mediums foist on the dear ones purporting to come from me make it advisable for me to use great caution.

(Yes, I understand. Have ...?) [Writing went on.]

I have been at one or two places with determination to send a report and I have been near my friends and been reported but much has been spurious.

(We got your name through a private case and in connection with it another name of a person who seemed to be helping you. If you could tell who that was it would be an excellent point.)

I understand perfectly and am going to do it. I would gladly work faster but I can keep hold better by this method.

(Yes.)

W. [period inserted and pause.] William [P. F. R. Pause.]

W [Pause and P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.) [Thinking he meant William Astor.]

[Pause.] \* \* [scrawl that might be for 'I,' 'T' or 'J'] [Pause.]

W [imperfectly made.] [Pause.] \* \* [scrawls, but apparent attempt to make 'W'] \* \* [possibly attempt at 'S' but not certain.] [relaxed hold on pencil a moment.] yes.

(I believe you are trying to give the name of the one who helped you there. Is that right?)

Yes but say no more.

(All right.)

I will write it.

(All right. I'll wait.)

William [pause and Indian.] T. Stead.

(You mean that he helped you there.)

I mean that

(Good . . . .) [Writing went on.]

I \* \* [scrawl but almost 'm' or 'w']

(The case I am thinking of gave another name that you would be familiar with in connection with this light.)

Yes but that was as an escort and protector.

(All right. Go ahead.)

I am clear about W. T. S. [periods inserted.]

(Yes, I believe that, only it happened that at the case in mind, tho he helped, his was not the name that came through. It may have come through at one I did not know.)

Y . . . [written while I was writing my question and superposed.]  
Yes. [period inserted.] and yet he was in the party to which you refer.

(Yes, I believe it, and if you can tell the right one of the others in it the case will be clear.)<sup>476</sup>

Yes I will [distress and pause.] do so.

(Yes, I understand.)

[Pause.] J [incomplete but evidently intended for this.] [Pause.]

\* \* [scrawl, but might be attempt at 'o' and not read. Neither was 'J' read.] [Long pause.] M [pause] M [Pause and P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

J o h n [slowly written.]

(What more?)

F [sigh.] P a t e r.

(Good.)

John [P. F. R.]

(That is a good test.)

Yes the Pater has even more significance than Father as he is French which I will try and report at the same place later.<sup>477</sup>

(Good.)

I shall [superposed] not retire from active service until I have won this battle.

(Good.)

You will hear from us again.

(Yes, I mean that you shall have chances next season, and if any chance occurs this season I shall welcome you.)

I thank you and to save some siggestions [suggestions] which my name might create if I may be pardoned for the idea (Certainly) that my name is too well known I will adopt the title which belongs to me Colonel

(All right.)

---

<sup>476</sup> There was no trace in New York of the presence of William T. Stead on the occasion that I had in mind.

<sup>477</sup> On June 5th, 1914, in New York through a patient of Dr. Bull's whom I had never met, who was a private person, and who knew nothing about what I was doing in Boston, in fact, did not know I was there, the following message came: "Why should a Monk John come to you. John Jacob Astor came along with him. The Monk was tied up as if with ropes and Astor was mixed up, too, tied up, needed straightening out." With this message no explanation of what comes in this record need be made. Why it should take the form of "Pater John" is not indicated, but inasmuch as Father John is French there may have been an attempt at "Pere" and the group probably being more familiar with Latin may have converted it.

Father and Colonel will suggest [suggest] Father John and J. J. A.  
 [Pencil fell.]  
 (Good.)<sup>478</sup>

[*Subliminal.*]

[Face contorted, pause, and finger placed on lips as if suggesting secrecy.] [Pause and sigh, pause and distress, shaking head and hand put down from lip.]

Who sealed my lips?

(I don't know.)

And don't care.

(No.)<sup>479</sup>

Well, take hold of my hand. [I did so.] I'm frozen. [Pause.] So cold. I wish I could be wrapped in blankets when I go over to this place. It is so cold. [Rubbed face and awakened.]

Mrs. C.'s hands and arms were very cold from poor circulation.

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Winifred Hyslop. June 11th, 1914. 9 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sigh. Long pause. Sitter admitted. Long pause, groan, pause and hand reached for pencil, holding it with difficulty and hand in flat half cataleptic condition. Long pause.]<sup>480</sup>

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[Struggle to get and keep control. Pause.] I [pause] wi ...

---

<sup>478</sup> I had one experiment in New York after this date with the lady who got the message about Monk John and Mr. Astor and no reference to them came. The future must determine whether the arrangement here is carried out or not. Mr. Astor was called "Colonel Astor" during life. It is possible that Mrs. Chenoweth may have seen it mentioned in the papers, as he was frequently called this during the Spanish War. But she did not know normally that he had been communicating, though we may suppose that her subconsciousness knew it.

<sup>479</sup> There was evidently the purpose here to conceal the identity of the communicator from the subconsciousness, as Mrs. Chenoweth recovered her normal state.

<sup>480</sup> As my daughter had to pass through Boston on the way to the country, from college, I resolved on giving her some idea of the work. Mrs. Chenoweth knew that I had a daughter Winifred, having learned it from the papers at the time of her serious illness with typhoid fever. But she had never seen her. I had had the three previous sittings without having a stranger present and I did not inform Mrs. Chenoweth that I expected to have any one with me on this date, much less my daughter. On the way to the house I purposely went to it by the back route, so that the daughter could not be seen, and entered the house without Mrs. Chenoweth knowing that I had a sitter with me. She learned the fact only after the sitting, when I purposely introduced the daughter. Not a word was whispered by my daughter during the sitting.

[Pause.] My [pause] dear [pause] \* \* [scrawl] L [Indian and pause.] \* \* [scrawl.] [P. F. R. Pause.] little [pause] time it takes to get settled in the order of communication. I thought I could write at once and [P. F. R.] here I stumble. \* \* [heavy scrawl and struggle to keep control. Indian and pause.]

I am one of the group which is [pause] at work for better conditions for my dear one. M [pause] o t h e r. [Pause.]

(Good, go ahead.)

and I want to do so much for you. I have been in this spirit life a long time and am more glad than I can say to have this opportunity to come. I have tried to guide and direct and you have been so responsive that I have been able to accomplish a part of what I desired but only a part. I am not alone.

(Who is with you?)

He is with me. (Who is?) He is with me. [Struggle.]

(Stick to it.)

He [pause] is [pause] f a t h e r.

(Good.)

and we are each so anxious to make some things clear. We have tried to manifest and we have with us a child little child boy. [Pause.] Wait a moment. [P. F. R.]

(Yes, I shall.)

[Pause.] Father is as full of plans as ever and as sanguine and [read 'as'] [pause] and [pause] ... I was about to write full of fun but that seemed strange to write but it is quite true that he has always a sense of good wholesome humor [P. F. R. and groan.] about him.

I have an important message to give about another one who is with us today.

(All right. Do so.)

[Pause.] One loved and wished for— C C l [Pause and P. F. R. Long pause.] ['l' might be incomplete attempt at 'h'] W [P. F. R. Indian.] Wi... ['i' not read.] Wi ... ['i' not read.] [Pause.] Will .... [Long pause.] Woman lady related [read 'child'] related and dear. I cannot seem to write the name but a lady over here in our world.<sup>481</sup>

<sup>481</sup> "Mother" was a hit, as far as it goes, but father would have to apply to my wife's own father to make that significant, as he was dead. The reference to the little child is not clear, as my wife had several brothers and sisters who died in childhood. The "Cl" might be a reference to Clarence, her brother, half-brother, who died many years ago. But as the "l" might be an incomplete "h" it might have been an attempt at "Charles" mentioned later, who is my deceased brother. He has been reported before as helping my wife in such emergencies. Probably "wi..." was an attempt to say "Wife," but terminating in "Will," it became unintelligible. Later it came wife, so that the conjecture here is all the more probable.

(What relation to you? That may help.)

child [pause] E [Pause. P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] \* \* [catalepsy followed and had to be removed in the usual way, the hand coming over to me for purpose.] [New pencil given.]

[Pause.] I want to do it myself.

(Yes, take your time. I understand.)

I am [groan and struggle.] S [pause] S [struggle and distress with groans.] no not S— [Pause, and P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Long pause.]

(Do you know who this person present is?)

Of course.

(Well, perhaps you rest from the other task by telling who it is and the relation.)

[Pause.] yes I will \* \* [possible attempt at 'do'] see [pause]

\* \* [scrawl.] C [Pause and P. F. R. Pause.] My child.

(All right. Can you state just who you ....?) [Writing began.]

Yes. (All right.) I am her h .... [Pause and P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] W i ... [Pause and pencil wrote in air illegibly.] W ...  
w i f ... w i f e.

(Whose wife?)

wife of b [P. F. R.] (Stick to it.) b r b r ... [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

b r o \* \* [scrawl.] [Struggle and P. F. R.] It is so hard to keep clear from the others they all want to write at once.

(I see.) [Handwriting had begun to be heavy and difficult after attempt at word 'brother']

4 of us trying to help each other. Mother father b ... brother and I— al [all] here. I am so near her so very near I think I cannot do it. [I told sitter to sit back, which she did.]

Charles Charles.

(My brother Charles?)

Charles and I want to do [?] [Pause.] Mary [possible change of control.]

(Good.)<sup>482</sup>

<sup>482</sup> The S is not intelligible. "Child" was correct and "wife" made her relation to me clear, but not to the sitter. It is interesting to note the confusion here with "wife of brother," caused perhaps by the presence of my brother mentioned in a few moments. Charles is his name and he had figured in the Piper sittings, as well

is glad that she is here and that the work is over for this year.

(What work?)

you know what work I mean. (Yes.) School work and yet not done for all time.

(No, I understand.)

And the emotion I feel now is wearing [N. R.] a way . . . wearing away a little How can I write all I feel for my darling child.

(Do the best you can and tell who she is and it will be good evidence.)

Yes I will try for it is not too late to still work out some evidence.

(That's right.)

You see we were bothered a little by the grandpa [N. R.] grandpa [N. R.] Grandpa who thinks he has a claim here as he knew and loved her. W.

(Go ahead.)<sup>483</sup>

[Pause.] Win . . . [Pause. Indian.] Winifred.

(Capital.)

[Groan and distress.] dear I love you so much always near and so happy to feel we are all united in a work which makes the world better able [read 'will'] able to understand the separations which are so hard to bear.

(I understand.)

I am happy and proud of my dear girl who will remember always that nothing can dim a mother's eyes but tears of sorrow over wrong and those tears are not in your mother's eyes.

I wish I could tell you how we all have such eagerness to write that we almost [read 'must'] almost get in each other's way.

(I understand.)

I am glad of the course you elected it was wisest and most useful and I am especially glad that it was your choice as well as father's.<sup>484</sup>

as in earlier communications through Mrs. Chenoweth. Mary is the name of my wife. Evidently the four who were trying to give the message were my wife's mother, father, my brother and my wife. Her mother died many years ago.

<sup>483</sup> As I explained in an earlier note, my daughter had just finished the year's work at college. Mrs. Chenoweth did not even know she was at college and much less that she had finished the year there. Winifred is her name, known to Mrs. Chenoweth, but not her presence. We may suppose that it would be subconsciously guessed from the admissions made by me previously. The reference to "Grandpa" explains the meaning of "Father" earlier. He is dead.

<sup>484</sup> This reference to the child's course is interesting, as it was chosen with reference to her strength. It was a matter of some concern to me at the time it was decided and I did not assume, as I never do, any dictatorial attitude toward the decision. My wife would have done so, if she were living, so that the allusion here to my attitude is very pertinent and, of course, wholly unknown to the psychic.

(Good, I understand.)

He tries to be free from too much dictatorial attitude.

(That's right. That's good.)

James I am trying to have you understand that I know your attitude and I also am trying to help my little girl no longer little except to me to realize my spiritual contact and I hope guidance for her. No wonder I tried to write sister. If only we could all be together but the separation is not half so literal as it sometimes seems. I [Possibly attempt at 'S,' but not clearly so. Distress and pause.] S H yes [read 'is'] yes S. H. Not Sarah Hyslop but a town place a town a place. [Pause.] South [pause]

(Go ahead.)

South [pause] South H [pause] ampton. no no no North Hampton and Souh [South] Ha [pause] d ... [groan] [Pause.] Holy no no S [imperfect] Hadley.

(Capital. That's right.)

You know what I am after. (Yes, exactly.) and those H's are so prominent they might lead to misunderstanding.

(Yes, I think I know how you happened to mention Northampton.)

Yes we knew it in the past. (Yes.) and there was a question about it for her and I had it in mind but tried to reject it. Sometimes rejections come out bigger than elections. The mind is so subtle in its workings.

(Yes, I understand.)<sup>485</sup>

You have to. It is your business.

(Indeed it is.)

I am working on this side to understand as much as possible and the whole family over here united [read 'intend' doubtfully] united [N. R.] in ... U ... [read] one purpose to keep the light burning in a dark world.

(Thanks.)

I thought I would find myself able to speak of some of the school

<sup>485</sup> I have a deceased sister Sarah Hyslop. No previous mention of her presence was made at this sitting, and evidently it was she that my wife had in mind in referring to "sister." Possibly the "S" which occurred three times earlier was an indication of this.

South Hadley is the place where the daughter was at college, not Southampton or Northampton. Both these places, however, are near it. It is nearer Holyoke, of which "Holy" is evidently a part of the attempt to give the name. Mrs. Chenoweth, of course, knew nothing about where she was at school. [Mt. Holyoke.]

The statement, in reply to my query why she mentioned Northampton, that "we knew it in the past" is true and very evidential. When I was lecturing there soon after our marriage, she went with me once or twice. I doubt if any one living among our connections ever knew it.



conditions and friends but I was so slow getting started that I have used the energy but you will know that it is only a question of time when I could give evidence [N. R.] of my knowledge . . . evidence [N. R.] evidence of my knowledge of the daily life.

(Yes, I understand.)

I will be with you when the days are made glad with a respite from the demands of this work and dear child do not worry about you[r] faher [father]. I will not let him come here yet for I think he is needed for you most now and by and bye when his work is more definitely established and you are more grounded in your own life and its work and unfoldment and happiness you will be glad to have him come to me for the large experiences of this life.

I love you all. I am still wife and mother. Mary Hyslop.

(Thank you.)

[Pencil fell and pause.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Indian and pause.] Don't forget her music.

(No.)

Don't forget her music, will you?

(No.)

I forgot to say it. [Long pause, sigh, rubbed face.] Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)<sup>486</sup>

[Pause and awakened, when I introduced Winifred, my daughter.]

#### Chapter XXIX, Series XXV, June 15, 16, 17, 1914

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

June 15th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sigh. Pause. Sigh and heavy breath. Long pause and then slight groan with signs of distress and almost violent muscular action in the arms with some straining of the body. Pause.]

All right. I'll go. [Pause and reached for pencil and pause again.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[Relaxed hold on pencil. Long pause.] N . . . [or unfinished 'M' and mentally read 'M' but not aloud.] [Pause.]

N [pause] o [P. F. R. and Indian.]

[Apparent Change of Control, but probably not so.]

---

<sup>486</sup> My daughter was devoting special time and study to music at the college.

I am at a stand still and do not know where to begin.

(Perhaps I can help you to make a start, if you can indicate just who you are.)

I hear your voice.

(All right. Keep on.)

and I am alive to the fact th . . . [struggle to keep control] that you are at one end of the wire and I am at the other.

(Yes, that is true.)

I feel so very ill I cannot get relief from that. I [distress and twisting of face.] am asked [N. R.] asked to give my name.

(Yes, I shall be glad to have it.)

I [struggle and pause.] shall give it to you. [Distress.] James I shall give it to you.

(All right.)

I am your brother C [Pause and P. F. R. Distress and groans.] your brother \* \* [part of letter 'R' and part of 'o,' but, not suspected at time.] R. [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] R o b e [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

r t.

(Glad indeed, brother Robert, to hear from you.)

[Pause.] I am here to give my word of g [pause] reeting to you.

(I am very glad to have it and to give you my greeting after so many years of separation from you.)

The separation is but seeming. I am glad [distress and groan.] to write that what seemed a sorrow to all was but the beginning of a large and wonderful experience to all. [Pause.] I am [distress and groans] conscious that I am not doing much yet. The way is a little vague but I am glad to at last be in direct contact. Mother is here with me now. [Handwriting changed with word 'Mother.']

(My greetings to her.)<sup>487</sup>

She urges me to kep [keep] cool and I will do what I have started to do. [Distress and Indian.] she and I are very close associates in this work but not as evident [read 'content'] evident as some of the rest but perhaps a strain [written and read 'sham'] strain of the

---

<sup>487</sup> I was quite surprised to hear from my brother Robert, who died in 1904 and who has communicated or been referred to several times through Mrs. Chenoweth some years ago. She never knew or heard of him, unless she saw his name after the publications of the sittings in which he appeared, and that is possible, since she has the volume. The reason for his appearance was explained at a later sitting.

material life which the rest have spoken of so often may give us a hold on the evidential powers. [P. F. R. and groans. Pause.]

I [Not read at once, but taken for a scrawl.] would [read and hand paused.]

("I would") [Writing then began.]

be glad to add to the already strong chain of evidence by some things I remember. Do you know or remember anything about a home made musical instrument.

(I do not recall. What was it?)

reed flute.

(Tell all you can about it.)

[Pause.] Quite [N. R.] Quite ridiculous to call it an instrument but it made a musical sound and had several notes [pause] blown like a flute but made of willow was it willow.

(I do not know, but shall inquire. Tell all you know.)

It was a small hollow reed like pipe which we cut and took out the pith from and then made whistles or flutes. You are not so old as to forget it.

(I remember that we used to make whistles out of willow wood. Is that what you mean?)

Yes the nearest I could get to a musical instrument.<sup>488</sup>

(Yes, where was that willow tree?)

I think I can tell.

(All right.)

[Pause.] I remember the walk to it but we passed it on the way to another place. [Pause.] a [pause] little [groan] out of the path but [read 'cut' and hand pointed till corrected. P. F. R.] in me a [pause.] d . . . [erased. P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.) but near the meadow land. [Pause.] I often think of the old days when the simple pleasures gave us as much joy as the completed journey could give now.

(There were willows in the meadow, but I had another in mind. Where was . . . ?) [Writing began.]

The one near the road you mean. (Yes.) and the brook was not near that one. but nearer the meadow ones.

(What did we do with the willows near the brook?)

yes yes I see. You have a different scene in your mind but it is all

---

<sup>488</sup> When we were young children, 45 and 50 years ago, we made willow whistles of the willow branches from the willow tree in the yard. It is interesting to see "reed flute" come first, which had no meaning to me, but which is probably either a subliminal interpretation of a mental picture of the whistle or a similar interpretation by the control.

from the same section of our past. I remember the little willow withs [written 'with' and 's' added after reading 'with'] \* \* [evidently attempt at 'sticks' but lines are 'suss'] withes sticks quite tall and whips [P. F. R. Indian.] [Pause.] whp [whip] [Pause.] little whip lashes on the end. [P. F. R. Indian.]

memories are coming to [too] fast. I get them distorted a little but I have the whole sene [scene] in my mind and it was all recalled by your question.<sup>489</sup> Wait a minute. I have another thing I want to recall.

Do you remember S am [pause] S am [pause] a neighbor.

(Yes, Sam who?) [Thinking of Samuel Cooper.]

I thought I was about to write it. Sam [pause] Sam \* \* [scrawl mentally read 'e' and erased.] \* \* [scrawl, but later effort shows it intended for 'U'] S a m [pause] U [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] Samuel \* \* [scrawl] W [Pause.] I will get it.

(Yes.)

Samuel W. [Struggle and distress.] B ['P' made and pause and then stroke added that converted it into 'B'] \* \* [probably 'ron' or 'rod']

(I can't read that last. Try it again.)

[Pause] \* \* [scrawls] B B [Pause.] Don't you know whom I mean.

(Yes, I think I do, but to be evidence it must be on paper.)

yes yes I know it. (Good.) B a ... [so read] no \* \* [scrawls] g [or scrawl] no not G Samuel J B [struggle] [Pause.] B \* \* [probable attempt to write 'own' for 'Brown'] [P. F. R. Indian.] \* \* [possibly 'J'] H \* \* [scrawls.] Hyslop Hyslop on one side B on the other. [Struggle to control.]

(Keep cool.)

\* \* [scrawl.] B r [pause] no not r. I do not want to write Brown but another somewhat like it. [Pause.] B \* \* [scrawl or attempt at 'a' but not read.] a ... [P. F. R.]

(Stick to it.)

[Pause.] c [?] n [erased.] B [pause] r a [P. F. R. Long pause.]

(What do you mean by saying that Hyslop was on one side and the Samuel on the other?)<sup>490</sup>

<sup>489</sup> There were other willows near the brook at the "other place" alluded to, but I do not remember making whistles from them. We boys put the trees to another use not mentioned here, but which I hoped to have stated, tho it is possible that I should not have expected my brother Robert to remember it.

<sup>490</sup> The mention of "Sam" brought to my mind at once the question which I

[Pause, groan and pencil fell and hand relaxed. Long pause.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh my head aches so. What are all these little tents. [Pause.]  
Are those soldier tents?

(I don't know what you refer to?)

[Pause and hand reached for mine. Long pause.] Do you know  
if the suffragettes have committed murder?

(I don't know.)

Well, they are going to. Do you know that?

(No.)

They are going to kill somebody.

(Who?)

[Pause.] I see a great building and it is night. Oh it is horrible.  
It is a dark sky.

(Do you know who it is?)

Oh I see a man come out from a building, out of a big building  
[Pause] and he drops dead. Somebody killed him.

(Who is it?)

Oh the whole place is in an uproar. It is not the King but some  
one near him. [Pause.]

(Who?)

[Pause.] I don't know, but I see this tremendous funeral like  
a . . . . [pause]

(Find who it is.)

I am afraid to say.

(Don't be afraid.)

Yes I am

(It won't be evidence unless you do.)

I didn't tell it for evidence. It just came.

(Tell who it is.)

[Pause and awakened.]

A short time ago, I think less than ten days ago, a bomb was found  
under a throne chair and it had exploded, injuring the chair.

---

had asked my father through Dr. Hodgson at his sittings for me with Mrs. Piper.  
*Cf. Proceedings Eng. S. P. R., Vol. XVI, pp. 52-53.* I resolved to try for the answer  
to it here, thinking that the question was in the mind of my father and that he  
might be trying to get it through with my brother. But only confusion followed  
and no probabilities of what was intended can be conjectured.

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

June 16th, 1914. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sigh.] Hm. [Long pause. Twisting face slightly in distress. Pause.]

Do you know any one named Martin?

(I once did.) [Vaguely recalled some Martin, but not certainly.]  
[Pause.] (Is Martin the first or last name?)

I think it is first. I was just going to tell you that. [Pause.] It seems like a [pause] first name. [Pause.] I can't get away from it.

(Get the last name.)

Yes. [Pause.] Corbett.

(I don't know him.)

[Pause.] Well, that's the name. [Long pause.]

Now I see Dr. Hodgson.

(All right. I shall be glad to have him.)

Hm. Did you send for him?

(I wished for him.)

Well, that's funny, because I saw him and I feel just as I used to when he and his [pause] group of people used to come so much. He is smiling. He has been at work somewhere else.

(Where?)

New York. I don't mean the Piper light. I see a [pause] strange arrangement as if adjusted on the head of a psychic by a spirit. [Pause.] It looks quite like a [pause] I don't know the name of that thing that telephone girls use, that head thing to help them hear, and I see it on the head of a dark hair and quite heavy hair. [Pause.] I think it is a man, quite heavy dark hair, and that is a psychic where Dr. Hodgson has been and where the hearing was specially good. [Distress and pause.] No it is not a man. It is a woman. I can see her now. [Pause.] She writes but she hears. [Pause.] I'll go. [whispered.] [Pause.] Is this what you call the lucid state?

(I suppose so.)

[Pause.] I thought one who is conscious is in the lucid state. [Pause.] There is always consciousness,

(Yes.)

of some sort. [Sigh.] Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

[Pause and reached for pencil, and pause again. P. F. R.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

Good morning Hyslop.

(Good morning. Is this R. H.?)

R. H. (Good.) and do not think that I have deserted because I have allowed [N. R.] allowed another to do some things which seemed advisable.

(Yes, you refer to my brother.) Yes.

(What was the special object in having him come. I suspected it and would be glad to see that my guess was right.)

after the sitting of last week there was a very strong desire on his part to get into definite touch with you because of some things he wished to accomplish for her and so the best way seemed for him to make a trial here and he did fairly well we thought. He had a clear mind and a well [read 'will'] well defined purpose which he stuck to and that was all we wished him to demonstrate.

(Yes, do you know who the Sam was he wanted to mention?)

No he did not tell us what or whom he was to talk about. It seemed better for him to keep [keep] his own mind without pressure from outside but perhaps some day he may drop it in but you notice that there is less of that dropping in than [read 'them' doubtfully] than there used to be. It is a new effort to insulate the communicator and that ought to give more definite results and less coloring [N. R.] coloring and mixing of minds.

I have been as busy as you trying to use every particle of energy and yet not overdo it for there is so much to be done. We are at at [pause until I read 'all at,' tho written 'at at'] a [pause] a crucial [read 'critical' and hand pointed till corrected.] time in the development of the work. Never before has the world been in such a state of expectation and we must not lose our heads and we must see to it that every kind of work is systematized as far as we are able. It is a tremendous undertaking but it is well worth the effort.

(Is it larger than you thought when living?)

Yes I did not see the scope of it as I do now. I knew it was revolutionary but not to such an extent. It is more than psychology itself. It enters every field of [pause] expression and not the least is the religious.

(Yes, do you remember what Stainton Moses taught about evil spirits?)

Yes I think I know to what you refer. You mean the possibility of effect on those in the body.

(Yes.)

Yes and I see the virtue of his position.

(What was said about it through the Piper light?)

[Pause.] Some things were revealed [N. R.] revealed at the time

of the Phinuit trouble and some statements were made later but I recall about the necessity of treatment on this side for them. Is that [I pulled hand down because it was superposing.] what moved [delay in reading] did something move as I wrote.

(Yes, you were superposing.)

Is that what you referred to about the evil spirits the method of treatment.

(No, I think I understand why you referred to treatment, but I wanted to know what the Imperator group said about the views expressed in Stainton Moses' *Spirit Teachings* about the influence of evil spirits.)

Yes yes about the over-estimating the influence of them. [Pause.]

(Go ahead.)

It was a theme that was not taken with as much seriousness at the Piper light as it was by S. M. in his writings.

(Yes, that is right.)

I have been interested myself to see why those teachings were modified as they came through the Pipe[r] light and I think one reason was because they were slightly exaggerated by the conscious mind of Moses who was so sensitive that the conditions appeared [read 'apparent' and pencil tapped when I corrected it.] more detrimental than in reality they were— For instance the conscious mind of some people is more alive [alive] if I may use that term than the real spirit is to the lower state of expressions. Have I made that plain.

(Yes.)

The deeper trance at the Piper light allowed the spirit to express what it saw as a spirit pure and unmixed [N. R.] unmixed with the sensat... sensory [pause.]

("Functions"?)

yes functions that is what I mean but Hyslop the ordinary [N. R.] ordinary mind receiving impressions from disordered [read 'distorted,' tho without good excuse] disordered spirit minds is in a condition where sense perceptions are most vivid and consequently there is no exaggeration of the horror or trouble from such contact. Do you see how both statements were right and compatible with exact truth.

(Yes, I do, and I had reference, of course, to what is going on elsewhere which . . . .) [Writing began.]

So too have I and I thought to help you by the statement because one is sometimes tempted to lean on a past authority in a measure.

(I understand.)

I am interested to see treatment for the *spirit* [underscored three times.] It is there that the bite comes. To get the spirit mind if one



may use that term clear and undisturbed is to produce action in right direction and accomplish co-operation for the rehabilitation of the body which may have been unwarrantably attacked and broken by contact. Is that plain.

(Yes, it is, and I shall ask if you have anything to say about a special case?)

Yes if I [Indian and pencil tapped.] am able to make clear what I wish— I do not think that we will gain ground properly [properly and so read.] pap . . . rapidly until we see that it is not disunion so much as it is wise union. I have in mind a case where we have been working to [pause and tapping of pencil] really disentangle the threads of the two minds the one treated and the one in the spirit. Not an old person and not a usual case hard one though because of some real capacity and argumentative ability [struggle and Indian.] I am trying to keep my brain with me this time and not lose the hold as I write. Do you know anything about a suggestion to have the spirit taken away.

(Yes, in what case?)

In a case under [N. R.] under your observation. You know that I know that you are trying some experiments in healing along the methods suggested but I know what you do not that this light has no knowledge of your efforts.

(Yes, I know that.)

It is best not to divulge your plans for it gives us less to contend with.

(Yes, I understand, and there is one special case in which the obsession takes a special form. I would like you to tell what form that is just for evidence, if you can keep in mind the one I think of.)

I think I know whom you mean the lady with the tendency [not read at time and pause.] just a minute [pause.] bad head [N. R.] head— I can't do it now. I will return to it.

(All right. Do you wish to drop it for today?)

Yes I will come tomorrow and tell more. I know the desire in your mind to have the definite help here in the furtherance of the work there [read 'here' and pencil pointed till corrected.] yes and I am cordially in sympathy with the experiment both there and here and want to say here that we have a staff [read 'stiff'] staff of strong spirit workers at the center of the work. Some revelations will be forthcoming.

Do you know of a case where words are used quite foreign to the user of them.

(I have been reading a book about a case in Wales. Is that it?)

Yes I have been interested in that for it seemed so plain to me what could have been done rather than what was done.

(I understand.)

Do you remember Morton Prince (Yes.) and his famous case.

(Yes, tell me about it.)

I knew more about that than anybody thought I did— and I still have my own ideas about it. [Pause.]

(Go ahead.)

I had them before I came here.

(Yes, what can you say about Sally?)

I have seen Sally and am forgiven as I should be for I was more her friend than enemy and if I could have had a little more liberty I could have proved it but you know how I was hampered by something akin [N. R.] to . . . akin . . . professional courtesies.

(Yes, I know.)

I have wanted to tell you about Sally for some time but did not get to it. I am called now as I have overstayed my time I believe. I have come with a clearer mind and free hand as never before.

(Yes, what was Sally?)

You mean was she an undeveloped child a spirit or a little devil [N. R.] as she . . . devil as she sometimes seemed.

(I mean was she a secondary personality?)

No a spirit without experience gaining an experience through the mediumship of the girl and if carefully treated might have proved of great use to the girl but the utter incredulity with which she was greeted and the break in faith with her though [possibly 'through'] the acceptance of the other personalities mark what I say personalities

(What do you mean?)

there were more than Sally and they were as distinct as Sally and she should have been allowed some more courtesy and these later intruders [N. R.] intruders would not have disturbed her equilibrium until she became unruly [read 'normally'] unruly as a willful child—

(I understand.)

Too bad but the case is not an isolated one and with all respect to my revered friend M. P. I sincerely hope he will keep his hands off the next case. [Pencil fell. Indian, and long pause when hand seized mine. Indian and long pause again.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Margaret Bancroft can help you in your work because she knows so much about these things.

(I shall be thankful to her for all help.)

[Long pause and awakened.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

June 17th, 1914. 9 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sigh. Long pause with two breathings suggesting a little distress. Pause and evident distress.]

I can't get over that rope.

[Long pause. Distress and very long pause again.]

What are you trying to do?

[Pause, reached for pencil and pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

\* \* [probable attempt to make 'W'] With all consideration for the experiments in hand I come to greet thee and add an expression of interest in the undertaking which should be of world wide interest. I am concerned with the immortal welfare of the children of the earthly kingdom and whether here or at the Piper light or among the disintegrating forces of those less enlightened friends who need attention and loving patience I would still serve humanity. Not in a superior position but as brother and advisor and friend I am learning as you are as I come into contact with the spirits in varying forms of manifestation and I find that the specific ills are produced by contact and not by will. The contact starts action and the actual condition of the body used simultaneously by two or more spirits is [pause] made unfit for normal expression.

The contest after contact has been accomplished is evident and it becomes a case of submission on the part of all but the one at the brain center for the moment and the more easily released or forced to release the more restless and varied the condition of the patient. Where one long continued hold on one organ is [pause and tapping] effected the more hope for the dislodgment of the one will leaves a free seat for the rightful possessor. It is the variable and spasmodic that is hard to deal with. In some instances the one will borrows without consent the seat of authority and uses the body as well as if it were its own and is often unrecognized and passes for a temperamental change in the original owner.

In the case of such contact there is seldom any contest and seldom the disease which arises from contest which is in harmony out of right relations. [This last expression is probably an explanation of a possible misunderstanding of "inharmony" which might be understood in reading aloud as "in harmony."]

The cure of some real malady may be effected by simple adjustment of the rightful ownership. God has planned that the body responds to

its own master and is equipped for the journey through life to suit the needs of its own master and may be unfolded to perfectness by perfect adjustment only. [Period inserted.] If the master destroys by imperfect adjustment that is death and if through imperfect contact the body becomes the tool of many spirits death will ensue. [Period inserted.] I mean used by many spirits who have no knowledge of proper control or they would still be in bodies of their own. It is always spirits who have in some form lost control of their own bodies through failure who seek another to fulfil the promise which physical life held for them. The particular malady induced by imperfect contact is determined by the weakness of organs used or the memories of sufferings past either by the spirit usurper or the patient. Mark that also for in some patients a return of a former malady may be only the new—re—newed contact and [pause and tapping] in the contest memory of past pain renewed. [Period inserted.]

I am hastening to a conclusion for obvious reasons but I desired to help R. H. and to assure you of our interest in the work undertaken.

Tubercular troubles you will find most common because of the lack of power to properly assimilate nutriment but the cases which seem quite unassailable are still easily cured. The nervous diseases are the harder to overcome for the reason I have stated that there is more contest. Treat [N. R.] the ... Treat ... spirit and not the patient. [Period inserted.]

The stomachic troubles are usually secondary but respond more quickly than head difficulties.

I might go on indefinitely as to eye and ear and throat [throat] all so closely alligned to the spirit difficulty. The case of a man appeals to me but I cannot say [pause] [Then sign of the cross and a circle were made, the circle not around the cross, and pause.] Imperator.

(Thank you very much.)

S [pause and pencil fell and fingers snapped for another. A new one given.]

[Change of Control.]

G. P. (All right, George.) Just a word for he [read 'the'] felt [read 'fell'] he felt that he did not finish all he wished to say yesterday and expected to come today but perhaps this message from Imperator may help.

(Yes, it does indeed.)

It seemed right to him or he would not have made such an effort to stay. I wonder if you want me next week.

(I want whoever can help in this same matter.)

yes I did not know whether you were to have a friend or whether we were to have the time and if we were I thought we might make special effort to look [read 'work'] look up some of the particular cases.

(Yes, I expect to be alone the rest of the season and shall be glad to have the particular cases discussed by you.)

Yes we will do the best we can— We have a few things of our own to say sometime. I must not stay longer now for the time is up I feel but you know who it is for I told you at first.

(Yes.)

I have not improved in my writing but my and [so written, tho not clear, but read 'head' and not corrected.] is clear. [Pencil fell. Pause.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Indian and pause.] Who are all those foreigners?

(What do they look like?)

Men in dresses. [Pause.]

(Do you know what country?)

No [Pause.] It is a funny thing. I see one Chinese man. He seems so high in authority. I don't know. [Pause.] I couldn't tell you who he is. I think he must be Chinese. The Chinese and the Japanese look very much alike. He is talking with these others. [Pause and hand reached for mine.]

Oh it is so cold. [Pause.] Don't put that . . . Oh, I don't like the ocean. [Pause.] Here I go under those ropes again. [Pause.] Oh it is all nonsense. It was just somebody's thought, wasn't it?

(Yes.)

[Pause.] I am not going to be silly any more. I am not going to let their thought affect me so. If I didn't I would not be a medy, would I, any more.

(No.)

It is important to be a medium, isn't it. [Rubbed face, opened eyes and stared into space.]

I wonder where they went?

[Closed eyes again, paused, sighed and breathed slightly heavily and awakened.]

Yesterday I had wished beforehand that Dr. Hodgson would come and last night and this morning I wished that Imperator should come.

# INDEX

- Abbott, Emma; References, 81; 176  
 Adams; Mentioned in Mr. Hunt's sitting, 162; 175  
 Amnesia; 3; 6; 9  
 Anagrams; Mr. Junot's sitting, 138  
 Anna; Cousin of Mrs. R.'s father, 115  
 Anniversary letter; written by Mrs. T., 151  
 Astor, John Jacob; Mention, 50; 145; 191; (Baby), 191; 195-96; 197 ff. Attempts to communicate, 395 ff; As communicator, 400; 403; 415 ff; 426-427; 429; 431  
 Astor, Mrs. John Jacob; Mentioned as sitter, 50  
 Astral organism; 41  
 Automatic drawing; (Miss R.), 232  
 Automatic writing; 4; Points at which it appeared: 45; 51; 57; 62; 68; 82; 90; 97; 103; 115; 120; 126; 134; 139; 143; 149; 155; 162; 169; 173; 176; 178; 182; 186; 190; 197; 200; 201; 206; 216; 224; 230; 235; 239; 241; 247; 253; 259; 264; 268; 270; 274; 281; 285; 291; 296; 300; 305; 316; 321; 327; 331; 343; 349; 354; 357; 361; 367; 372; 376; 378; 380; 383; 388; 391; 395; 400; 402; 406; 410; 415; 419; 422; 425; 429; 431; 434; 439; 444; 449  
 Baby; (Astor), 195 ff; 197-98  
 Babies in heaven; 21; 310-11  
 Bailey, Charles; (medium), 358 footnote  
 Ball, Mr.; Reference, 233-34  
 Bancroft, Margaret; Mentioned, 448  
 Barrett, Sir William; Mentioned, 52  
 Bayley, Dr. Weston D.; 177; 340 ff  
 Beauchamp, Miss; 14; (See also Sally)  
 Bennie; son of Mr. Junot, 124 ff; 376  
 Bible; Mentioned by Dr. Brown's mother, 210  
 Bright, Mrs. Annie, 46; 357 ff; 358 footnote  
 British Association of Spiritualists, 50  
 Brown, Dr.; Sitter, 201; Name written backwards, 203; Sitter, 205; His mother, 207; Sitter, 215  
 Bumble Bee trance, 4  
 Bureau, Julia's, 48; 53 footnote  
 Buttons; Dr. Brown's mother's, 204-05  
 Cambridge, 95  
 Cane; Belonging to Mr. Hunt's father, 159-160  
 Carrington, Hereward; Mention, 394  
 Change of Control; See Controls, Change of  
 Chenoweth, Mrs., the psychic; 1-25; 30-45  
 Child of Mrs. R.; Death and funeral described, 107  
 Child sitter (Miss R.); 225 ff  
 Children of T.'s; Discussed, 288 ff  
 Cigar cutter; Mr. See's father, 318  
 Coincidence; (As theory), 3  
 "Colonel" C.; Friend of Mr. T., 279  
 Confusion of communicators; The two "Jacks," 191; 192; 195 footnote  
 Control, Double; of Mrs. Chenoweth, 5  
 Controls, Change of; Points of occurrence: 64; 75; 84; 85; 87; 91; 94; 103; 105; 106; 118; 122; 125; 129; 135; 137; 142; 145; 166; 169; 172; 173; 191; 192; 208; 210; 216; 220; 226; 230; 237; 239; 243; 244; 256; 271; 277; 278; 282; 287; 300; 304; 307; 308; 319; 340; 349; 350; 353; 356; 384; 388; 393; 398; 407; 408; 409; 450  
 Controls, Influence of, 25 ff  
 Cookies; Evidence by Mr. Hunt's father, 159-160 footnote  
 Cooper, Carl; Sitter, 308 footnote; name of communicator, 314 ff  
 Copley Square, 117  
 De Camp, Stockton; 28  
 Dog; (Mr. Gale's sitting), 257-58  
 Dream state of communicator; 65 footnote; 225 footnote  
 Dresses; Mrs. T.; 263  
 Earrings; Mr. Welsh's mother, 61  
 Echolalia; 6; 25; 396 footnote  
 Edinburgh University; 60  
 Edith, see Harper  
 Edward; Transmitted as name of Mr. Gale, 250  
 Elizabeth; Daughter of Mr. See, 382 ff  
 Emmet, Robert; Mentioned, 305  
 Endowment; of A. S. P. R., 196  
 English S. P. R., see S. P. R.  
 Family group, as communicators; Dr. Brown, 221  
 Father John; As guide, 22; 383; 396 footnote; 398; 407; Reference, 433  
 Father, of Dr. Brown; Communicator, 201-219

- Father, of Mr. Gale; Communicator, 244 ff  
 Father, of Mr. Hunt; Communicator, 156 ff  
 Father, of Mr. J.; Communicator, 340 ff; 343 ff  
 Father, of Miss P.; Communicator, 410 ff  
 Father, of Mr. See; Communicator, 305 ff  
 Father-in-law, of Mrs. R.; Communicator, 110 ff  
 Fear (of death); On entering trance state, 15; 17  
 Ferdinand; (Name for Mr. T.'s son), 267  
 Field, Kate; 19; 142 footnote  
 "Fishing"; As theory, 39  
 Flag; Mr. Gale's sitting, 251-52  
 Fountain pen; Mr. J.'s father's, 346-47  
 French; Attempt to write, 89  
 Furs; Mr. Gale's sitting, 254
- Gale, Edward; Sitter, 241 ff; 247 ff; 253 ff  
 George P., or G. P.; see Pelham, George Glasgow; 59  
 Grandfather, of Mr. See; 296  
 Grandfather, of Mr. Welsh; 70  
 Grandfathers, of Mr. Seaman; 320 footnote; 323 ff; 334 ff  
 Gray Eagle; Reference, 305  
 Great-grandmother, of Miss R.; Communicator, 227  
 "Guessing"; As theory, 3; 6; 39; By subconscious, 228 footnote
- Hale, Edward Everett; Reference, 223  
 Handkerchief; Dropped by Mrs. T. as sitter, 284; 287 footnote  
 Harbinger of Light; 358 footnote  
 Harmonica; Played by Bennie, 134  
 Harper, Edith; 47; 53; Her mother, 55  
 Harvard; References, 102; 421  
 Heaven; Reference, 60-61  
 Hell; Reference, 60-61  
 Herbert, see Stead, Herbert  
 Hodgson, Dr. Richard; References, 4; 5; 30; 31; 32; 35; 38; 66; 67; 68; 104; 105; 125; 127; 153; As communicator, 176; Reference, 194; 205; 217; 229; As communicator, 268-69; Reference, 270; As communicator (plans for work), 291 ff; Reference, 313; 339; 359; As communicator, 366 ff; Reference, 372; 399; 408; 410; As communicator, 444 ff  
 Howells, W. D.; Reference, 141; 142 footnote  
 Hunt, Mr.; As sitter, 154 ff; 162 ff; 169 ff  
 Hunting trip; Of T. family, 272-73  
 Hyslop, Robert; As communicator, 440  
 Hyslop, Winifred; As sitter, 434 ff  
 Imperator; Reference to, 196; 217; 261; 268-69; 292; 369; 372; 392-93; 446; As communicator, 449-50  
 Indiana; Reference, 131; Mr. Junot's old home, 134  
 J., Mr.; As sitter, 339 ff; 343 ff; 348 ff  
 "Jack"; Communicator sought by Dr. Hyslop, 149 ff; 178-79; 180 ff; 186 ff; Confusion of names of communicators, 191 ff; 199  
 James, William; References to, 1; 5; 32; 33; 36; 104; 127; 128; As communicator, 216 ff; Reference, 229  
 Jennie P.; Reference to, 5; 10; 13; 14; 17; 24; 30; 33; 34; 36; 37; As control, 64 ff; 85; 91; 118; 135; 145; 152; 192; Reference to, 195 footnote; As control, 208 ff; 243; 249; 271; 278; 281; 296; 317; 322; 350; Reference to, 360; 382; 383; As control, 393; 407; 409; Reference to, 431  
 Jesus, Reference, 208  
 Jewel; Worn by Mrs T., 266; Worn by Mr. See's father, 318  
 Jones, Charles; Reference, 363; 366  
 "Julia" Ames; Reference, 56-57  
 Julia's Bureau, see Bureau  
 Junot, Mr.; As sitter, 120 ff; 126 ff; 132 ff  
 Junot, Mrs.; As communicator, 123 ff; 376 ff
- Lang, Benjamin; Organist referred to, 215  
 Light; Seen in onset of trance, 82  
 Lodge, Mrs. Oliver; Reference, 185  
 "Long-tailed coat"; Reference in Mr. Hunt's sitting, 157-58
- Madame; Control, 198 and footnote  
 Madeleine; Name of his wife given by John Jacob Astor, 404-05  
 Madeline; Name communicated by one of "Jacks," 199  
 Mahogany desk; Referred to in communication of Mr. J.'s father, 345 ff  
 Marechal Neil roses; Reference, Mrs. T.'s sitting, 290  
 Margaret (Peg); Name of Mr. T.'s daughter given by him, 290  
 Marion; Name of Mrs. T. given, 199  
 Merrick; Name given in Mr. Welsh's sitting, 67  
 Monument; Mrs. Junot as communicator, 377 ff  
 Morgan, J. Pierpont; Reference, 120  
 Moses, Stainton; Reference to, 42; 393 and footnote; 445-46  
 Mother; of Dr. Brown, 201-07; of Mrs. Chenoweth, 394; 405; of Mr. See, 296; Mother (pseudo) of Mr. R., 82 ff  
 Myers, F. W. H.; Reference, 309

- Newton, R. Heber; Reference to, 417; 426  
 Northampton, Mass.; Reference to, 438  
 Organ; Reference to Dr. Brown's church, 215  
 Oriental ivory balls; Mr. J.'s father as communicator, 351  
 P., Miss; Psychic sitter, 405 ff; 409 ff  
 Pauline (Polly); Name of Mr. T.'s daughter given, 289  
 Pelham, George; Reference to, 5; 10; 24; 30; 31; 37; As control, 104; 127; 170; 192; 256; Reference, 268; As control, 300; 304; 328; 334; 372; 398; Reference, 408; Control, 450  
 Piccadilly "Square"; Mention, 36; 54  
 Pictographic process; 3; 5; 13; 23; 36 ff  
 Picture frame; Mr. T. as communicator, 151  
 Piper, Mrs.; Reference to, 3; 23; 42; 179; 196; 201; 268; 293; 367; 444  
 Prayer; Circle of, Mrs. R. as sitter, 110; For Mr. T. by children, 291  
 Prince, Dr. Morton; Reference to, 14; 448  
 Proper names; Difficulty in transmitting, 38 ff  
 Prudens, Reference to, 392-93  
 Public Garden, Boston; Reference, 113  
 Queen Victoria; Reference to from Mr. Astor, 405; 416  
 R., Miss; Sitter, 223 ff; 229 ff; 235 ff  
 R., Mr.; Sitter, 81 ff; 89 ff  
 R., Mrs.; Sitter, 96 ff; 102 ff; 107 ff; 114 ff; 229 ff; 235  
 Rector; As control, 127; Reference to, 268; 369  
 Ritchie-Abbott phenomena; Mention, 28  
 S. P. R. (English); Mention, 52  
 Saint-Gaudens; Reference, 239 footnote  
 Salad; Reference after Mr. Stead's communication, 55  
 Sally; Personality of Miss Beauchamp, 14; Discussed by Dr. Hodgson, 448  
 Savage, Dr.; Reference to, 417 footnote  
 Seaman, Mr. Sitter, 320; 327 ff; 333  
 Secondary personalities; 14  
 See, Mr.; Pseudonym for sitter, 295 ff; 299 ff; 305 ff  
 Self-consciousness of medium; 6; 19  
 Shakespeare, William; Reference to, 80  
 Sidgwick, Henry; Communicator, 58  
 Skating; Mr. Hunt's father as communicator, 160-161  
 Skeptic; 2  
 Smashed head; "Jack" as communicator, 181; 201  
 Smoking; Mr. Gale as sitter, 255-56  
 Socialism; 54 footnote  
 Son; of John Jacob Astor, 401; (s) of Mr. T., 420  
 South Hadley; Reference by Mrs. Hyslop as communicator, 438  
 Spiritualism; Reference to, 20; 196  
 Starlight trance; Reference to, 1; 3; 14; 23; 24; 154; 173; 201; 213; 290; 339; 415  
 Stead, Estelle; Reference to, 48; 49; 142; Stead, Herbert, Mention, 53; Stead, W. T.; Reference to, 36; As communicator, 45 ff; 51; Reference, 358-59; 402; 417; 430 footnote; 432  
 Stedman, Edmund Clarence; Communicator, 139-140  
 Stepmother; Mr. Hunt as sitter, 164-165 footnote; Mr. See as sitter, 312  
 Subconscious; With reference to Mrs. Chenoweth, 2; 5; 6; 7; 8; 13; 15; 19; 22; 44  
 Subliminal influence; 14; 18; 20; 21; 22; 24-25; 43; Instances of its occurrence: 45; 49; 50; 55; 57; 60; 67; 80; 81; 88; 89; 95; 96; 101; 103; 106; 107; 112; 114; 119; 120; 126; 131; 132; 138; 139; 142; 143; 148; 149; 153; 154; 160; 162; 167; 169; 173; 177; 178; 181; 186; 189; 195; 197; 198; 200; 204; 205; 212; 215; 222; 223; 229; 233; 235; 239; 240; 241; 246; 247; 249; 251; 253; 258; 259; 260; 263; 267; 269; 270; 274; 278; 281; 284; 290; 291; 294; 295; 298; 300; 305; 310; 313; 317; 320; 322; 327; 333; 336; 342; 343; 347; 348; 354; 356; 361; 364; 366; 370; 371; 375; 378; 379; 380; 383; 387; 388; 390; 391; 394; 399; 400; 401; 402; 405; 409; 413; 414; 415; 418; 419; 422; 424; 425; 428; 430; 431; 434; 439; 443; 444; 448; 449; 451  
 "Sunbeam"; Reference, 51-52 footnote; 104  
 Survival; Reference, 2  
 Swedenborg, Emanuel; Reference to, 304; 306  
 Telepathy; Reference to, 2; Apparent failure of theory, 142; 149  
 T., Mr.; Attempt to get as communicator, 145 footnote; As communicator, 149 ff; 178 ff; 182 ff; 186 ff; Possible communicator, 190 ff; Reference, 192 footnote; Reference, 199 footnote; As communicator, 259 ff; 274 ff; 282 ff; 287 ff; 380; 384 ff; 388 ff; 391 ff; Reference, 402; 414; 418; As communicator, 419; 422 ff  
 T., Mr. (Son of Mr. T. above); As sitter, 259 ff; 263 ff; 270 ff  
 T., Mrs.; As sitter, 274 ff; 281 ff; 284 ff  
 Theosophical doctrine; Discussed, 41-42



- Thompson-Gifford phenomena; 28  
 Titanic disaster; References, 50; 145  
     footnote; 181 footnote; 192 footnote;  
     402 footnote; Indirect, 418; 423; 428-  
     429  
 Trance state; Discussion of, 3; 12; 23;  
     24  
 Trional crystals; Reference by Mr. See's  
     father as communicator, 318  
 Twins; Reference, 60  
 Typewriter; Reference to Dr. Hyslop's,  
     294  
 Vango; References to, 48; 49; 152 foot-  
     note; 183; 200 footnote  
 Verrall, Mrs.; References to, 59 foot-  
     note; 185; 358  
 Violets; Reference by Mr. T. as com-  
     municator, 290  
 Wallace, Alfred Russel; Reference to,  
     102; As communicator, 355 ff  
 Water-cress; Reference to, 55  
 Watch; Mr. J.'s father's, 352; Mr. Sea-  
     man's grandfather's, 324-25 footnotes  
 Wedding ring; Mrs. Junot, 130; Mrs.  
     Gale, 245  
 Welsh, Mr. Herbert; As sitter, 60 ff; 67 ff  
 Whirlwind; Pseudonym for Jennie P.,  
     104; 148; 193  
 Whistles, willow; Reference to, by Rob-  
     ert Hyalop as communicator, 38;  
     441 ff  
 Whiting, Miss Lilian; References to, 19;  
     51; 52; 142; 201  
 Wimbledon; Reference by Mr. Stead as  
     communicator, 54  
 Working in next world; 207  
 Wreath; Described, Mrs. R.'s sitting, 101  
 Wright, Carroll D.; Reference to, 23

AMERICAN SOCIETY FOR PSYCHICAL RESEARCH, INC.,  
15 LEXINGTON AVENUE, NEW YORK

BOARD OF TRUSTEES

FREDERICK EDWARDS.....	<i>President and Editor</i>
JOHN I. D. BRISTOL.....	<i>Vice-President and Chairman of Membership Committee</i>
J. R. GORDON.....	<i>Vice-President and Chairman of Publication Committee</i>
THOMAS H. PIERSON.....	<i>Secretary and Chairman of House Committee</i>
LAWSON PURDY.....	<i>Treasurer</i>
DANIEL DAY WALTON.....	<i>Counsel and Chairman of Committee on Constitution</i>
WILLIAM H. BUTTON.....	<i>Chairman of Committee on Research</i>
A. D. LOUTTIT LAING.....	<i>Chairman of Finance Committee</i>
CHARLES A. SHERMAN.....	<i>Chairman of Committee on Local Sections</i>
GEORGE H. HYSLOP	
CHARLES M. BALDWIN	
MILES M. DAWSON	
MRS. S. A. DERIEUX	
SAMUEL McCOMB	

STAFF

J. MALCOLM BIRD.....	<i>Research Officer (on Physical Phenomena)</i>
HARRY PRICE.....	<i>Foreign Research Officer</i>
MARY CAMPBELL SPEAKER.....	<i>Business Secretary</i>

LOCAL SECTIONS

NEW YORK SECTION

Daniel Day Walton.....	<i>Chairman</i>
Miss Ethel Stebbins.....	<i>Vice-Chairman</i>
T. H. Pierson.....	<i>Treasurer</i>
Mrs. M. V. Wilde.....	<i>Secretary</i>

WESTERN RESERVE SECTION—CLEVELAND, OHIO.

Percy K. Smith.....	<i>Chairman</i>
V. D. Allen.....	<i>Treasurer</i>
Arthur W. Colby.....	<i>Secretary</i>

FOUNDERS—\$5,000.00

Anonymous  
Alonzo Van Deusen

Miss Irene Putnam  
Mrs. Theodate Pope Riddle

Mrs W. G. Webb

PATRONS—\$1,000.00

William H. Button  
\*Mrs. Georgia T. Fry  
Lyman J. Gage  
Mrs. Harriett L. Hemenway  
\*James H. Hyslop

David Jameson  
Arthur Hines  
\*James T. Miller  
Charles E. Ozanne  
Wm. C. Peyton

John B. Reimer  
Mrs. A. W. Webb  
Mrs. Lucie C. Wicks  
Anonymous

LIFE FELLOWS—\$500.00

Mrs. W. H. Bliss  
Anonymous  
Howard A. Colby

Arthur Goadby  
Mrs. A. B. Millard

Fred Rafferty  
Mrs. Stanhope Phillips

LIFE MEMBERS—\$200.00

Ernesto Bozzano  
Mrs. E. B. Butler  
Miss Ella Cory  
Maturin L. Delafield  
Mrs. Leonard Elmhirst  
P. A. L. Engelbrecht  
Miss Annie Gilmer  
Louis Gottschall

T. G. Harriman  
Mrs. H. O. Havemeyer  
Oscar Herrmann  
George B. Herron  
Eugene Holt  
A. M. Hunt  
H. Allan Miller  
Miss Augusta A. Morris

Mrs. Wm. Post  
Mrs. J. B. Speed  
Mrs. J. Harrison Smith  
W. G. L. Taylor  
F. J. Tourtellotte  
Frank W. Vedder  
Mrs. George Wilde  
Joseph de Wyckoff

## LIFE ASSOCIATES—\$100.00

Mrs. J. F. Barton  
John I. D. Bristol  
L. R. G. Crandon  
Miles H. Dawson  
Geo. Wm. Douglas  
Geo. W. Foote  
Anonymous  
Mrs. Mary K. Fulford  
\* Deceased

Mrs. C. B. Furness  
M. T. Garvin  
Chas. M. Higgins  
John Hill  
Mrs. C. E. Jenkins  
R. A. Jones  
E. C. Lasater  
C. T. E. Ledyard

Blewett Lee  
Anonymous  
Anonymous  
S. W. Narregang  
Orville Peckham  
Miss Nellie M. Smith  
O. C. Strickler  
Wm. P. Wharton

Founders, Patrons, Life Fellows, and Life Members receive all the publications of the Society during their lives without further payments. Life Associates receive the *Journal* only. The sums indicated above are not used in current expenditures, but are added to the permanent endowment. To make such a contribution, therefore, not only relieves one of the trouble of yearly dues, but also endows the Society. One may rise from one class of membership to another by paying the additional amount. For example, a Life Member becomes a Life Fellow by the further payment of \$300.00. Members desirous of assisting the Society are earnestly solicited to join one of the Life Classes.

## ANNUAL FELLOWS—\$25.00

Newton Annis  
Mrs. Elizabeth V. R. Arnold  
Geo. H. Breaker  
J. I. D. Bristol  
Miss Helen Temple Cooke  
James Fenimore Cooper  
C. H. Duncker  
Frederick Edwards  
Mrs. H. A. Everett  
Charles F. Fawcett  
Arthur Ford  
William V. Fischer

Lyman J. Gage  
Miss Noma Geist  
Miss Edith C. Haley  
S. A. Harsh  
George H. Hyslop  
George M. Holley  
Roy Holmyard  
A. D. Louttit Laing  
Mrs. Frank McD. Leavitt  
M. R. Lukens  
Mrs. Elizabeth C. T. Miller

Orville Peckham  
W. C. Peyton  
Rainier F. Reed  
Mrs. Carrie J. Rees  
Robert Gordon Shewan  
F. G. Skinner  
Mrs. Marie F. Shipley  
Benjamin W. Strader  
Miss Margaret Underhill  
Mrs. Mary Von Isakovics  
Mrs. Cornelia F. Woolley

## MEMORIAL MEMBERS—\$200.00

Miss Amy Bishop  
Miss Annette Bishop  
Bainbridge Bishop

Mrs. Clementine Brown  
Charles Sharpe Hitchcock  
Miss Irene Hitchcock

Miss Celita Manasse  
Mrs. Lucy Bishop Millington  
"Bird."

## MEMORIAL ASSOCIATE—\$100.00

Miss Hannah P. Kimball

The natural desire which is often felt to establish a memorial to a departed relative or friend may well find expression in the gift of a memorial membership to this Society. These contributions are added to the permanent endowment of the Society.

## ANNUAL DUES

MEMBERSHIP, entitling the holder to the monthly *Journal* and the annual *Proceedings*, \$10.00.  
ASSOCIATE MEMBERSHIP, entitling the holder to the monthly *Journal*, \$5.00.

These memberships commence on the date of the receipt of fee and continue for one year. Applications should be addressed to the Society's offices, and checks or money orders made payable either to the "American Society for Psychical Research" 15 Lexington Avenue, New York City, or to "Lawson Purdy, Treasurer," at the same address.

## PURPOSE AND SCOPE OF THE SOCIETY

1. The investigation of alleged telepathy, visions and apparitions, dowsing, monitions, premonitions, automatic writing, and other forms of automatism (as speaking, drawing, etc.) psychometry, coincidental dreams, clairvoyance and clairaudience, predictions, physical phenomena (such as materialization, telekinesis, rapping and other sounds), and in short, all types of mediumistic and metapsychical phenomena.

2. The collection, classification, study and publication of reports dealing with the phenomena designated above, from first hand acquaintance and seemingly in good faith. Members especially, but also non-members, are asked to supply data or to give information where such may be obtained. Names connected with phenomena must be supplied, but on request these will be treated as confidential.

3. The maintenance of a Library on all subjects embraced in psychical research, and bordering thereupon. Contributions of books and periodical files will be welcomed and acknowledged in the *Journal*.

4. Encouragement of the formation of local groups in all parts of the country which will co-operate with and report to the American Society; and the encouragement of qualified individuals disposed to give attention to investigation with like co-operation.

## THE ENDOWMENT

The American Society for Psychical Research, Inc., was incorporated under the Laws of New York in 1904 under the name of American Institute for Scientific Research, for the purpose of carrying on and endowing investigation in the fields of Psychical Research and Psycho-therapeutics. It is supported by contributions from its members and an endowment fund which now exceeds \$275,000. The income of the Society pays only for the publications and office expenses, but does not enable

the Society to carry on its scientific investigations. A much greater sum is required before this work can be carried forward with the initiative and energy which its importance deserves. The charter of the Society is perpetual.

The endowment funds are dedicated strictly to the uses set forth in the deed of gift and are under the control of the Board of Trustees, the character and qualifications of whom are safeguarded, as in cases of other scientific institutions.

Moneys and property dedicated by will or gift to the purposes of the American Society for Psychical Research, Inc., whether to the uses of psychical research or psycho-therapeutics, are earnestly solicited. The form which such dedication should take when made by will is indicated in the following condensed draft.

### FORM OF BEQUEST

"I give, devise and bequeath to the American Society for Psychical Research, Inc., a corporation organized under the Laws of New York, the sum of . . . . . dollars,\* in trust for the corporate purposes of such Society."

\* In case the bequest is real estate, or other specific items of property, they should be sufficiently described for identification.

### ENDOWMENT ANALYSIS

#### BEQUESTS

Warren B. Field Estate.....	\$6,639.31
Anna Lukens, M.D. ....	1,200.00
James T. Miller .....	71,257.00
Max Petersen .....	40,000.00
Anita C. Ashley (on account) .....	54,247.46
	<b>\$173,343.77</b>

#### GIFTS

Anonymous Donor .....	\$48,000.00
Miss Irene Putnam .....	4,626.50
Founders .....	25,000.00
Patrons .....	14,000.00
Life Fellows .....	3,500.00
Life Members .....	4,600.00
Life Associates .....	2,400.00
Miscellaneous Gifts, about .....	2,777.19
	<b>104,903.69</b>
Total Endowment .....	<b>\$278,247.46</b>

### SUSTENTATION FUND

From the beginning, the income of the Society from members' dues and endowments has never been sufficient to sustain it. Sometimes the deficiency has been greater than at other times, but every year we have had to depend on the generosity of our friends.

Heretofore we have taken care of these matters through various funds—research, publication, library, etc. Members are at liberty still, and even cordially invited, to designate the object to which they would like their gifts applied. But the board feels that in general it will be much simpler to have one "Sustentation Fund" to which contributions may be made and on which the board may draw at discretion for research, publication, library, etc. It is not the intention to use this fund for our regular expenses, but for the extension of our work.

Contributions to this fund, which will be available for either research or publication, are solicited from our members.

### THE PUBLICATIONS

The *Proceedings* are published as occasion demands, not less than one and not more than three numbers a year. They describe the longest and most important cases in detail and are generally of a more technical character than the *Journal*. Commencing with the *Proceedings* for 1923, issued in the spring of 1924, these volumes are now substantially bound in cloth, thereby increasing their durability and making them a welcome addition to any library. They are mailed, when issued, to all annual members, annual fellows, founders, patrons, life fellows, and life members. Others can obtain them on payment of the price, which varies according to the size of the volume. Old paper bound *Proceedings* can be returned to us and will be rebound and returned post free on payment of the sum of \$3.00 per volume, remittance to be made when the volume is sent to us. Copies of all former *Proceedings*, with the parts bound into yearly volumes, uniform with the present issue, may be obtained from us at \$5.00 a volume, payment to accompany the order.

The *Journal* of the Society is issued monthly, averaging some 700 pages a year. It is mailed to all classes of members and associates. Back numbers may be returned to us for binding in uniform style with the *Proceedings* at a cost of \$3.00 a volume; remittance to accompany the order. We can furnish volumes of any former year of the *Journal*, bound as above, at a price of \$5.00 per volume; remittance to accompany the order.

A pamphlet giving information regarding the Society, its publications and how to apply for membership, will be furnished on request. All inquiries concerning our work and publications will be cheerfully and promptly answered. We are also very grateful for assistance in increasing our membership and the knowledge of our work.

### CORRESPONDENCE

All correspondence and contributions, save those of a private nature, should be addressed to the AMERICAN SOCIETY FOR PSYCHICAL RESEARCH, INC., 15 Lexington Ave., New York.

## FORMER PROCEEDINGS WITH A TABLE OF THEIR CONTENTS AND PRICES POSTPAID

### PROCEEDINGS OF THE OLD AMERICAN SOCIETY FOR PSYCHICAL RESEARCH, 1885-89. PRICE, \$2.50.

Important articles by Professors Pierce, Pickering, Minot, Royce and James, with reports on telepathy, apparitions, etc., etc.

---

### PROCEEDINGS OF THE AMERICAN SOCIETY FOR PSYCHICAL RESEARCH, INC.

Vol. I, Part 1, 1907. 220 octavo pages, 3 cuts, \$2.50.

HISTORY OF THE AMERICAN INSTITUTE FOR PSYCHIC RESEARCH. LETTER ON ANIMAL MAGNETISM, by William L. Stone. AN EXAMINATION OF MONS. AKSAKOF'S "CASE OF PARTIAL DEMATERIALIZATION OF A MEDIUM'S BODY" (Cuts), by Hereward Carrington. PARALLELISM AND MATERIALISM, by James H. Hyslop, Ph.D., LL.D.

Vol. I, Part 2, 1907. 304 octavo pages, \$2.00.

A CASE OF CLAIRVOYANCE, by Prof. William James. A RECORD OF EXPERIENCES, by G. A. T. THE MCCAFFREY CASE, by James H. Hyslop. A CASE OF THE ALLEGED MOVEMENT OF PHYSICAL OBJECTS WITHOUT CONTACT, by James H. Hyslop and Hereward Carrington.

Vol. I, Part 3, 1907. 204 octavo pages and 24 folded plates, \$2.00.

PRELIMINARY REPORT ON THE TRANCE PHENOMENA OF MRS. SMEAD, by James H. Hyslop. DETAILED RECORD. With Explanation of Automatic Writing.

---

Vol. II, Part 1, 1908. 118 octavo pages, \$1.50.

REPORT OF A TWO-WEEKS' INVESTIGATION INTO ALLEGED SPIRITUALISTIC PHENOMENA, WITNESSED AT LILY DALE, NEW YORK, by Hereward Carrington. Introduction by James H. Hyslop.

Vol. II, Part 2, Sept., 1908. 260 octavo pages. \$2.50.

REPORT ON THE CASE OF MISS EDITH WRIGHT, by Rev. Willis M. Cleveland. CLAIRVOYANT DIAGNOSIS AND OTHER EXPERIMENTS, by James H. Hyslop. EXPERIENCES WITH THE FLANCHETTE, by "Egbert L. Monson." A RECORD OF EXPERIENCES IN FLANCHETTE WRITING, by Charles Morris. A RECORD OF EXPERIMENTS, by Helen Lambert.

Vol. II, Part 3, Dec., 1908. 296 octavo pages, \$2.50.

A FURTHER RECORD OF EXPERIMENTS, by Helen Lambert. A RECORD OF DREAMS AND OTHER COINCIDENTAL EXPERIENCES, by Marie F. Shipley.

---

Vol. III, Part 1, July, 1909. 592 octavo pages, 45 illustrations, \$3.00.

A CASE OF VERIDICAL HALLUCINATIONS. (The Thompson Case, illustrations.) By James H. Hyslop. REPORT ON MRS. PIPER'S HODGSON-CONTROL. By William James.

Vol. III, Part 2, Dec., 1909. 120 octavo pages, 3 cuts, \$1.00.

OBSERVATIONS ON THE MEDIUMISTIC RECORDS IN THE THOMPSON CASE, by James H. Hyslop. THE SUBCONSCIOUS IN THE LIGHT OF DREAM IMAGERY AND IMAGINATIVE EXPRESSION: WITH INTROSPECTIVE DATA (Cuts), by Hartley Burr Alexander.

---

Vol. IV, 1910. 812 octavo pages, 3 diagrams, \$3.00.

A RECORD AND DISCUSSION OF MEDIUMISTIC EXPERIMENTS, by James H. Hyslop.

---

Vol. V, Part 1. April, 1911. 672 octavo pages, 12 plates, 3 cuts, \$3.00.

A CASE OF HYSTERIA. (The Burton Case, illustrations.) By James H. Hyslop.

Vol. V, Part 2, Dec., 1911. 114 octavo pages, 4 plates, \$2.00.

EXPERIMENTS AND EXPERIENCES IN TELEPATHY, by Miss Miles, Miss Ramsden, and Miss Statkowski.

---

Vol. VI, 1912. 976 octavo pages, \$3.00.

A RECORD OF EXPERIMENTS, by James H. Hyslop.

---

Vol. VII, Part 1, Feb., 1913. 192 octavo pages, 1 cut, \$1.50.

THE SUBCONSCIOUS AND ITS FUNCTIONS, by James H. Hyslop.

VOL. VII, Part 2, July, 1913. 236 octavo pages, 4 plates, \$2.00.

A CASE OF POLTERGEIST. (The Clarke Case.) By James H. Hyslop.

Vol. VII, Part 3, Dec., 1913. 392 octavo pages, 1 plate, \$2.00.  
A CASE OF MUSICAL CONTROL, by James H. Hyslop. THE CASE OF MRS. BLAKE (Plate). By James H. Hyslop. THE HISTORY OF A STRANGE CASE, by David P. Abbott.

Vol. VIII, Part 1, July, 1914. 200 octavo pages, \$2.00.  
EXPERIMENTS WITH MRS. CATON, by Henry A. Burr. TELEPATHIC EXPERIMENTS, by James H. Hyslop.

Vol. VIII, Part 2, August, 1914. 180 pages, 6 plates, 8 page-cuts, \$2.00.  
INVESTIGATION WITH A "TRUMPET" MEDIUM (Plates and Cuts). By John E. Coover. F. W. H. MYERS, SWEDENBORG, AND BUDDHA, by Albert J. Edmunds. ANALYSIS AND DISCUSSION OF 225 PERSONAL DREAMS, by George Hall Hyslop. AN ANALYSIS OF SOME PERSONAL DREAMS, by "John Watson." NOTE ON PHILOSOPHIES AND REVELATIONS FROM THE SPIRITUAL WORLD, by James H. Hyslop.

Vol. VIII, Part 3, Sept., 1914. 430 pages, 65 illustrations, \$2.00.  
ON SOME EXPERIMENTS WITH THE OUIJA BOARD AND BLINDFOLDED SITTERS (56 Plates). By Sir W. F. Barrett. SOME UNUSUAL PHENOMENA IN PHOTOGRAPHY (Illustrated), by James H. Hyslop. RECENT EXPERIENCE IN HYPNOTIC PRACTICE (Plates and Cuts). By S. Wilkinson, M. R. C. S., L. R. C. P. EXPERIMENTS IN NON-EVIDENTIAL PHENOMENA, by James H. Hyslop.

Vols. IX, X, 1915, 1916. 1419 pages, 25 illustrations, 12 diagrams, \$3.00.  
THE DORIS CASE OF MULTIPLE PERSONALITY. Parts 1 and 2, by Walter Franklin Prince, Ph.D.

Vol. XI, 1917. 1024 pages, \$3.00.  
THE DORIS CASE OF MULTIPLE PERSONALITY. Part 3, by James H. Hyslop.

Vol. XII, 1918. 735 pages, 30 cuts, \$3.00.  
THE SMEAD CASE, by James H. Hyslop.

Vol. XIII, Part 1, August, 1919. 284 pages, 6 illustrations, \$3.00.  
CHANCE COINCIDENCE AND GUESSING IN A MEDIUMISTIC EXPERIMENT, by James H. Hyslop. A CRITICAL STUDY OF "THE GREAT AMHERST MYSTERY," by Walter Franklin Prince. A CASE OF PICTOGRAPHIC PHENOMENA, by James H. Hyslop. ROLF OF MANNHEIM—A GREAT PSYCHOLOGICAL PROBLEM (Illustrations), by William Mackenzie.

Vol. XIII, Part 2, Dec., 1919. 319 pages, 52 illustrations, \$3.00.  
THE HARRISON CASE (8 Cuts), by Prescott F. Hall. A CASE OF INCIPIENT OBSESSION, by James H. Hyslop. SUPPLEMENTARY REPORT ON THE KEELER-LEE PHOTOGRAPHS, by Walter Franklin Prince. (44 illustrations.) NOTE ON THE MANNHEIM DOG CASE, by Gertrude O. Tubby.

Vol. XIV, 1920. 426 pages, 3 diagrams, \$3.00.  
CROSS-REFERENCE EXPERIMENTS FOR MARK TWAIN, by James H. Hyslop. MISCELLANEOUS INCIDENTS, by Mrs. Kezia E. Alexander. EXPERIENCES CENTERING IN THE YOUNG FAMILY, by Oscar E. Young (diagrams). EXPERIENCES IN A HOUSE, by Elizabeth Glidden Wood. Volume edited by W. F. Prince.

Vol. XV, 1921. 603 pages, 21 plates, \$3.00.  
THE CHENOWETH-DREW AUTOMATIC SCRIPTS, by James H. Hyslop, edited by W. F. Prince. PSYCHOMETRICAL EXPERIMENTS WITH SENORA MARIA REYES DE Z. (2 Plates), by Walter Franklin Prince. A SURVEY OF AMERICAN SLATE-WRITING MEDIUMSHIP (19 Plates), by W. F. Prince.

Vol. XVI, 1922. 136 pages, 13 plates, \$5.00.  
PAST EVENTS SEERSHIP, by Gustave Pagenstecher, M.D. Edited by W. F. Prince.  
(The price of this volume has been raised to \$5.00 because only a few copies remain in stock.)

Vol. XVII, 1923. 348 pages, 33 illustrations. Bound in cloth, \$5.00.  
THE MOTHER OF DORIS, by W. F. Prince. HEINRICH MEYER CASE: THE RISE AND EDUCATION OF A PERMANENT SECONDARY PERSONALITY (5 Illustrations), by W. F. Prince. THE CHARLEBURG RECORD (28 Illustrations), by Nellie M. Smith.

Vol. XVIII, 1924. 357 pages. Bound in cloth, \$5.00.  
FIVE SITTINGS WITH MRS. SANDERS, by Walter Franklin Prince. STUDIES IN PSYCHOMETRY, by Walter Franklin Prince.